

# **PROPHECY**

VOLUME IX

**Revelation Uncovered**

Part I

**The Great Apostasy**

Part II

**God's Story**

Part III

**History Of Revelation**

Part IV

By

Art Mocarow

# **REVELATION UNCOVERED**

**PROPHECY – VOL. IX**

**PART 1**

**BY  
ART MOKAROW**

## Copyright Pending – *Book*

### Puzzles – Vol. I

God's Puzzle Solved

God's Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God's Mystery Fulfilled

### Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ's Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

### Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

### Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God's Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God's Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

### Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God's Law

The True Churches Of God

Paul's Religion

### Temple– Vol. VI

History Of God's Law

The Christian Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

### Deception – Vol. VII

God's Old And New Covenant

What's It All About?

Morality And Economics

The Times Of The Gentiles

Satan's Deception

### Worship – Vol. VIII

God's Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God's Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

### Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God's Story

History Of Revelation

### Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God's School

God's Science Vs. Human Science

### Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don't Bury Your Talents

God's Work Vs. Man's Work

### End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon's Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God's Gift Of Inheritance

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

### Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God's Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God's House

Bible Study God's Way

Biblical World History

### Basic Truth – Vol. XIV

Simplicity In Christ

Beginner's Bible Study

Christ In You

Competition

Visions, Dreams And Friends

Seeking God

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.

# REVELATION UNCOVERED

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

<b>PREFACE</b>	<b>v</b>
<b>INTRODUCTION</b>	<b>vii</b>
<b>THE SCHOOLMASTER</b>	<b>1</b>
<b>WHO ARE IN GOD'S CHURCH?</b>	<b>37</b>
<b>THE MARRIAGE REGISTRY</b>	<b>51</b>
<b>WHO IS THE BEAST?</b>	<b>61</b>
<b>MARK OF THE BEAST</b>	<b>85</b>
<b>BABYLON AND THE TWO GRAILS</b>	<b>105</b>
<b>THE MYSTERY HARVEST</b>	<b>117</b>
<b>THE MIND OF CHRIST</b>	<b>129</b>
<b>WHAT IS SIN?</b>	<b>139</b>
<b>GOD'S REQUIREMENTS FOR CHRISTIAN SALVATION</b>	<b>157</b>
<b>CHRIST'S WILL</b>	<b>201</b>
<b>THE LITTLE BOOK</b>	<b>219</b>

# REVELATION UNCOVERED

## PREFACE

There are more interpretations about the mystical, symbolic *Book of Revelation* than any other book in *The Bible*. Are you able to decipher its meaning? *Revelation Uncovered* or “The Apocalypse” means “the uncovering” in the Greek. What is “*The Book of Revelation*” uncovering? You will see the unveiling of world history, from “**biblical times**” to present-day conditions and circumstances. In addition, your future reward in God’s **kingdom** is foretold, along with everyone’s eventual salvation and eternal life. It will explain everyone’s personal reward! A special thanks to Clyde Brown who co-authored Chapter 4, “*Who Is The Beast?*” His expertise is history and he has added the **historical** events as they relate to the time frame of *The Book of Revelation*. Also, thanks to David McMullen for his outlines on Revelation and The Temple at the end of the book. As we send this book for its 5<sup>th</sup> printing, we were humbled by a reader’s comment: “I just received *Revelation Uncovered* and started reading it and I must say it has been awesome having someone help me to understand *The Book of Revelation*. What you are doing is incredible and it is also nice to see someone spreading The Word of God and not doing so to make money. I never understood how Jesus told His Disciples to give it freely and how people thought it is acceptable to get rich off it. Keep up the great work.”

No monies can ever be accepted, but feel free to offer any comments or criticisms. Ask for your free CD containing all 11 books which you can read on your computer. Also, feel free to ask biblical questions by mail or e-mail.

Art Mokarow  
Box 1197  
Montgomery, TX 77356

E-mail: [art@mokarow.com](mailto:art@mokarow.com)  
Web site: [www.godspuzzlesolved.com](http://www.godspuzzlesolved.com)

# INTRODUCTION

## Symbolism Explained

Would you be amazed to find a book in *The Bible*, which covers world history from the birth of Christ and The Roman Empire until God's **kingdom** comes? *The Book of Revelation* **does just that!**

A problem for **biblical readers** and **scholars** is to comprehend the mysteries, which are filled with symbols. Once you have the key, God's **mysteries** and **symbolism** will show you **true world history** and its events. Not only is *The Book of Revelation* prophetic but it will also allow you to understand much of world history (Revelation 19:10).

## Before The Bible

In The Garden of Eden, God through His **messengers** spoke directly to Adam and Eve. But, once Adam and Eve sinned and were cut off from The Tree of Life (God's Holy Spirit), humanity was left to itself. Only special people such as Shem, Noah, Abraham and The Prophets had contact with God.

These special, chosen people became God's Prophets or **witnesses** of **the truth**. It seemed God had left mankind isolated from His Gospel of The Good News. Yet, God states in Hebrews 4:3 that God's "**work**" was finished or completed right from the beginning. How could this be?

Hebrews 4:4 reveals on that first seventh day God's "**work**" was completed and *The Gospel* was known. How? There was no *Holy Bible* or any of *The Scriptures* as an informed or **written source** for **humanity**. God no longer would deal with the world from that point forward except with His **chosen witnesses**. How did God

preach *The Gospel* to an ignorant world?

## Noah's Flood

At the time of the flood, the entire world had become evil except for Noah – His Witness. Noah, as the only witness, could not preach *The Gospel* to every human in the known world. Yet, Noah forewarned the world would be destroyed by a world flood and they needed to repent. Repent of what? They wouldn't even know what sin was. Would God destroy anyone because they were ignorant? Would a loving forgiving God destroy those who didn't know better? Of course not. Today, you have *The Holy Bible*, but in Noah's time, they had nothing in writing to tell them God's **truth**. Christ said, "**Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God**" (Matthew 4:4). The world in Noah's day did not have The Word of God or did they?

## Tower Of Babel

Ironically, just before the flood, God said if He had not stopped the human race every thought conceived or imagined by them would end up in evilness (Genesis 6:5). God flooded the earth leaving only Noah and his family. After the waters receded, Noah and his family with his sons and their wives departed the ark and repopulated the earth. World society was all of one language. Communication was simple because everyone understood each other. Nimrod, along with the other leaders went against God. As time went on, the leaders chose Nimrod as their God. Nimrod began to be concerned the people would begin to form separate societies and ethnic groups. Why?

Noah had three sons – Shem, Ham and Japheth. From these three sons, all the races and ethnic groups developed and repopulated the earth. Their wives were of the basic three races and Noah was

Caucasian. The races began to intermix during the time of The Tower of Babel. Genesis 10 records these races and where they began. Genesis 10:6-10 relates the chronology of Ham, Noah's Son. Ham had Cush and Mizraim. History records Mizraim as Egypt. Then Genesis 10:8 states Cush begat Nimrod. Nimrod as a progenitor of the Egyptians, with his wife, Semiramis, became the Egyptian gods (Osirus and Isis). How did this occur?

## **Birth Of Babylon**

Nimrod and his followers wanted to keep mankind under ONE EMPIRE, which would have included all races and ethnic groups. How could they do it? Now for a big surprise "anthropologically." History's critical EVENT, which changed the world from that time to The Return of The Messiah, The Christ was about to happen.

Surprisingly, this monumental occurrence laid the foundation as to how historians would eventually see world history. From this point forward, researchers and historians **view their world paradigms from false knowledge**. The Tower of Babel affected all future philosophers and historians except for the FEW who searched for **the truth**. Before The Tower of Babel, *The Gospel of God's Good News* was recorded, not in a book or scroll but in the heavens.

True ASTRONOMY and not ASTROLOGY was prevalent in Noah's day. Noah knew the stars and the constellations gave the true story of *The Gospel of God and His Son, Jesus*. King David loved God's Law, *The Torah*, because The Law was a shadow or prophecy of things to come (Hebrews 10:1).

David pondered God's Law day and night as a shadow or prophecy of the future. David knew history, past, present and future and recorded it in the last third of *the scripture* or TANAKH known



as *The Book Of Psalms*. Psalm 19:1-5 reveals **the truth** of this period of historical change, which occurred at the time of THE TOWER OF BABEL. Verses 1 to 5 DECLARE the HEAVENS manifest The GLORY of God. God's "**glory**" or **the shekinah** declares all of GOD'S GOODNESS as was revealed to Moses (Exodus 33:18-19). God's "**glory**" is the totality of *The Gospel*.

All of God's **goodness**, His riches, creativity, power, etc., is inherent in God's "**glory**," **the shekinah**. The Messiah, Himself, was in God's "**glory**." Read this record or witness by David in Psalm 19. Verse 2 states the heavens utter or speak this truth of God's "**glory**" – day after day and night after night. Verse 3 validates there is NO SPEECH or Word of God that shows this knowledge better than the STARS IN HEAVEN. The Prophet said God teaches KNOWLEDGE BY LINE UPON LINE (Isaiah 28:10). This is exactly what David said in Psalm 19:4. This LINE goes out THROUGHOUT THE EARTH and THEIR WORDS to the END of the WORLD (Verse 4). In them, God has set THE TABERNACLE or TEMPLE for the SUN. Then, astounding as it may seem, Psalm 19:5 declares this SUN in the heaven is a BRIDE-GROOM (Christ).

In Revelation 12:1, the woman is clothed with the sun, Jesus, as The Light Bringer (John 1:6-9) who received this light (the sun) from His Father. Revelation 2:2 states the woman, Mary, gave birth to Jesus, Her Son. Christ is likened to the SUN IN HEAVEN. Virgo in **the heavens** is the virgin giving birth. Draco is Satan.

In Revelation 22:16, Jesus states He is **the bright and morning star**. Revelation 1:20 symbolizes stars as angels. Angels are "**spirit beings**" as Jesus is, The Firstborn Son, the FIRST bright and morning star. *The Book of Revelation* defines the heavenly host, the constellations, as revealing *The Gospel* written in the heavens.

When Noah, Abraham and The Prophets looked to the heavens

they understood THE WHOLE PLAN OF GOD. What more proof does one need? The very GOSPEL OF CHRIST was manifested in the CONSTELLATIONS of the heavens before *The Holy Bible* was written. Wow! Adam and Eve knew. Their children knew – Shem, Noah, Abraham and King David knew. The world knew and Satan wanted to deceive them just as he did before the flood. Only Noah remained **faithful** to *The Gospel*.

## Reprobated Mind

The Apostle Paul also knew *The Gospel* had been revealed as prophecy or a TESTIMONY (witness) in the heavens. The invisible things of God (mystery) are UNDERSTOOD by things CLEARLY SEEN (Romans 1:20). Every night the constellations of the stars disclose The Words of God as prophesied by King David (Psalm 19). Now for Satan's **deception**.

The Tower of Babel was the beginning of The Babylonian Mystery system of religion (Baal). Nimrod CHANGED The TRUTH of The GOSPEL, which was declared in the heavens from astronomy to ASTROLOGY. Satan did the same to The Christian Church at the time of Constantine. Romans 1:22-24, Paul states God's "**Glory**" (**goodness**) was changed to worshipping the CREATION instead of The CREATOR, GOD! There it is clear as a **biblical bell**.

Genesis 11:4 states what was being said in Nimrod's Day. "**Go to, let us build us a city [Babel] and a tower, whose top *may reach into heaven* [the stars]; and let us make us a name [Babylon], lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth.**" Notice Nimrod's **kingdom** began in The City of Babel (Genesis 10:10). This was the genesis of The Babylonian Mystery System stated in *The Book of Revelation* – Babylon The Great (Revelation 18 and 19).

What was this TOWER and why was God so opposed to it? This

tower was to be built as high as they could to be able to see the STARS in the heavens to mathematically start The Babylon System of Astrology. True astronomy with the true meaning or declaration of God's "**gospel**" message would be changed forever. Satan's great deception was at work again. He instilled half-truths or lies of what the heavenly stars were actually declaring in Psalm 19. The world bought this lie. The Egyptian Pyramid at Giza, The Pyramids in South America and all over the known world are **witnesses** that astrology became the religion of **the priesthood**. **The truth** was twisted and eventually completely lost.

## Symbolism

Now you can understand the true symbolic mysteries revealed by His Son, Jesus, in *The Book of Revelation*. *The Book of Revelation* manifests the true meaning of the original *Gospel* of God. The heavenly host is clearly defined as *The True Gospel* in *The Book of Revelation*.

There is one more mystery in Revelation, which is defined in this last Book of *The Bible* – **the temple** on earth and **the true temple** in heaven. *The Book of Revelation* is replete with **the temple**. Each statement as well as every event in **the temple** on earth, as well as **the heavenly temple** is filled with prophecy or THE TESTIMONY OF JESUS.

The Law or Torah is a shadow of things to come (Hebrews 10:1). One third of The Law deals with **the temple** of God. **The temple's divine services are prophecy in action**. Every event in *The Book of Revelation* is significant as to its prophetic history of events, which will shortly come to pass (Revelation 1:1). The Levitical Priesthood, also, carried out their daily divine services, which prophesied **the end-time**.

The first chapter in this book is '*The Schoolmaster*,' which ex-

plains The Prophet's meaning of God's **temple**.

This introduction was written, so you can understand the importance of the symbolism and the mystery about **the temple**. At the same time, you will gain an understanding of the real meaning of the prophecy of *The Book of Revelation*. You will read in the following chapters, the historical and prophetic events covered in *The Book of Revelation* bringing greater understanding from Christ's birth and the genesis of The Roman Empire to the establishment of God's "**kingdom**" on the new earth.

The word "Revelation" in The Greek is "Apokalypsis" or "the uncovering." As you read this book while checking and proving everything in *The Book of Revelation*, you, yourself, will uncover

the **hidden** truths of God's "**gospel**."

# CHAPTER 1

## SCHOOLMASTER

**Did you know “the tabernacle” built by Moses and the temple in Solomon’s day are a prophecy of the END OF TIME? Paul said The Law or *Torah* is a shadow of things to come (Hebrews 10:1). The “temple,” including everything in it, foretells the future. One third of The Law is about “the temple.” The Law is your “schoolmaster” or “teacher” (Galatians 3:24). You will get excited learning about the wonderful purpose of this “schoolmaster” along with God’s “temple” and its prophetic meanings.**

When Adam and Eve sinned by eating the fruit of The Tree of Good and Evil, God removed them from **the garden**. They were expelled from God’s **rest** or **paradise**.

When they lost access to The Tree of Life – **salvation** was lost. Adam and Eve’s sin or offense did not transgress God’s Law since at that time The Law was not legally enforced.

They, however, broke *The Ten Commandments* in “**spirit**” by dishonoring God, The Father. They, in “spirit,” transgressed The Fifth Commandment. Since The Law was not enforced legally until Mount Sinai, no sin was imputed (Romans 5:13).

THAT IS WHY Paul called Adam and Eve’s sin “**an offense**.” They offended (injured) God, The Father. They lacked “**faith**.”

## **Paradise Lost**

Adam and Eve's **offense** brought death to them and their posterity. Cain and Abel and all humanity lost access to God and all the riches God would have bestowed upon everyone had Adam and Eve chosen The Tree of Life instead. God's **rest** or **paradise**, was truly lost. Many do not realize Adam and Eve had complete liberty and freedom in The Garden of Eden. They could do whatever they chose to do. God's **rest** in **paradise** had no laws, restrictions or even any conditions. They truly had total liberty to do whatsoever they wanted.

Even when God told Adam and Eve not to eat of The Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, there was **no legal law against it**. Adam and Eve had **complete freedom of choice** to do anything they wanted. Adam and Eve were **totally free** to do anything just as God The Father could. God told them not to eat of The Tree of Good and Evil because they and their children would die or lose **salvation**. God never instituted a legal law for them not to eat of The Tree of Knowledge. God totally left the choice up to Adam and Eve. They had absolute liberty without adhering to laws or any legal requirements.

God was giving humanity (through Adam and Eve) the right of free choice to live any way they chose. He merely warned them what would happen if they made the wrong choice. They made the wrong decision and all humanity had to suffer because of that wrong choice. No one could say God did not give humanity a free choice. Under Christ, you still have free choice or liberty just as Adam and Eve had. Once Jesus ended the curse of The Law, you, as a Christian, would have no condemnation. Christians are dead to The Law (Romans 7:1-7). You have total liberty through Christ (Galatians 5:1).

## Restoration

Jesus said He came to **restore** what was lost (Matthew 18:11). When Adam and Eve were removed from **the garden**, besides losing **salvation**, they lost God's **rest** or **paradise**. They, also, lost the liberty to be totally free (Romans 8:21). Christ came to **restore all** that was lost, which includes liberty and total freedom.

## The Process

Once Adam and Eve lost **paradise**, they were told “**a seed**” would come from their progeny who would defeat Satan and **restore the garden** and God's **rest**. Until then, the earth and everyone on it have been and are under Satan's rulership. Until Christ defeats all of God's enemies, which includes death, Satan is in control of the world. Everyone lives in Satan's world or system on this earth, which he rules and does his best to deceive all he can. What was God's **plan to restore paradise** lost?

## The Five Covenants

God instituted **five covenants** so humanity could receive **salvation**: (1) Adam and Eve were given a **life** or **death** choice. They could have eaten from The Tree of Life, but they chose death by eating of The Tree of Good and Evil. (2) Melchizedek, as The High Priest of God, made a **covenant** with Abraham through **the promised seed** that God's **rest** would be **restored**. (3) This agreement was made because of a sin. Israel, as a nation, sinned by building a golden calf to worship. This is “**the genesis**” of *The Old Covenant* or administration of death (II Corinthians 3:1-7). This “**covenant**” was an agreement based upon The Law (a legal contract), which in turn is based upon **statutes** and **judgments** with **blessings** of human existence and **curses**,

or **penalties** in God's Court of Law – **The Temple** (Deuteronomy 28-30). This **covenant** was designed to bring Israel to **repentance** or to The Messiah, The Christ or back to Melchizedek (Galatians 3 and 4). This **covenant** was known as “**the schoolmaster**” to bring them to Christ (Galatians 3 and 4). (This is the **focus of this chapter**). (4) The **new covenant** came and **restored** The Melchizedek Priesthood, based upon **faith** and not human works to fulfill The Abrahamic Covenant of Salvation or The Restoration of Paradise (Hebrews 7 and 8). (5) This **covenant** will occur in God's **kingdom** when God makes all things new and continues paradise for all of Adam and Eve's children, which has yet to occur (Revelation 21 and 22).

## **Institution Of The Schoolmaster**

The Third Covenant (*The Old Covenant*) made and ratified with Israel was an **intermediate agreement** with God because Israel had sinned. This system based upon The Letter of The Law or *Torah* bound The Nation of Israel under Moses as **a way** to come to Christ, The Messiah (Galatians 3 and 4). God made this Law a legal requirement in a **court of law**. It was made for a carnal society to know “**right**” from “**wrong**.” It was only a shadow of **true righteousness**.

Since Israel sinned and was carnal, God devised a **covenant** but only for **carnal people** with bondage of “**works**” as **shadows**. In fact, the entire Letter of The Law was only a shadow – not the real thing! The Law and everything in it was a “**schoolmaster**” as a method to teach them about Christ. It was only through Christ, **the promised seed**, who would restore liberty to humanity.

Israel totally misunderstood what God wanted this **covenant**, based upon the **total** keeping of The Letter of The Law, to do. They



believed in doing literally everything in The Law. They thought The Law would be their “**righteousness**” (Deuteronomy 6:25). Instead, God wanted The Law to reveal to them they couldn’t be “**righteous**” (Romans 5:20). The Law was **righteous** but Israel couldn’t keep it because of the weakness of their flesh. The Law was to be a “**schoolmaster**” (Galatians 3) to bring them to Christ and “**repentance.**” It was truly to be a “**schoolmaster.**” The Law was a teacher to show them how sinful they really were. Israel was always carnal and unrepentant and had to be reminded over and over again.

## The Shadow

The Law with the sacrifices, was a **shadow** of things to come (Hebrews 10:1). The Sabbath, Holy Days, meal offerings and new moons were “**shadows**” of how Jesus would restore Israel and bring the whole world to God’s **rest** or **paradise** (Colossians 2:16-17). In John 5:46, Jesus told The Pharisees if they had understood what Moses wrote, they would have known Moses was writing about Christ, The Messiah. Moses wrote The Law, which was a **shadow** of all that Jesus would do to **restore salvation** in **the garden** (Revelation 21 and 22).

## Shadow Of The Restoration

What was **the shadow** of The Law? What did The Law do to reveal The Messiah? Most of The Law is **history**. The Books from *Genesis* to *Deuteronomy* give the history from the creation of the universe to the time Israel became a nation and was about to enter God’s **promised land** with Joshua as their leader. Even this history had **shadows** or revealed Christ.

Scripturally, Adam was a **type** of Jesus (Romans 5). Abraham

was a type of God, The Father, with his willingness to sacrifice his son, Isaac. The sacrifices, with The Lamb as Christ and all the other offerings as the peace offering, literally pictures God's **rest** or The Garden of Eden – "**restored**" (Revelation 21 and 22).

Yes, **the temple**, itself, was a shadow of Christ bringing humanity to The Real Mercy Seat in The Holy of Holies (Hebrews 9:9). The entire Law was a true shadow of things to come hopefully to bring Israel to "**repentance**" and a change of heart. But, they failed and they never did repent. A vail was over their eyes blinding them to understand God's real **purpose** of The Law. The Law was only a "**schoolmaster**" to try to teach them by doing **homework** so they could pass their test, and the test they were to pass was to "**repent**" (I Timothy 1:7-10). **The temple**, which covers one third of The Law, was the largest part of **the shadow** of The Law. Without **the temple** you cannot keep The Law (James 2:10).

## The Temple

In *The Torah* or The Law, much of it covers **the temple** and its furnishings. Since the **entire** Law was a "**schoolmaster**," **the temple** was to be a "**schoolmaster**" as well. It was to be the exact replica of **the true temple** in heaven (Hebrews 9:9). The Law told Israel how to be **righteous** and a witness of God to the world. If Israel obeyed, they would be accepted by God even though they were still carnal. This Law was given to Israel because they were unrighteous (I Timothy 1:7-10). Truly, keeping The Letter of The Law could never change their human nature. They were still carnal. The Law was only a **schoolmaster** to teach them how carnal they were (Romans 5:20), so they could change and come to Christ. *The Torah* or The Law pictured Jesus, The Christ, and so did **the temple**. The Law was only a **shadow**. Christ was **the rock** (God's **glory**) or "**the shekinah**" (I Corinthians 10:4).

When Israel sinned, they came to **the temple** and made sacrifices for all their sins. **The temple**, being a place to worship God, was also God's **courthouse** to **try** the sinner, whether **guilty** or **not**. It was to continually remind them they were sinners (Romans 5:20) and to try to bring them to Christ.

## Two Temples

Now, for a surprise: One **temple** was a **physical temple** and the other a **spiritual temple**. Only "**Spirit**" is real. Remember, the **temple** in **Israel** was only a **shadow** (figure), not real, but merely a type of **the temple** in heaven (Hebrews 9:9). Just as The Law was only a **shadow** and could not make anyone **righteous** neither was the **physical temple** able to make one worthy to enter The Holy of Holies – only Christ could.

**All of The Law, including the temple**, could only bring one to Jesus or truly **restore** God's **rest** in **paradise**. This **temple** and The Law were really only **shadows** or a type as a **duality**. Read Hebrews 9 and you can prove this point. You will see **the real temple**, in **heaven**, defines the real meaning of the **earthly temple**, which was only a **shadow** of the real. Revelation uncovers the true meaning of the earthly **temple**.

## Two Houses

Hebrews 3:1-6 speaks about **two houses**, or **temples**. In John 14:1-2, Christ told His Disciples not to trouble their heart for "**in my Father's house are many mansions**" (or fabulous palaces of abode). Then Jesus continued, "**I go to PREPARE A PLACE FOR YOU!**" How wonderful. Christians are to live in palaces and mansions. Of these **two houses** – one is God's **real house** and the other is merely a **shadow**.

Moses was faithful in **his entire** house (Verse 2). Why? Moses was faithful in his house (Israel's **temple**), for a **testimony** or **witness** of those things, which were to be spoken (Hebrews 3:6). The Law and the physical **temple** only looked like what will be **real** in the future through Christ. Notice, Jesus warned about this **temple**, which was only **a shadow**. During The Passover (John 2:13), Jesus went to **the temple** and found the people selling animals for sacrifices. They created a business of God's **physical house** on earth. He was furious and drove the moneychangers and animals out. Christ said "not to make a **business** out of My Father's "house." Then, He made an astonishing statement. "**Destroy this temple, and in three days, I will raise it up**" (John 2:19-21). He was referring to His **body** or a **spiritual temple**. The **physical temple** and The Letter of The Law were only **shadows** and not able to make the worshippers spiritual. The physical temple continually reminded them they were still carnal. Jesus spoke of both a physical temple and a **spiritual temple**. This was the physical temple of Moses.

## **The Real Temple**

Hebrews 3:6 speaks of Christ being over **His Own House**. **Whose house are we!** Christians are to hold fast with confidence to **the end**. God's **spiritual** house or **temple** in heaven, are **Christians** growing **spiritually** with God's Law written in their hearts and minds or a **real change of your nature** to be Holy, as God. This is God's Spiritual Temple. That is why no physical Law is necessary when you become "**spirit**." God's Holy Law is now in your heart. How was the **physical temple**, a **schoolmaster** under Moses?

## **The Physical Temple**

To learn how this **temple** is to be built, read Exodus 25:26-28.

Paul said **the temple** being built on earth must be an **exact duplicate** or a precise figure of the one in **heaven** (Hebrews 9:9). Always keep in mind; this **temple** on earth was only a **schoolmaster** or a **teacher** to bring them to Christ. The one in **heaven** is real where Jesus shares His Father's **throne** and intercedes for Christian's sins as Melchizedek, The High Priest. Jesus said **the temple in heaven** is a "**spiritual one**" (John 2:19-21). What does the **physical temple** as a "**schoolmaster**" foreshadow?

The Chapters in *The Bible* were created by men and are not in the original scrolls. Many times a subject is mistakenly cut off when a new chapter was begun before the subject was completed. With that in mind, Hebrews 10:1 is a summary, which really belongs with the subject in Hebrews 9.

Hebrews 10:1 states The Law given to Moses with the **sacrifices** was a **shadow** of things to come. *The Torah* or *The First Five Books of The Bible* was written to be a **shadow** or **type** of what would happen in the future. As Paul said, "**The Law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ**" (Galatians 3:24). This Law was to be a **schoolmaster** or teacher to make you aware of your need for Jesus (Romans 5:20). The Law could never make you perfect or **righteous**. And yet, a Christian's goal is to become perfect (Matthew 5:48). Hebrews 9 – a major part of The Law – reveals **the temple** was a **figure** or type of Christ as well. You will see that **without the temple** as part of The Law, you never really understand the shadow or prophecy, which The Law was to reveal. That is why one cannot keep or observe The Sabbath and Holy Days without **the temple**. The **shadow** or prophecy of things to come would not be complete. One could not come to Christ without **the temple**. Keeping just one part of The Law profits nothing. That is why keeping a part of The Law is a sin. It is like a **schoolmaster** teaching only part of the subject.

The Law, without **the temple**, gives you the history of the world, along with what **righteousness** is and what **sin** is. The Law also reveals God's **plan** of **salvation** and the need for Jesus, The Christ. But, without understanding the prophecy or the **figure**, which **the temple** portrays with specific details about God's **plan**, the plan of salvation cannot be understood. **The temple** brings you to God or The Holy of Holies. In fact, this earthly **temple** explains the entire meaning of *The Book of Revelation*. The **temple** on earth, first and foremost, pictured **God's real temple in heaven**. Moses was admonished to copy **the temple** of God and build it exactly as it was in **heaven** (Hebrews 9:9). It was to be a **figure** or **type** of the heavenly. Since **the temple** was also a **shadow** of The Law, just what did it foreshadow? How was **the temple** a **schoolmaster** to bring you to Christ? Revelation opens up. It reveals how to come to Jesus and God, The Father.

## Finding Fault

What was the weakness based upon – The **Law** or *The Old Covenant*? What was wrong with *The Old Covenant* based upon all the works or **Divine Ordinances** of The Law?

Simply, Hebrews 10:1, **The Law with those sacrifices could never make them perfect**. Christianity, however, **demands perfection** (Matthew 5:48). This *Old Covenant* based upon The Law could not make them true worshipers. It changed no one. It was only a **shadow** or **prophecy** about Christ. What did this **temple** on earth foreshadow? In *The New Covenant*, God would **write His Laws** in your hearts and minds (Hebrews 8:10).

How is God going to do that? Does prophecy tell you? What this prophecy foreshadows will, indeed, reveal how God will make you perfect. **The earthly temple discloses the process**. It is a

figure of **the true or real temple in heaven**, which descends as a Bride when God's **kingdom** comes to The New Earth (Revelation 21:10 and Revelation 19:7). *The Book of Revelation* prophesies what the real **temple in heaven** discloses about **the earthly temple**, which was only a **shadow**. *The Book of Revelation* is **Christ's "will"** or "testimony" to enter The Holy of Holies (Revelation 19).

## Temple's Measurements

Read the description of **the temple** Moses was to build. Hebrews 9 depicts **the temple** and what is in **the temple**. You are about to discover that **the temple** foreshadows The Lake of Fire, The Two Witnesses, The True Church, **the place of safety** during The Great Tribulation, and ultimately, who will be **The Bride of Christ**. All this and more is **foreshadowed in the temple** with its divine services or ordinances. *The Book of Revelation* reveals it all! It is the "testimony" or "will" of Christ, Your Savior (Hebrews 9:15-22).

## Temple Overview

To understand **the temple**, which Moses was ordered to build on earth, you need to picture it in your mind first. After that, you need to go through **each part of the temple** to understand its prophetic **shadows**. **The temple** itself was relatively small in comparison to the **entire temple area**. **The temple**, built by Solomon, was on one of the mountains in the southeastern corner of Jerusalem. Across from its Eastern Gate was a bridge going over to Mount Olivet or The Mount of Olives where Christ died.

**The temple itself** was located in the rear part of **the temple area** facing **The Eastern Gate**. Jesus will **return** upon The Mount

of Olives facing **this gate**. **The temple** has two compartments, one in its back half (part), called The Holy of Holies where The Mercy Seat was and the front half (part), which was divided by a veil and had **the seven golden candlesticks** on the table with **the shewbread**.

Another veil in the front of this chamber, called **The Holy Place**, with its entrance that led to some steps going down to what is known as **the court area**. Going down these steps there were two pillars one on each side. The pillar on the right was called Jachin and the one on the left was called Boaz. These pillars **did not support any part of the temple**, but each merely stood on the left and the right. In front of the steps is an altar. This was the sacrificial altar for the animal sacrifices. Between **the altar** and **the temple** was the basin to purify oneself. This symbolizes baptism.

The court area was divided by its front court, which was for The Nation of Israel or The Twelve Tribes. The second court was for all circumcised Gentiles or strangers. In both courts, the men were on one side and the women on the other. Surrounding this court area and **the temple** was a high wall with four gates. It had an east gate, west gate, north gate and south gate. This was the **entire temple** area.

## Hebrews Nine

Paul describes **the temple**, The Holy of Holies and The Holy Place with its major pieces (Hebrews 9). You will discover each section in its appropriate place – with the court area as a **shadow**, or a **teacher** or **schoolmaster** to **reveal future prophecy** concerning Christ and His **church**. Jesus, Himself, gives you the answer to their meanings. In fact, the **entire end-time** is uncov-



ered or revealed in *The Book of Revelation*. Jesus is The Revelator! The **first covenant**, which included **the temple** on earth, had **ordinances** of **divine** service (Hebrews 9:1). In Greek, the word “ordinances,” conveys the meaning of “**works** – which had **legal rights**.” Everything done in **the temple** by The Priests with **each temple piece** carrying a **legal meaning** by God as a divine or Godly service even though it was only a worldly (type) of sanctuary. Paul, first, describes The Holy Place where the **candlestick** was kept.

Paul states this Holy Place had a candlestick, a table and the shewbread called **the sanctuary** or holy place (Hebrews 9:22). A veil divided The Holy Place from The Holy of Holies (Verse 3). The Holy of Holies contained the “**Golden Censer**,” **The Ark of The Covenant**, The **Golden Pot** with manna, Aaron’s **Rod that budded** and **the tables of the covenant** or The Ten Commandments in stone (Verse 4).

Only The High Priest could go into The Holy of Holies, once a year, because The Holy Spirit was signifying the way into The Holiest “of all” was not possible (Hebrews 9:7-11). This **first tabernacle** was merely a **shadow** of the real **temple** in **heaven**. No one legally had access to God, The Father, because they were still carnal. They, therefore, could not be forgiven for their sins and receive mercy. Paul said all these divine services in this **temple** were only a **figure** or a **type** of the real **temple** in **heaven**. All the sacrifices, gifts, etc. could not make those **worshipping in the temple perfect**. These services couldn’t change **one’s conscience** or **heart** to have **God’s Laws written in their hearts and minds**. One could be keeping the entire Letter of The Law, which was only a **shadow**, but attempting to keep them could not make them Holy or **perfect** as God (Matthew 5:48). This **temple** and the entire Letter of The Law had a different purpose. It

was designed to convert **carnal people** into **repentant** Christians (I Timothy 1:7-10).

Paul states only Jesus, The Christ, was A High Priest in a greater and more **perfect temple** than the earthly (Hebrews 9:11). You are ready now to prove how this **earthly temple** was a **school-master** to bring you to Christ!

### **Purpose Of The Book Of Revelation**

John, The Apostle, was on The Isle of Patmos and in a vision a loud voice told him to write a letter which became *The Book of Revelation to The Seven Churches in Asia*. The Seven Churches were: **Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamos, Thyatira, Sardis, Philadelphia and Laodicea**. This *Book of Revelation* was written exclusively to these **seven churches**. Why? Because this “**revelation**” was coming directly from Jesus, The Christ (Revelation 1:1). Revelation 1:19 relates **the purpose** of *The Book of Revelation* and why it was written. *The Book of Revelation* was written to tell **the seven churches such things which shall be in the future**. This is prophecy and Jesus, Himself, is The Revelator. These **seven churches** as Christ’s “**witness**” have the “**testimony**” of **Jesus** (Revelation 19:10). What is His “**testimony**?” Christ’s “**testimony**” is The Spirit of Prophecy. This prophecy is **Christ’s “will.”** *The Book of Revelation* is written specifically to **the seven churches** because they are to be **the witnesses** of this prophecy until God’s **kingdom** comes to this earth. These Seven Churches continue to exist as Christ’s **church – the seven candlesticks** – until the entire prophecy of Revelation is completed. Christ, Himself, reveals what is going to happen to His **seven churches** until His **return**.

What could this prophecy reveal? Jesus will come with the clouds

and **every eye shall see him** (Revelation 1:7). This **book** covers the events of the actual **return** of The True Messiah and the establishment of God's **kingdom**. All events pertaining to Christ's **return** and God's **kingdom** are foretold by this prophecy. Let Christ reveal **the truth** to all His **witnesses** – **the seven churches** of Revelation 2 and 3.

## **The True Church Of God**

Every Christian denomination or group claims to be The True Church of God. Catholics claim one must become a Catholic or go to hell. The Orthodox and Protestant Churches make the same claim – only they regard themselves as The True Churches. All others – Evangelicals, Independents and even **sects** say the same. All **churches** believe they are The True Church and one must believe **their doctrine or their faith** to be a member in their **church**. The Jews claim Christ has not come, yet, and only they are God's **chosen people**. All this is complete confusion! Who is right? Where is The True Church of God? Who are the **elect** or **called-out ones**?

## **Jesus, The Revelator**

Study the **shadows** to see if you can distinguish **The True Church**. Paul starts describing what was in **the temple**. The Holy Place or sanctuary contains the **candlestick**, the **table** and the **shewbread** (Hebrews 9:2). What do these items foreshadow? The word “sanctuary” in Greek is “*hagios*: a **sacred thing**” or “**a Holy thing**.” The candlestick, table and shewbread are all sacred or Holy and undefiled. What is this **candlestick** in **prophecy**?

Jesus states, in His right hand He held the “**seven golden candlesticks**” (Revelation 1:20). These **Seven Golden Candlesticks** are

**the candlesticks** in The Holy Place in **the temple**. The Jews call these **seven candlesticks** – **The Menorah**. What are they? To The Jews, this candlestick is highly prized and included in most of their religious services. These candlesticks provide light – **a witness**.

Christ reveals these “**seven candlesticks are the seven churches**” (Verse 20). They are to be **witnesses** of Christ (Acts 1). Revelation 1:12-13 states John saw Jesus, Himself, in the middle of these **seven candlesticks**. Christ states The Menorah in The Holy Place represents “**the seven churches**” in Asia. These **seven churches** are The **True Churches** of God; God’s **church** does not exist as **one candlestick or one church but seven candlesticks or seven churches**. These **seven churches** in Asia represent The True Churches of God. They are The Menorah or candlestick in The Holy Place. Jesus only regards these **seven** as His, since He is in their midst. Jesus is not in the middle of any **other** seven candlesticks – only these seven. That is why Revelation is written to them about Christ’s **return** since these **seven** are being told their future in **prophecy**. Jesus is revealing how His **churches** are to be **true witnesses** to be able to “**inherit**” from His “**will**.”

## A Big Error

Some Christian groups believe these **seven churches** are The Seven Eras of God’s Church from Christ’s death until His **return**. What an error! There is **no biblical proof** to think they are “**eras**.” One can never understand *The Book of Revelation* and its prophecy under such delusion. Read Revelation 2 and 3 where each of these **seven churches exists** from the time John wrote about them until The Return of Christ.

Each and every one of these **seven churches** exists until The Re-

turn of Jesus in the clouds. They are not **church eras** but include the **whole Church of God** throughout history until The Return of Christ. These **seven churches** represent The True Church of God! The physical “**temple**” The Holy Place will validate where you find **the candlestick** with **the seven lamps** – The Menorah! You will find Christ is in their midst.

## Doctrine

**All Christian churches**, as well as those in The Jewish “**faith**,” **claim** they are God’s True Chosen Ones or The Church of God. Acts 7:38 calls Israel, those of Jewish **faith**, The Church in The Wilderness. How can this be? Whose is **the true church**? All those of The Jewish and Christian **faiths** are separate one from the other based upon **doctrine** or **creed**. It merely means a specific church’s teachings differentiating one group from another group. Is this true? Is The True Church of God different because of doctrine? What does Christ, The Head of The Church, have to say about this?

## The Seven

So far, you have proven biblically that God’s **true church** consists of **the seven churches stated in Revelation 2 and 3**. Did they all hold to the same teaching, doctrine or creed? Amazingly, not at all! Each of The Seven True Churches of God was either **slightly** or **grossly** different in belief, one from another. Doctrine was not what constituted them as a True Church of God. Something else does.

## The Ecclesia

In Greek, the English word “church” is “*ecclesia*.” It means the

“called-out ones.” Called-out for what? In its Greek root, “*ecclesia*” carries the meaning of a “**general public assembly.**” What is **the purpose** of the assembly since it merely refers to the **general public**?

The Greek word for “church” is **not** an **exclusive** club. It is all-inclusive. Its **purpose** is not to be private but to be a **public assembly**. But, for what **purpose**? The Apostle Paul said this **general** public assembly can have the **learned** as well as **unlearned** congregating in it (I Corinthians 14:12). They just are naturally all at different levels of **faith** or **belief** (Romans 14). The “**church**” is not a matter of **doctrine** or different faiths, but an invitation to a calling for a **purpose**.

In Matthew 24:1-5 Jesus answered the question regarding the destruction of Herod’s “**temple**” and His **return**. Christ prophesies the future: Christ said, “**Take heed that no man deceive you**” (Verse 4). Why?

Many shall come in **Christ’s name** or The Church of God. What will they say? They will say **Jesus, is The Christ**. Those are exactly the words Peter said to Jesus in Matthew 16. Christ said only God could reveal it to a person.

One can be called and know Jesus is The Christ, **The Anointed Messiah** and still deceive others. It is not a matter of doctrine, but a **calling** because Jesus is The Christ. You are invited to the **church** when you know Jesus, is The Christ – The Anointed High Priest, Melchizedek, who died for your sins. You are invited to **The Wedding Feast**.

To know Jesus, The Christ, is all that is required to be in The Church of God! One merely needs to **repent** and be **baptized** for

one's sins. It is not a matter of doctrine or creed. It is your entrance ticket – from that point you must **grow spiritually**.

There is a warning that many in **the church** will be deceived by some of the preaching they hear (Verse 5). Prove from **Christ's own "words"** in Revelation 2 and 3 that each of The Churches of God had a **diverse** set of doctrines or beliefs. Remember, Christ walked in the midst of all these "**seven churches**" as The True Churches of God.

## **The Seven Churches Under Ephesus**

Ephesus was the first of the seven churches, but this church has something wrong with it (Revelation 2:1-7). Jesus states He has a two-edged sword and only speaks The Word of God (Revelation 1:16 and Matthew 4:4). What was wrong with this Christian church? They lost their first love (Verse 4). What was this love?

The Apostle Paul calls a meeting of all The Elders of The Ephesian Church and states they are to be the overseers (episcopae) of the flock (Acts 20:17). The Elder's responsibility is to feed them **the truth** of God and Christ (Acts 20:28).

Paul said after He leaves, other men will arise speaking **perverse false things** about God and His Son (Acts 20:29). Not only will false teachers come into **the church**, but within the group of **bishops**, there will be false preachers. As prophesied, The Ephesian Church lost their first love. They needed *The Book of Revelation*.

John said the early Ephesian Church "**tried**" those Apostles to see if they were **Jews** or the original Jewish Apostles, but they were not (Revelation 20:2). Paul said the same in II Corinthians 11:13. These were **false apostles** who were making a **business** out of **the**

**church** (II Corinthians 11:4-11). They were preaching a **false Jesus**, not “**the true**” Christ. That is the **first love they lost**. These **apostles** were of **Satan**, but **the church was a true Christian church** even though they followed many **false** teachings.

Now, Christ’s **startling statement** concerning His **true church**, which followed **false teachings** (Revelation 2:5), clearly prophesies this Ephesian Church **is not an era**, but **exists all the way to The Return of Jesus**. **Your Savior** makes an amazing announcement by His **angel** who stated when The Christ **returns**, this Ephesian Church is still in **existence** and He, Jesus, will then remove them as a **candlestick**. Not only is this **church** not following every Word of God (Matthew 4:4), but **rejects** the two-edged sword coming out of Jesus’ mouth. The Ephesian Church, which is **Christian** or **the true church** doesn’t even believe in The True Jesus at His **return**! Their **doctrinal belief** completely rejects “**the true Christ**” and, yet, Jesus tells you they are still His True Church of God! Wow!

How about the next church, **Smyrna**? This second **church** goes through tribulation, but only for ten days (Revelation 2:10). Why? Revelation 2:9 explains they, too, accept **false Jews**, **false apostles** and are of Satan’s church. That’s why! But notice, Revelation 2:11, Jesus promises this **church will not** go into **The Lake of Fire**. Smyrna, as The Ephesian Church, exists all the way to God’s **kingdom**. Amazing! No era, but an ongoing True Church of God till God’s **kingdom** comes.

The **third church**, **Pergamos**, is warned by **the angel**, that Jesus is telling them to stick to what Christ preaches as the sharp two-edged sword coming out of His mouth (Matthew 4:4). What **false doctrine** is being taught in this Christian Church of God? First, they make a **business** out of The Church of God. They follow the



doctrine of Balaam (Revelation 2:14). Read Numbers 22 through 31.

You will see God's Prophets make a **business** or profit from God's **truth**. What do they teach? They teach **fornication** or idolatry for money. They, also, teach **pagan myths** about The Nicolaitanes, which Christ hates; including Easter rabbits having eggs, Christmas, The Son's birth during the solstice of winter. Paganism was in this **true** Church of God. They are teaching **wrong doctrines** and yet they are **still Christians** and one of the **candlesticks**. Pergamos will still be existing at **The Return** of Christ (Revelation 2:16). This is no church era.

The **fourth church, Thyatira** is warned that Jesus is a flaming fire (Revelation 2:18). Why? They teach the doctrine of Jezebel who claims to be a prophetess (Revelation 2:20). Jezebel teaches and supports Baal, **the god of fertility** or **sex** (Read II Kings 9-21). Jezebel followed the pagan prophets. Wow! This church, one of Christ's candlesticks, preaches a **pagan and an idolatrous** religion. This **Christian** Church of God **will go into The Great Tribulation** so they can **repent** (Revelation 2:22). This **church still exists** at The Return of Christ as one of The True Churches of God (Revelation 2:25).

The **fifth church** is The **Sardis** Church and is called a **dead** church, but nevertheless, it is Christ's **candlestick** and a **Christian church** (Revelation 3:3). This **church** makes one feel good because they think they have the only **truth** about God. They are The Only True Church of God. Jesus states when He **returns**, this Sardis Church exists and He will come upon this **church** as a **thief in the night** (five unwise virgins) (Matthew 24:43). Again, Sardis is not a church era, but is a **church** that exists at **Christ's return**.

Of all the seven churches, **the sixth church**, The **Philadelphia Church**, keeps **the truth** of Christ as Jesus reveals it to them and because they are **faithful**, they do not have to go through **the tribulation** (Revelation 3:10). This **church** continues to grow and continues to seek **new truth**. Also, since they don't follow Satan's teaching (Revelation 3:9); they will go to a place of safety during **the tribulation** (Revelation 12). This **church** also exists at **The Return** of Christ (Revelation 3:11).

The **seventh church** is **Laodicea** outlined in Revelation 3:14-21. This **church** is neither **cold** nor **hot**, only lukewarm. Why? If they were atheists (not believing in God), they would not be held responsible because they would be only "ignorant" or "unlearned." If they were **true witnesses** of Christ (not merely attending church, giving money and keeping days) but would instead expound Christ's nature by **doing good works** as Jesus told them, then they would be **hot!**

What does Jesus say of this **true** Christian Church of God? Christ said He counsels them to buy **gold** or go into **The Lake of Fire** – hell, to truly repent (Revelation 3:18). There you have it. The Laodicean **candlestick** – God's **church**, will exist when Jesus **returns** for His Bride (Revelation 3:20). What a **group of churches!** The only common **faith** or **belief** or **doctrine** is they all believe Jesus is The Savior who paid for everyone's sins. This is truly a **general public assembly** or **called-out ones**. Read their **real history in the parable of the SOWER and the SEED** (Matthew 13:24-30). This is Christ's true parable of **The True Churches of God with their history**. Then, Revelation 2 and 3 gives you God's True Christian Churches from **the fall of the temple** in 70 A.D. until God's **kingdom** comes. Doctrine is not what makes **True Christians** – "**Christian.**" All The Churches of God do not have the same **faith**. That is why Paul said, "**Whatsoever is not**

**of faith is sin**” (Romans 14:23). The Parable of The Ten Talents reveals all are at different levels of **spiritual growth** or **doctrinal understanding** (Matthew 25). Nevertheless, **all** are **Christians**, regardless of **the seven types of churches** you may attend or are affiliated with. But, Jesus issues a **warning** to **all** those who are **not true witnesses** of Christ in The Parable of The **Ten Virgins**. Only half are **wise** and continue to **grow** in God’s Holy Spirit or continued **truth** until **The Return** of Christ (Matthew 25:1-13). Be sure you, yourself, will be invited to The Wedding Feast. Continue to grow and be considered the **called-out ones** who are faithful (Matthew 25:13)! Then, you may be one of the ones **invited** to The Wedding as The True Church of God. “**For MANY are CALLED** [*ecclesia*], **but few are chosen**” (Matthew 22:14). That is why Revelation 18:4 is a warning to God’s Seven Churches, “**COME OUT OF HER, MY PEOPLE!**”

### Summary Of The Seven

At the very **birth** of Christ, Satan **started** to infiltrate The Church of God. Through Herod, at Jesus’ birth, Satan attempted to kill Christ (Revelation 12). From that point on, Satan infiltrated The Churches of God. He even tried to sift “The Apostle Peter” as wheat. By the time The Thessalonian Church was established, Satan began his deception of **the falling away**. Once **the temple** ended in 70 A.D., “**the church**” was scattered. Some went to Pella.

In time, by the end of the first century, Christ accepted **the seven churches** in Asia as His “**candlesticks**.” All of them, in some way, were deceived by Satan except **The Philadelphians**. They only had a **little strength** or **truth**. But all are The True Churches of God until the very **Return of Christ**. The Catholics, Orthodox, Protestants, Evangelicals, Independents and those of The Jewish Faith are all God’s “**called-out ones**” (Revelation 12).

In the parable of the sower and the seed, Jesus said, “**Let the TARES and the WHEAT grow together until the end.**” By 325 A.D., at The Council of Nicea, The Roman Empire, under Constantine, took over The Christian Church with 250 bishops present. In Daniel, The Roman Empire is “The Fourth Beast,” which Christ at His **return** destroys. God and Christ allowed His “**church**” to be taken over by Satan. The **tares** and **wheat** are **now together**. They are all in Babylon. The rest of *Revelation* explains how **God separates** the two, so **Christ’s Bride** and **Guests** can be invited to The Wedding Feast. “**For Many are CALLED, but few are CHOSEN**” (Matthew 22:14). All of **the seven churches** are Christian and are **the shadow** or “**the schoolmaster**” in “**the temple**” as “**The Menorah**” in The Holy Place.

## **The Table And The Shewbread**

Hebrews 9:2 reveals the table where “**the shewbread**” was placed, as well as, “**the seven candlesticks.**” In Luke 22:15-16, Jesus desired to eat that Passover with His Disciples. Then He said He would eat this Passover meal with them in “**the kingdom.**” **The shewbread** with **the church** forms The Wedding Feast, which completes The Marriage Ceremony between Christ and His Bride. Remember, only a few are chosen as His Bride, with only a **few** Guests. The rest of **the temple** and **courtyard** for both The Israelites and The Gentiles are a **shadow of events** revealed in *The Book of Revelation*.

## **King – Priests**

From this point on, Revelation 5 to Revelation 22 deals with prophecy where Jesus reveals what He and God, The Father must do to **correct “the seven churches” so they can come out of Babylon** (Revelation 18:4). In Revelation 5:9 the heavenly host

sings a new song, which declares, The Lamb – Christ, is worthy to open **the seals** of *The Book of Revelation*. What does *The Book* reveal? It is His “**testimony**” or “**will**.” It prophesies the future of “**the seven churches**” – Jesus’ death so He could **redeem** you, by His **blood**. Why did Christ **redeem** you? Jesus has **redeemed** Christians to be **Kings** and **Priests** and you will reign on **the earth**. This is The Millennium (Revelation 5:10). There it is: The Seven Christian Churches who have been infiltrated by Satan’s false teachings will eventually, become Priests and Kings in God’s “**kingdom**.” However, this only happens if all Christians and Israelites come out of **the false teachings** of Babylon. Chapter 6, ‘*Babylon and The Two Grails*’ explains in depth the specific details. After Jesus cleanses His “**churches**” just before His “**millennial reign**,” Satan is cast into prison for one thousand years and many voices proclaim, “**They** [saved of the seven churches] **lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years**” (Revelation 20:4). The second death will not have **any power** over them.

These **Kings** or **Priests** are those of **the seven churches** who reign with Christ for one thousand years. These are **the chosen** or **the saints** who become The **Bride** of **Christ** (Revelation 19:7-8). Now, you are ready to trace **the schoolmaster** in the earthly **temple** to discover how Jesus cleanses His Bride and Wedding Guests to come to The Wedding. Remember, many from “**the seven churches**” are **called** but only “**a few chosen**” (Matthew 22:14). The rest of *Revelation* depicts how those who are chosen to attend must have a proper wedding garment to be a part of The Groom’s Wedding. The early **temple** will give you the answer.

## Church In The Wilderness

Revelation 12 summarizes **church history** until The Return of Christ when He establishes God’s “**kingdom**.” Read it **all care-**

fully. Revelation 12:6 shows the woman – God’s “**church**” – during the time of world trouble known as **The Great Tribulation**, taking “**the church**” into a **place of safety** where God supplies all her needs. This Great Tribulation lasts for three and a half years or 1,260 days.

Satan and his **demon angels** had a war in heaven with God and His **angels**. Satan and his demon angels were defeated and cast to the earth. Because Satan knows his time is short, he determines to make war with the remnant of God’s “**church**” who keep God’s “**commandments**” and “**the testimony**” or prophecy from “**the true**” Christ (Revelation 12:17). **The Church** is in **The Wilderness**.

## The Questions

The first twelve chapters in *Revelation* present many questions about the history of “**the true church**” (**seven candlesticks**). Prophetically to understand *The Book of Revelation*, you need to know the answers to these questions:

- 1 What is meant by **the wilderness**?
- 2 What is “**the place of safety**?”
- 3 What part of “**the church**” goes into safety?
- 4 What part of “**the church**” is persecuted and martyred by Satan?

Once you find **the biblical answer** to these questions, you will know who will be able to attend The Wedding Feast and who will not be allowed to attend – “**many are called but few chosen.**”

Those in *The Book of Life* are those attending The Marriage Feast of The Lamb. *The Book of Life* is a *Marriage Registry*. **The temple**, as part of The Law, is a **shadow**, and **the temple** with The Holy Days is also a **shadow**, which will lead everyone eventually to Christ in **the last days**. The Last Days begin with The Birth of Jesus and will be explained in Chapter 4, '*Who Is The Beast?*'

## The Two Pillars

From The Holy Place in the **temple (seven candlesticks)**, going East as one goes through the veil, are **two pillars**. Each of these two pillars has a name. The pillar on the right is called Jachin and on the left the pillar is called Boaz (I Kings 7:21-22). Who or what are these two pillars? These two pillars do not support **the temple** at all. They are two columns standing in front of The Holy Place and The Holy of Holies. What do they **represent** as **shadows**? Revelation 3:12 prophesies if The Philadelphia Church **overcomes to the end** they will be a **pillar** in **the temple** in New Jerusalem. Remember, the two pillars in Solomon's **temple** are Christians who overcome **till the end**. Just who does *The Book of Revelation* say they are?

## The Two Witnesses

So much has been written and preached about the **two witnesses** being **two humans**. Some say one is a young man and the other an elder. When you allow *The Bible* to interpret, amazingly, you will find out they are **not** two people at all. Some, among Christians, are bold enough to believe they, themselves, will be one of **the two witnesses**. Revelation 11 describes these **two witnesses**, so let *The Bible* unravel **the mystery** for you.

John was told to measure God's **temple** (Revelation 11:1-2). Then,

John was told not to measure **the court** of The Gentiles because for three and a half years The Gentiles will control God's **temple**. This is the time period when the anti-Christ will be in **the temple** claiming to be God. This is the time of The Great Tribulation.

The importance of **this temple** is that **the court** of Israel is to be measured because Christ knows **the exact number of Israelites who will occupy The Court of Israel**. Remember, in John 14:1, Jesus said, He was going to God, The Father to prepare a place for you [Christians] in God's house, "the temple." *Revelation* uncovers the process or order that Christians will or will not be in The Father's "**house**." The **two witnesses** tell who will be in that **temple**. On the same subject, John reveals in Revelation 11:3 that His **two witnesses** will prophesy (*The Book of Revelation*) for three and a half years or during The Great Tribulation.

Who are these **two witnesses**? Revelation 11:4 states these **two witnesses** are **two olive trees** and **two candlesticks** who are standing before God on the earth. Now you have the definition! These two witnesses are:

- 1 They are **two olive trees**.
- 2 They are **two candlesticks**.
- 3 They **stand before God's throne**.

Does *The Bible* define these three points, which reveals who these **two witnesses** are? Yes, it does! An **angel** awoke Zechariah and showed him a candlestick of gold with a bowl on top which had seven lamps (Zechariah 4:1-4). This is an *Old Testament* prophecy – "**The Menorah**" in The Holy Place representing "**the seven churches**" in Revelation 2 and 3.



“**There are two olive trees**” by this **seven-lamp candlestick** (Verse 3). Then, Zechariah asked what are these **olive trees** and **candlesticks** (Verse 4)? Who or what are these “**two olive trees**” by “**The Menorah**” or “**the candlestick**” (Zechariah 4:11-14)? These “**two olive trees**” empty themselves into “**the candlestick**” (Verse 12). Then, **the angel** states clearly these two olive trees are God’s **two anointed ones** who stand before God. Now, you have solved **a part** of the mystery. “**These olive trees**” represent God’s Holy Spirit providing the fuel for **the candlestick – The Seven Churches** to have a light and be witnesses during the **three and a half years** of “**tribulation.**”

Can you prove who these two olive trees are? Yes, you can. Remember, Jesus was **not** going to have **the court** of The Gentiles measured (Revelation 11:1-2). Who is The Revelator of these **two olive trees**? Who are **the two witnesses**? The Apostle to The Gentiles – **The Apostle Paul** clearly tells you who the **two olive trees** are.

In Romans 11:1 Paul said God will not throw Israel – His people away. For a short time The Nation of Israel is **blinded** by The Law because they do not understand The Law was only **a shadow** or a stepping stone to bring them to Christ. The Law’s **purpose** was not to make them **righteous**. The Law is just **a shadow** pointing to Christ who only can make you **righteous** (Hebrews 10:1 and Colossians 1:27). The Letter is not a point of sin but a **shadow** or **type** of what is **real** or **the truth**.

Ultimately, **all Israel** will be **saved** (Romans 11:26). The blindness of Israel will last until The Gentile **rule** on the earth **ends**. Only a **remnant** of Israel (during The Gentile **rule**) will be **saved** (Romans 11:25). Why? So **The Gentile** “world” can be **saved** (Romans 11:15). Now, who are “The Two Olive Trees?”

Romans 11:16-24 simply reveals **The Two Olive Trees** are **The Israelites** and **The Gentiles**. This is God's **purpose** to be **ALL AND IN ALL** (I Corinthians 15). This all fits perfectly with the story of *Revelation*. God, through His people **Israel** and the converted **Gentiles** (The Seven Candlesticks) are **the two witnesses**.

Jesus already revealed “**candlesticks**” represent “**churches**” **not** two people (Revelation 1:20). The two candlesticks are **not two humans** but “**two churches**” – The Church in The Wilderness (Israel) and The Church of God (Gentiles) who **witness** during The Great Tribulation and finally, are martyred and resurrected (at **The Return** of Christ) (Revelation 11:7-12). **Where** are they killed? In The Great City of Babylon – **the whore**, where Christ was crucified (Revelation 11:8). Can you know how many will be killed? Absolutely!

Revelation 7:1-17 prophesies that of Israel only **144,000** from The Tribes of Israel do **the witnessing** and the **innumerable multitude** from The Gentiles are **the witnesses**. Revelation 7:14 states these one hundred and forty-four thousand (**144,000**) **Israelites and an innumerable Gentile multitude come out of The Great Tribulation**. Plain as day! The two witnesses are **The 144,000 of Israel** and **the innumerable multitude from The Gentiles**. They are “**The Two Olive Trees**.” The Apostle Paul proved it (Romans 11). The **natural olive tree** represents Israel, God's Church in The Wilderness, and the **wild olive tree** represents The Gentiles **converted** to the **natural** tree as Christians.

## **Philadelphia**

The reward of The Church of Philadelphia, if they overcome, is to be of these **two pillars** (Revelation 3:12). They will be invited to The Wedding in New Jerusalem.

## The Shadows

Remember, Jachin and Boaz are **the two pillars** before God's **throne** and **the candlestick** with **the seven lamps**. Jachin in Hebrew is in "the male gender." Boaz is in "the female gender." Why? Boaz is of **the church** (The Gentile Church), through Ruth, The Moabites.

Ruth was Gentile, and she was grafted into the **natural** olive tree – Boaz of Israel. Boaz is female because it is "**the church**" or woman in Revelation 12. Israel is Jachin or **the remnant** of Israel who is **saved** to be The 144,000 of Israel. Israel is male because **the inheritance** must pass through the male line. You now have the true story of **the two witnesses** and "**the schoolmaster**" leading you to Christ in **the temple**.

## The Altar

When one descends the steps from **the temple**, you find the **sacrificial altar**. Why is the altar located right in front of **the temple**? Remember, between **the temple** and **altar** was the basin to cleanse or baptize. First, you must be **repentant** or your human nature must die. In Hebrews 9:22, Paul said for you to be able to be accepted of God, **all things** are by Law **purged by blood**; and without shedding of blood there is no remission. Christ gave that sacrifice for sinners but what about the rest of the unconverted world? Remember, The Law, which includes **the temple**, is only **a shadow**.

In The Law, God requires animal sacrifice by The Priest for their own sins and the sins of the people (Hebrews 9:9-10). These animal sacrifices did not make The Priest or the people "**perfect**." That is why they offered clean animals **only** as a sacrifice. Why

only clean animals? Clean animals can be trained and are far more docile than the unclean animals, but they still were animals. For example, lions and tigers are wild. Lambs are able to be led. That is the difference. This is why God gave a Law about clean and unclean animals? Peter, who was given **the keys** to “**the kingdom**,” reveals the difference.

After Peter had the vision concerning clean and unclean animals, Cornelius, The Gentile (who was without God), was converted. God revealed the meaning of **the shadow** in The Law and why God instituted clean and unclean animals. Peter now said there was no difference between clean and unclean animals (Acts 10:28). God revealed **the clean animals were Israel**, and **the unclean animals were The Gentiles**, who were without God. Now, both were clean, but **only** if they **repented** and **accepted** Christ. Both were still not perfect and still had carnal natures, but now both, The Israelites and The Gentiles, were **teachable**. Psalm 95:1-11 covers the answers so you understand **the place of safety**, **the wilderness**, as well as, those who go through **The Great Tribulation** – including **The Lake of Fire!**

What is **the place of safety**? The **rock** is your **salvation**. In Hebrew, the word “rock,” signifies “a place of safety” or “fortress of protection.” Some Christians, fallaciously, believe Petra (a rock city) in South Jordan is **the place of safety**. This is false. Read Psalm 94:22. It clearly interprets **the place of safety**. “**But The Lord is my defense** [refuge - place of safety]; **and my God is the rock** [not Petra] **of my refuge** – [God is].” This is **the place of safety for some** Christians during The Great Tribulation. Christ will protect you (I Corinthians 10:4).

Now, what is **the wilderness** where Christ protects you? David states not to **harden** your heart, as Israel did and couldn't **enter**

**God's rest**, but had to spend **forty years** in **the wilderness** being **tested of God** (Psalm 95:8). That is why Stephen called Israel **The Church in The Wilderness** (Acts 7:38). Of a truth, Israel is **the pillar** (Jachin) in **the temple** and must be tried and tested in **the wilderness** just like **the pillar** of Boaz – “**the seven churches**” of Revelation 2 and 3. Both must have their trial of **faith** in The Wilderness and come out of Babylon (Revelation 18:4).

The woman – “**the church**” flees from Satan into **the wilderness** just as Israel had done (Revelation 12:14). It is in **the wilderness** and not **God's rest** where “**the church**” is safe. This part of “**the church**” is kept safe during The Great Tribulation by Christ, “**our rock**” or “**place of safety**.” How? As Satan pursues **the spiritually growing** Christians (five wise virgins), Christ **causes** natural disasters to occur around them to keep them safe (Revelation 12:15-16). These are The Seven Trumpets.

God protects His **worthy Christians** by natural disasters and wars as a shield to keep them safe (Revelation 11). No one will be after Christians if the enemy is running for their lives. The wilderness is the world under Satan's control with all its wars, famines, diseases and its struggle for the fittest to survive. It is the time of worldwide trouble. John 16:20-21 speaks of “**the church**” just before Christ **returns**. Christ prayed to The Father even though **spiritually growing** Christians are **in the world** (wilderness), they are not of it (John 17:11-15). They have come out of Babylon – The Wilderness.

Now, what happens to those in The Seven Churches of God who will not be coming out of Babylon? Hebrews 4:10-11 states those **resting** (safe) in Christ will cease **from their works**. But notice what happens to the Christians who do not come out of Babylon. Those who do not **in faith** believe **in Christ** as their **place of**

**safety**, cannot enter into **God's rest or safety**, but will receive **His wrath!** (Psalm 95:11).

Back to **the sacrificial altar** and its meaning. Since God protects the **faithful** Christians in safety, Satan is angry (Revelation 12:17). Satan goes to make war with the remnant of God's **church** who keep His Ten Commandments and the prophecy of Christ. What happens to them? These Christians do keep "**the commandments**" and will be **saved** but what do they lack?

The **unfaithful part** of "**the seven churches**" go into **The Great Tribulation** to gain total **faith** in Christ which they lacked and only then will they live by every Word (logos) of God (Revelation 7:14-15). Israel also lacked **faith** (Matthew 4:4). These are The 144,000 and The Innumerable Multitude who are Gentiles who **witness "the true"** Christ during The Tribulation. These are **the two candlesticks** or **two witnesses** of God who are martyred (Revelation 11:7-11).

Then at Christ's "**return**" at **The Seventh Trump**, they are in **The First Resurrection** – The Spring Barley Harvest. Pick up the story in Revelation 14:1, where you see The 144,000 with Jesus on Mount Zion. A voice cries out to the dead, "**For the time is come for thee to reap; for the harvest of the earth is ripe.**" There are two more "**harvests**" – **The Wheat Harvest** and **The Grape Harvest** (Verses 14 to 20). For more insight read Chapter 7, '*The Mystery Harvest.*'

Those in The Grape Harvest, Revelation 14:18 states this **angel** comes out of the **altar**, not just **the temple**. Why? Because this **angel** takes **fire from the altar** and starts the **seven last plagues** which is finalized with **The Lake of Fire** or hell. There you have it. **The altar** is a **shadow** of God's **wrath**, since God is a **con-**

**suming fire** (Hebrews 12:29). All those who haven't come out of **Babylon** or false teaching (The Seven Churches and Israel) will be brought to complete repentance by **God's wrath** and **The Lake of Fire**. Not everyone will be invited to The Wedding Feast in New Jerusalem. Many are **called** (The Churches) but **few are chosen**. **THE TEMPLE IS TRULY THE MAJOR SHADOW OR SCHOOLMASTER, WHICH WILL EVENTUALLY BRING YOU TO CHRIST AND THE WEDDING FEAST.**

## CHAPTER 2

### WHO ARE IN GOD'S CHURCH?

**Why are there so many Christian denominations? Every Christian group claims they, only, are “the true church.” Those of The Jewish faith have the same problem. There are The Reformed, Orthodox, Kabalists, along with others. What and where is The True Church of God?**

**You will discover God has a specific purpose for His people and the answer is God's “two witnesses” in *The Book of Revelation*. Discover the truth of God's church and its diversified groups.**

After God broke the engagement in *The Old Testament* with Israel, Christ came in *The New Testament*. Christ became The Groom and contractually was married to **the church** by an engagement. But before the consummation of **the marriage**, The Bride, His Virgin, had to make herself ready. Read Ephesians 5:24-32. God is preparing for The Wedding Feast, but who will be The Bride? Those in The Jewish Faith firmly believe they will be The Messiah's Bride. On the other hand, Christians, as “**the church**,” believe they will be The Bride. Who is right?

### The Marriage Feast

Jesus gives a parable about a certain King – (God) who prepared to marry off His Son, Jesus (Matthew 22:1-14). Israel and The Church of God, including The Guests, all made some excuse not



to attend. What is important for you to know is not all of Israel nor all **the church** are **chosen**. Jesus said, “**For MANY ARE CALLED, but few are CHOSEN**” (Matthew 22:14). Wow! Neither the whole of Israel nor the whole **church** are The Bride. *The Bible* states only the **few** are **chosen** to be at The Wedding.

## Who Are The Chosen?

Jesus relates the parable of the **ten virgins** (Matthew 25:1-10). Five of them are wise, the other half are unwise. Remember, all of them are **virgins** – and are acceptable to be brides. Notice the problem. Only half of them are prepared to be **a proper bride**. Matthew 25:10 states the five wise virgins **were ready** and when Christ, The Groom, returned, they were the only ones ready for The Wedding Feast. Some of Israel and some in “**the church**” are not picked. Even The Guests who are invited are not prepared for The Wedding. Five are **chosen** to be The Bride and the other five who are not chosen will be bridesmaids. “Always a bridesmaid (virgins) but **never a bride**.” They will be part of The Wedding, but not included as The Bride.

Read *The Book of Esther*. It took her nearly two years to get ready to be The King’s Bride. Esther was a type of Israel and “**the church**.” What is the distinguishing requirement to be Christ’s Bride? Since only half of The Ten Virgins, are to be The Bride, you need to know.

## The Answer

*The Book of Revelation* reveals exactly who Christ’s Bride will be. Revelation 19:7-9 prophesies who will be Christ’s Bride and those who will be allowed to come to The Wedding as Guests. New Jerusalem, coming down out of Heaven from God, is **prepared**

as a **Bride adorned** for her Husband (Revelation 21:2)! Pretty clear. Jerusalem, coming from **heaven**, will be the location ready for The Wedding Feast. Who can come? **No one** who **defiles** can come (Revelation 21:27). One must be **perfect** (Matthew 5:48), and only those written in *The Lamb's Book of Life*. *The Book of Life* is *The Marriage Registry*. If you are not written in *The Book of Life* (**Christ "living in you"**) (Colossians 1:27), you are not invited to The Wedding Feast. Now, who is The Bride?

Revelation 19:7-8 reveals The Bride. **"<sup>8</sup>And to her was granted that she [Bride] should be ARRAYED in FINE LINEN, clean and white."** The Bride has to wear a particular dress. What is that dress? Going on, **"For the FINE LINEN is the RIGHTEOUSNESS of SAINTS."** The Bride will only be those who continue to grow **spiritually** to become **a saint, a righteous one** or as the word in Hebrew reveals, a *"hassidim."* One must **spiritually** grow where they neither **offend God** or **His creation**. They must be one who becomes a Christian, whether Israelite or Gentile and **continues to grow spiritually** to become Holy or perfect (Matthew 5:48).

These are the five wise virgins. If you are an Israelite or of The Church of God doesn't mean you will be chosen as **"a saint"** or a **"righteous one."** One can end up being **"a guest"** or **"a bridesmaid"** **but not The Bride**. When you read Chapter 9, *'What Is Sin?'* you will know the difference. Paul told Timothy, **"But in a great house [God's, Israel or Gentile] there are not only vessels of gold and silver, but also of wood and of earth; and some to honour, and some to dishonour"** (II Timothy 2:20). Those, ultimately who **dishonor**, go into The Lake of Fire or hell. First, you know who Israel is, but who, of The Gentiles, is Christ's Bride? To answer that question, one must understand who is The Church of God.

## Church Calling

The Greek word for “**church**” in *The New Testament* is “*ecclesia*” or “**the called-out ones.**” You know that God, The Father, is having A Wedding for His Son. Ephesians 5 proves The Bride is being prepared by Christ, The Husband, through **the gift of Jesus – The Father’s Holy Spirit.** Notice what event **the church** is called to attend.

The Bride is made ready just before The Return of Christ (Revelation 19:7-9). The Bride is now **prepared for The Wedding Feast**, but The Guests, right at this moment in time (Christ’s second coming), are only **invited to attend The Wedding** (Verse 9). The Barley Spring Harvest shadows The First Resurrection, which is about to take place. What does Revelation 19:9 reveal? “**Blessed are they which are CALLED unto the marriage supper of the Lamb.**” Then, the rest of the chapter relates **The Return** of Christ on **The White Horse**. Notice, who is **invited** to The Marriage Feast – “**the called,**” The Churches of God. Clear as a bell! *The Book of Life* is a *Marriage Registry*.

## The Real Church Eras

Go to the parable of “**the sower and the seed**” in Matthew 13:18-30. Each person is called to “**the church**” but as you have proved, only a few will be **chosen** to come to **The Wedding Feast**. Whether one is to be The Bride (**saint** or **righteous ones**) or The Guests (**the faithful**) – only a **few are chosen**. Jesus said some who are called into “**the church**” and accept **the truth** in their heart quit when Satan deceives them.

The second group receives **the truth** and is so excited, but when they are tested as in the **tribulation** or **persecuted**, they give up

or are offended. The third group receives **the truth**, but is more interested in the earthly affairs of this life and are too busy to keep **growing spiritually**. Of those who are called in the fourth group are The Christians who are the ones "**chosen**." All the **other Christians in "the church"** who have been called are not listed in *The Marriage Registry – The Book of Life*. They cannot come to The Wedding Feast. They are called and invited but wear the wrong garment to attend. Why?

### **Tares And Wheat**

This is a great mystery according to The Apostle Paul in Ephesians 5:32. What is it about "**the church**" and Christ's Bride? The Words of Christ about The Parable of The Sower and The Seed explains it to you.

Jesus adds a **new understanding** to The Parable of The Sower and The Seed (Matthew 13:24-30). Christ said someone sprinkled tares in between the seeds of the **seedlings** – the **growing wheat**. He asked who did this? It was an **enemy of the sower**. It was suggested they pull out the tares so the wheat can grow without hindrance or deceit. Christ continued and states, "**Let BOTH [seed and tares] grow TOGETHER UNTIL the HARVEST.**" Why? So, that no **wheat** is pulled out or lost with the tares. Then at the harvest, the tares are removed and burned. The wheat, then, is harvested and put into the barn. Do you understand what Jesus is telling you? The tares are of Satan and **his false teaching**, which are **mixed** with the **wheat** while **the church** is trying to **grow spiritually**.

### **The Seven Candlesticks**

Chapter 1 on '*The Schoolmaster*' proves "**the seven candle-**

sticks” in Revelation 1:20 are “**The Menorah,**” or “**the seven candlesticks**” in The Holy Place in **the temple** (Hebrews 9:2). As Christ states **these seven candlesticks** are “**the seven churches**” in Revelation 2 and 3. In Revelation 1:12-13 Jesus is the one in the **midst** of these seven candlesticks, which are a **shadow** or **type** of these churches. Since these are seven churches, which define “**The Menorah**” in **the temple**, these **seven churches** are “**the seven churches**” of God. Whatever Jesus defines as these “**seven churches**” they are **the true** and **only** Churches of God. They are **candlesticks** because they are to be Christ’s **witness** to the world.

You will see *Revelation* is the prophecy of the future witnessing of what Christians are doing in their daily lives. Jesus relates to John that *The Book of Revelation* is to be written to “**the seven churches**” (Revelation 1:11). Why?

*The Book of Revelation* is “**the testimony**” or “**will**” of Jesus Christ (Revelation 19:10). With His death this **testimony** went into force and this “**will**” of Jesus is **the spirit of prophecy**. *The Book of Revelation* is bequeathed to “**the seven churches**” as their **inheritance** from Christ. This **inheritance** is a **prophecy** of what “**the seven churches**” **must do** to receive **their inheritance!** These “**seven churches**” are The True Churches of God. What does Jesus demand of His “**seven churches?**”

## Revelation 2 And 3

In error, some claim these **seven churches** are “**seven eras.**” This, according to *Revelation*, cannot be. Why? Simply, because you will see each of “**the seven churches**” existing when Christ **returns**. It is, therefore, **impossible** for “**the seven churches**” to each be separate periods from the genesis of “**the church**” on Pentecost to **The Return** of Christ.

These “**seven churches**” represented by “**the seven candlesticks**” in the temple, remain until **Christ's second coming** to receive their **reward** or **inheritance**. These “**seven churches**,” therefore, are a **type** from the genesis of “**the church**” until **The Return of Jesus** in the clouds. That is the very reason *The Book of Revelation* is written to them. *The Book of Revelation* is their prophecy or future until God's “**kingdom**” comes. Open this “**testimony**” of Jesus and see the future of God's **true church**:

**EPHESUS**: Jesus warns them they have **left their first love** (Revelation 2:4). Christ warns them that if they do not repent, He will **remove their candlestick when He comes!** (Verse 5). The Ephesian Church of God will still be in existence upon Christ's **return**.

**SMYRNA**: If this “**church**” remains faithful, their reward is – “**they will not be hurt or thrown into The Lake of Fire**” (Revelation 2:11). They exist at **The Return** of Jesus.

**PERGAMOS**: Jesus warns them He will **come** quickly and will fight against them at His Second Coming (Revelation 2:16). Pergamos exists until the end.

**THYATIRA**: Christ tells those in Thyatira “**to hold**” **fast** until He **returns** (Revelation 2:25). This Church still exists at Christ's **second coming**.

**SARDIS**: Jesus tells them to hold fast to what **truth** they know until He **returns** (Revelation 3:3). Those of The Sardis Church will continue to exist until He **returns**.

**PHILADELPHIA**: Christ tells The Philadelphians to hold fast because He will quickly **return** (Revelation 3:11).

**LAODICEA:** Jesus warns them He stands at the door at His **re-turn** (Revelation 3:20). Laodiceans exist when Christ **returns**.

These **seven churches** are not **eras** but seven types of **Christian “churches.”** All exist from their beginnings when Christ first came until Christ’s second coming. These **“seven churches”** as **“The Menorah”** in The Holy Place, are to be **witnesses** of Jesus right until God’s **“kingdom”** comes. That is why they receive this *Book of Revelation* so they can understand prophecy and witness about the **real** God and **true** Savior, Jesus, The Christ. These **“seven churches”** are The True Churches of God **throughout** human history until God’s **“kingdom.”** This is your Savior, Jesus Christ, telling you exactly who are the real Churches of God. What do these churches believe? What **faith** or **doctrine** do they hold?

## **Church Of God Doctrine**

The Seven Churches of God in Revelation are **The True Churches of God**. All of them had different beliefs and doctrines. Whether Catholic, Orthodox, Protestants, Evangelicals, Independents, etc. – **all are Christians**. They are all the **called-out ones**. They are all invited to **The Wedding Feast**. Jesus said those originally **called to The Wedding Feast were not worthy** (Matthew 22:8-13). What did Christ say to do? He told His servants (ministry) to invite **everyone, both good and bad**. Paul said in His Father’s House are vessels of honor and dishonor – good and bad. That is The Church of God. That is why Jesus said when He **returns** many are **called** but **few chosen**. Being in The Church of God does not mean **you will be invited** to The Wedding Feast. Read Revelation 2 and 3 so you can prove all these **churches** had a variety of doctrinal teachings. Some had more **truth** than others, but all had to **hold fast** and/or **overcome**.

Teachings ranged from a **false Christ** and a **false God** to belief in pagan days and Baalism through Jezebel. What confusion and what a doctrinal **mess** of a mixture. The major outstanding **sin** or **missing the mark** for most of them is **to believe they are the only "true church."** In fact, that was the **major sin** of **The Laodiceans**. They thought they had **all the truth** they needed. That is why they weren't growing in **spiritual talents** from one to two or five to ten. They are the **five unwise virgins**, but they **are still virgins** or **God's "church."** What was their penalty? Christ said, **"I counsel thee [you] to buy of gold"** – where? In **"fire"** or The Lake of Fire (Revelation 3:18). **All "seven churches"** of God had to **hold fast** or **overcome**. That is why Jesus said, **"Come out of her [Babylon], my people"** (Revelation 18:4)! All are in Babylon and Christians are to come out of all the false teachings. How?

Paul said if you do not **prove biblically**, what is being preached from God's **"word,"** you **will have to learn the truth in The Lake of Fire** (I Corinthians 3:9-15). Paul said, **"Let the prophets [or preachers] speak two or three, and let the other judge"** (each **one** by The Word of God) (I Corinthians 14:29). How is Christ helping you to come to **the truth**?

## **The Two Witnesses**

Many believe the two witnesses are two men. Some think one will be old and the other young. Others say it is Moses and Elijah. Over the centuries, many have wondered who these **two witnesses** are.

**The truth** is they are not two people at all. In fact, **the two witnesses** are a major part of the entire *Book of Revelation*. It is how God prepares His Bride and Guests for The Wedding Feast. Let *The Bible* reveal who **the two witnesses** are.



## TWO CANDLESTICKS

Revelation 11:3-4 states **the two candlesticks** are **two witnesses** for a period of **forty-two months** or **three and a half years**. Later, you will see this covers the period known as The Great Tribulation. These **two candlesticks** are, also, **the two olive trees** before God (Verse 4). Does *The Bible* tell you who these two olive trees are? Yes, it does.

One of the olive trees is The Nation of Israel (Jeremiah 11:15-17). Also, it states Israel followed Baal just like “**the churches**” in *Revelation*. The Prophet, Zechariah even gives you more biblical proof as to who **the two witnesses** are. In Zechariah 4:3-4, **the angel** asks who the two olive trees are. The angel tells Zechariah that the candlestick with seven lamps is fed olive oil from these two olive trees. The angel continues and says these two olive trees empty into the seven lamps just as Revelation 1:20 mentions **the seven candlesticks** (Verses 11 to 14). Jesus reveals **the candlesticks** are “**the seven churches.**” Zechariah 4:14 states the two olive trees that feed **the candlestick** or “**Menorah**” in The Holy Place are God’s **two anointed ones**. Before the call of The Gentiles, **the anointed ones** were Judah and Israel. Acts 7:38 states that Israel is The Church in **THE WILDERNESS**. Who is the other olive tree? The Apostle to The Gentiles tells you in Romans 11:16-25. The Apostle Paul states **one of the olive trees is Israel**, The Natural Olive Tree and the second is The Wild Olive Tree – The Gentiles, who are grafted into the natural (Israel) and both are, **the two witnesses** of God. Israel (The Natural Olive Tree) and The Gentiles (The Wild Grafted-in Olive Tree) are **the two witnesses**. Israel is The Church in The Wilderness, and the other Wild Olive Tree is The Church of God. There, you have **the biblical proof**. **The two candlesticks** or **two witnesses** in Revelation 11 are **not two people**, but **God’s “two churches,”** Israel and The

Gentile Church of God. They are God's **two witnesses** during The Great Tribulation. Read what *Revelation* has to say about these "**two churches**" which are **God's two witnesses**.

## **The 144,000 And The Innumerable Multitude**

Revelation 7 speaks of **144,000** and **an innumerable multitude** from all nations or The Gentiles. These individuals are all **sealed** by God as His **servants**. God **seals** them because they are being protected by God from The Seven Trumpets. Who are these **144,000** and **innumerable multitude** of Gentiles?

Revelation 7:4-8 states The 144,000 are from The Twelve Tribes of Israel. Then Revelation 7:9-10 tells you these are from all The Gentile Nations, and they, with The 144,000 Israelites, are clothed in white robes to attend **the wedding feast**.

How did these Israelites and Gentiles become **the righteous ones with white robes**? Revelation 7:14 reveals these **two witnesses** of Christ received **the proper** Wedding Garment because they came through **the great tribulation**. **The 144,000** and **the innumerable multitude** of Gentiles are the **two witnesses**.

They are not **two men**, but **two churches**, The Church in The Wilderness (Acts 7:38) and The Church of God (Revelation 2 and 3). Revelation 11:3 states these two churches, The 144,000 Israelites and The Gentiles **witness** for **three and a half years** as they go through The Great Tribulation. How does God bring them through The Great Tribulation?

## **Revelation 12**

Jesus reveals the history of **the true church** from The Birth of

Christ (Revelation 12:1-2) until The Great Tribulation (Revelation 12:5-17). Part of **“the church”** is protected by God in **the wilderness** during The Great Tribulation. They are in a place of safety (Revelation 12:14). Then, in Revelation 12:17, Satan is angry because part of **“the church”** is protected and he goes after **the two witnesses** who keep God’s **“commandments”** and **murders them** (Revelation 11:7).

The difference between those **Christians** going to a **place of safety** and those **martyred** are those of **“the seven churches”** who **weren’t faithful**, as well as, The **144,000 Israelites**. This is **scripturally** clear. Revelation 2:18-22 states those of Thyatira who do not **repent** have to go into The Great Tribulation. Now you have it.

**The two witnesses** are The 144,000 Israelites with The Gentiles who are not **faithful** and must **witness the true Christ** in **the tribulation** and, then, **are martyred**. Then, they are resurrected after three days at **The Seventh Trump** or **The Return** of Christ (Revelation 11:11 and Revelation 14:1-5).

## **The Wilderness**

What part of **“the church”** is in safety in **the wilderness**? Simply, just as in Acts 7:38, Israel – **“the church”** in **“the wilderness”** is in **“the world”** and not in God’s **rest**. **The wilderness** is the world without God’s **rest** and by the great eagle with its two wings, they will be protected (Revelation 12:14). Christ prayed that Christians are to be **in the world but not of the world** (John 17:14-18).

The place of safety is not some physical place in the world. The place of safety is in **“the wilderness”** or **“the world.”** These

Christians are witnessing God's **truth** and they are protected, but how? They do not go into The Great Tribulation because they are a **light** or **witness** to the world (five wise virgins).

## The Wings Of An Eagle

Does *The Bible* tell you who the **eagle with the wings** is? It certainly does and Revelation tells where to look. Revelation 14:1-5 states at **The Return** of Christ, these 144,000 sing a song. No one else was allowed to learn to sing this song. What is this song? Revelation 15:3 reveals in **the resurrection**, The 144,000 and The Gentiles sing two songs. Only The 144,000 can learn to sing the one song. What is it? Verse 3 states it is "**The Song of Moses.**" Amazingly, "**The Song of Moses**" is recorded in Deuteronomy 32. Read it.

Deuteronomy 32:4 states **the rock** is Israel's **Lord**. I Corinthians 10:4 Paul tells you **the rock** is Christ. Then, it is this **rock, Christ**, who is **the eagle** and that He bears **the chosen** on His **wings** (Deuteronomy 32:11-12). *The Bible* interprets itself. **The eagle** is Christ who protects **the church** by carrying them on His **wings** just as He did with Israel in **The Wilderness**. Psalm 95 – read it all. "**The church's**" **place of safety**, is not Petra or some other physical place. The Israelites in The Wilderness had no faith. Only the faithful of "**the seven churches**" **rest** in Christ, God's **rest**, and therefore, are protected by Jesus, **the rock**, while this prophecy is witnessed to the world (or wilderness). Now, you know who "**the true church**" is and those protected in safety and those who must go through The Great Tribulation. The Seven Trumpets protect those in safety, which lasts for **three and a half years** or the time of The Great Tribulation (Revelation 11:4-6). To learn the rest of the story on how **the marriage feast** takes place, read Chapter 3, '*The Marriage Registry.*'

## CHAPTER 3

### THE MARRIAGE REGISTRY

*The Book of Life* is the book you should want to see your name listed on its pages. Those names not appearing in *The Book of Life* will burn in The Lake of Fire. A primary question you should ask is what is *The Book of Life*? Read the surprising answer revealed by Jesus, Himself, in *The Book of Revelation*.

Every marriage has a registry or written invitational list of who is invited to the wedding. God, also, has a *Marriage Registry* for His Son, Jesus (Revelation 19:7-9). A great multitude of voices said, “**Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honor to him: for the marriage of the lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready.**” How does she make herself ready? The Bride has become **righteous**, by **repenting** and becoming a **saint** in one of “**the seven churches**” or in The 144,000 Israelites group (Verse 8). She has her Bride’s **wedding gown**. The **wedding gown** is her **righteousness** by coming out of Babylon as Christ said in Revelation 18:4. She is of the five wise virgins who kept **growing spiritually** in God’s Holy Spirit. The Bride does not think she **alone** has **the truth** of God. She knew she was to continue coming out of Babylon or false teaching until the very coming of Christ. Elijah also thought **only** he had **the truth**. God had to tell Elijah, in *The Old Testament*, in addition to him, there were seven thousand others He reserved as His. The Churches of God feel they are the only churches, with **the truth**. But the facts are, it is not just one group of people who alone have **the truth**. That is why God tells

**all of His people to come out of Babylon** (Revelation 18:4). Everyone is in **Babylon** (false god and teaching). You must continue to have **spiritual growth!**

In John 14:1-2, Jesus tells you He is going to God to prepare a place for you. *Revelation* is that story. In Christ's "**will**" *The Book of Revelation*, states what God's people, Israel and The Christians must do to **inherit** His "**kingdom.**" It all depends upon **spiritual growth** and not a church's creed of faith. Entering The Kingdom of God is based upon the degree of **spiritual growth** you are able to achieve while living in this Babylonian **system**, (as long as you repent after sinning). This is the **point** of *The Book of Revelation*.

Revelation covers the time period, in prophecy, from Christ's **birth** until God descends and starts **the new heaven and new earth** on this very earth. The Seven Seals covers the entire prophecy. These **seven seals** start from the birth of **the church** on Pentecost until God's "**kingdom**" comes. Revelation 6 reveals the events up to The Seven Trumpets. Revelation covers **the last days**. The Seven Trumpets covers the three and a half years of The Great Tribulation when Jesus **returns** at The Seventh Trumpet and commences The Kingdom of God. Revelation 6:1-11 describes **the first five seals**. These seals represent the time period of Constantine, when Rome took control of The Christian Church of God. It includes the martyrdom, which took place during the dark ages all the way until 1947.

The well-known Four Horses of The Apocalypse takes place beginning with Constantine – The Emperor of Rome. The First Horse was **white**, carried out by Constantine with his horse when he took over **The Roman government**. The Second Horse was **red** and came from the earth. The Third Horse was **black** during

**the time of famine and the black plague.** The Fourth Horse was **pale** and occurs during a time of **war and hunger.**

The Fifth Seal was extremely significant to God's **people.** Israel and growing Christians – both go through persecution and martyrdom. Read *Fox's Book of Martyrs* which brings the persecution of The Jews and Christ up to the end of World War II.

Jesus told His prophecy of these events in Matthew 24:1-8. Christ was asked two questions: First, “when would **the temple of Herod** be destroyed?” This event occurred in 70 A.D. by Titus. Not one stone was left upon another. The second question was “when will be **The Return of Jesus and the end-time** events?” The first question was answered with the fall of **the temple** in 70 A.D. and then Jesus continued world history from 70 A.D. until the completion of the prophecy of The Four Horses in Revelation 6.

First, Christ said Christianity would be taken over by false teaching, paganism **mixed** with Christian teaching. Then, there would be a series of wars between **kingdoms** (large and small wars). Next, there will be **pestilence and famine and earthquakes** in the world. This, Christ said, is the beginning of sorrow and completes the prophecy up to The Fourth Seal. The Fifth Seal was grievous for Israel and the growing Christians who were coming out of Babylon.

The Lamb opens The Fifth Seal (Revelation 6:9-11). There were people under the altar in **the temple.** The altar is the shadow or symbol of martyrdom and fire or **sacrifice.** What happens? These are **spiritually growing Christians and Israelites** coming out of Babylon. They are persecuted and killed by “**the church.**” This includes the time of Genghis Kahn up to World War II including The Holocaust.

When this dispensation is concluded, the martyrs are told to rest until their brothers will be martyred in The Great Tribulation (Revelation 6:11 and Matthew 24:9-13). Then in Matthew 24:14-20 Jesus answers the second question about **the end-times** and His **return**. Finally, Matthew 24:28 shows The First Resurrection, which states where the carcass is, The Battle of Armageddon, where **the eagles** will be gathered. Who are **the eagles**? They are The Christians and The Israelites who are with Christ on Mount Zion, not far from The Valley of Jehoshaphat. How can you know who **the eagles** are? ‘*The Song of Moses*’ in Deuteronomy 32 reveals that Christ is **the rock**, being **the eagle** who carries **the baby eagles** on His **wings** to safety while in **the wilderness** (world). Now, those witnessing *The Gospel* during The Great Tribulation in **the wilderness** (in safety) and those **two witnesses** going into **the tribulation**, after having been martyred, are now **mature** (spiritually grown) **eagles** and are in the first, Barley Harvest, as The Bride of Christ, by Mount Zion, not far from the slaughter at Armageddon.

## Our Present Time

Where is the world at present in the prophecy of The Seven Seals? **Five Seals of Prophecy** are now history. The **Sixth Seal has not been opened** as yet since its prophecy has not occurred. Those living now are in **those times**. **Christians are near the time of The Sixth Seal**. Those **repented Christians** martyred during the dark ages through World War II are asked to rest or sleep “**in death**” until their brothers also have to die for Christ (Revelation 6:10-11).

Then Revelation 6:12 states that when The Sixth Seal is opened and a great earthquake begins to rumble and **the sun becomes black** and **the moon becomes as blood**. This must still come



to pass. Then The Sixth Seal will reveal heavenly disturbances such as when MOUNTAINS, ISLANDS and COASTLANDS are moved and literally changed. **This earthquake** will be the most horrific ever seen by mankind. Perhaps, the recent tsunami is a type of what is to come to pass all over the world. Now you know where you are in prophecy. You are at the beginning of The Sixth Seal since The Fifth Seal has been completed (Matthew 24:9-13). This Sixth Seal is also the prophecy in *The Book of Joel*. Read it.

## The 7th Seal

Revelation 7. Read all of it, as this is the future of those who go through **The Great Tribulation** – The Seventh Seal (Revelation 7:14). Then, as The Seventh Seal is opened, there will be silence in **heaven**. Another angel stood by the altar in **the temple** and he had **incense** which are the **prayers of “the saints.”** These are those martyred in The Great Tribulation with **the faithful witnesses** in safety during this time. It is very important to understand this time period of three and a half years, which is the **duration** of **The Seven Trumpets** (as you will see). Since this is Christ’s **“will”** and **“testament,”** you need to know those coming out of Babylon are God’s **people** (Revelation 18:4). What is required of those Christians and Israelites to be in The First Resurrection of The Barley Harvest? These comprise **The Bride of Christ**. Who are they?

## The Seven Churches

In Revelation 11:1-2, you see only **the court** of Israel is measured, but The Gentile **court** is not measured. Why?

Revelation 7 denotes only 144,000 Israelites coming out of The

Great Tribulation. That is why only **the court** of Israel has been measured. The Gentiles have an **innumerable multitude** which cannot be measured, and therefore, without the set number The Gentiles “**court**” is not known. To answer this question, you only need to know **how many Gentiles** go through The Great Tribulation. That is why *The Book of Revelation* is written **only to the seven churches**. The number for The Israelites is already known but not the number of The Seven Churches of God. Most of them are **not growing spiritually** as they should. Christ informs them what these “**seven churches**” must do, although the number is not revealed:

- 1 **The Ephesian Church** was told by Jesus, if they do not return to their first love, **the true** God and Christ, He will **remove** their **candlestick**. They will not be The Bride or even The Guests at The Wedding. They must be **tested** in **The Great Tribulation**, and come out of Babylon or Christ will **remove** their **candlestick** when He returns (Revelation 2:1-5).
- 2 **Smyrna** will only need to go through The Tribulation for a short time. They have **false apostle teachings** as they are not of the original Jewish Apostles but of Satan. Because of this, they will be tried and tested briefly. Those from Smyrna who come out of Babylon will not have to go into The Lake of Fire to repent. No second death (Revelation 2:8-11).
- 3 **Pergamos** has a problem because this “**Christian church**” accepts pagan teaching and The Doctrine of The Nicolaitanes as well as making a **business** out of God’s “**church**” like Balaam and Balak (Revelation 2:1-17). Notice, if they **repent** of this Babylonish

system, they will be “**a stone**” or “**part of the wall**” in Jerusalem. However, they will not be The Bride.

- 4 **Thyatira** followed Jezebel, which held the pagan doctrine of Baal. However, as they are “**tried**,” their last works are better than when this Church of God started. There are those in this Christian-pagan Church who do not accept Jezebel’s teachings. Those who come out of Babylon will be in The First Resurrection and rule with Christ with a rod of iron (Revelation 2:18-28). Also, **the spiritually growing Christians will be Christ’s Bride**. **Jesus is the bright and morning star as God’s firstborn**. He is the first light of the stars in the morning.
- 5 **Sardis** as God’s **church** is a **social club**. Going to church, giving money, fasting and praying is good enough for them. **Growing spiritually** from one talent to two, five and ten takes too much work and energy. Physical works can never change human nature. They believe being in **the church** and following its days or doctrines is sufficient. When Christ comes, as a thief in the night, they will **not be ready**. They are the **unwise** virgins. A **few** of them grow **spiritually** and will be in The First Resurrection. Those who remain only **satisfied** with **the milk of the truth** must go into **The Lake of Fire** (Revelation 3:1-6).
- 6 **The Philadelphia Church** of God has the **key of David**, A RIGHT HEART AND HAVE CHRIST “IN THEM.” Because of this, they have a **little strength** or Christ “in them.” They are **growing spiritually**.

They have not denied the **real Jesus**, and therefore, will not be tried, but will be able to go into a **place of safety (the rock)** and will not go through The Great Tribulation. Jesus said to The Philadelphians, **“I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown”** (Revelation 3:11). This word “crown” in Greek is not “royalty,” but “having Christ’s banner around their head.” Christ lives “in them.” Their reward will be a **pillar**, Jachin and Boaz, and will enter The Marriage Feast as Christ’s Bride. They will share Christ’s **throne** as He shares His Father’s **throne** (Revelation 3:7-13).

- 7 **The Laodicean Church** is the last of the seven. They have real problems. Pagan teaching is not their sin. It is worse. They are **lukewarm**. They are barely a **witness of the true Christ**. They have made Christianity a religion. It has **rituals** of “**do’s**” and “**don’ts**.” They believe they have to do human works, such as The Letter of The Law. Real change is for you to be as Christ is. Instead, they are self-satisfied with **the limited truth** they have. They are those with **one talent**. They, truly, are **lukewarm**. Jesus will **spit** them out of His mouth when He comes. Why? They do not **grow spiritually** with God’s “**word**” or “**logos**.”

If they were **cold**, as atheists or agnostics, they wouldn’t know better. They would only need a few stripes to wake up. But, since they are satisfied with **their truth as the ONLY truth**, Jesus gives them this advice in Revelation 3:18:

Christ said, **“I counsel thee to buy of me gold.”** How? By going

into The Lake of Fire. Read Luke 12 about this “**church**.” They will burn **until they wake up and repent and grow in spiritual truth** (I Corinthians 3). There you have it – *Revelation* prophesies Christ’s “will.” Who will **inherit “the kingdom”** as a Bride or a Witness, Usher, Bridesmaids or Guest? These are those who will be written in *The Marriage Registry*. What is *The Marriage Registry*?

## Revelation 21

“**Be glad and rejoice.**” Why? The Marriage of The Lamb – The Feast, is ready and The Bride has made herself ready (Revelation 19:7-9). Verse 9 tells you, “**Blessed [happy] are they which are called [Israel and Gentiles] unto the marriage supper of the Lamb.**” Who is **called** to this **marriage supper**? New Jerusalem is The Bride adorned (righteousness) for **her husband** (Revelation 21:2). The Bride is there, but who gets to attend? **The gates** to New Jerusalem will always be **opened**. Who can enter? (Revelation 21:25-27) Verse 27 states, “**there shall in no wise enter into it [New Jerusalem] anything that defiles.**” *The Marriage Registry* allows only **those written** in *The Lamb’s Book of Life*. This is Christ’s *Marriage Registry* – *The Book of Life*!

Then Revelation 22:14 reveals the garment you must wear to enter through **the gates**. You are blessed if you **keep** the **sayings** of **this** prophecy – Christ’s “**will**” in *The Book of Revelation*. Revelation 22:14 says only those will be blessed who eat of The **Tree of Life** if they keep God’s “**commandments**.” Those **left out** or without **the city** are those thrown into The Lake of Fire. *The Book of Life* is *The Lamb’s Marriage Registry*. Now, you must learn what Christ requires of you, so you can enter **the city** to eat of The Tree of Life!

## CHAPTER 4

# WHO IS THE BEAST?

**The beast is known in the Christian world as a hideous creature with seven heads and ten horns. Every imaginable horrendous image has been drawn to depict this beast. Who or what is this monster? Surprisingly, the true biblical answer reveals prophetically a time when the “times of The Gentiles” will be fulfilled and Christ returns. You will be amazed to discover this beast began during The Day of Nebuchadnezzar and The Babylonian Empire. This beast ends with The Return of Christ as revealed in The Book of Revelation.**

Many have attempted to explain exactly who and what the beast is in *The Book of Revelation*. Some say it is Rome or The European Common Market. On and on it goes, compounding one assumption after another. The common mistake made by most is to isolate **the time period** referring only to **the end-time**. Part of the problem exists because of an error in understanding **the last days**. You may be surprised to find **the last days** started thousands of years ago.

### A Beast

Biblically, *The Bible* refers to **someone** or **something** that is **beast-like** and very evil. A beast is carnivorous or is driven by the desire to survive at any cost. Even wild animals, such as lions or tigers, once fully fed, are generally not interested in devour-

ing more animals. In fact, after animals have eaten, they can be quite gentle. A carnivorous beast, once driven by hunger, stops at nothing to be able to eat. **Survival of the fittest comes first** and humans, themselves, often act the same way. *The Bible* refers to such behavior as carnal or beast-like (I Corinthians 3:1).

## Revelation's Beast

The Apostle John had a vision (Revelation 13:1-2). He could have been standing on the sand or some rocks on a beach looking out to the sea. What was he looking at? He saw, rising out of the sea a hideous **beast**, which had **seven heads** and **ten horns**, with the name of "**blasphemy**" upon the heads. **Blasphemy** denotes deception and falsehood in claiming to be something it is not. This beast "**was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon [or Satan] gave him his power**" (or authority to this beast). The **entire world** worships this beast (Verses 3 and 4). This worship by the world, which the world has given power to the beast, lasts for three and a half years (Revelation 13:5). This beast has been given a number, **666** (Revelation 13:18). If you have wisdom, you will discern this beast and its number. (Chapter 5, '*Mark of The Beast*,' goes into further details). Revelation 17:9-18 states he who has wisdom can know the seven heads are **seven mountains** or **governments**. The **ten horns** are **ten kings** or **world rulers** in the future, which shall make war against Christ when He comes. The beast coming from the waters or the sea represents **peoples, nations** and **languages** – a worldwide system. Who is this **future beast**, which emerges from the world and is ruled by Satan?

## The Last Days

When do **the last days** literally start? What are the **last days**?

You will find the answer in *The Books of Daniel and Revelation*. Daniel, a **righteous** Prophet of God, is asked to interpret a dream that Nebuchadnezzar, King of The Babylonian Empire had. It was a horrific dream, which loomed as a **huge image**. This standing image had a head of **gold**, his breast and arms of **silver**, the belly and thighs of **brass**, his legs of **iron**, his feet were part iron and part clay (Daniel 2:31-33).

In Daniel 2:28, Daniel tells The King that only God in **heaven**, reveals secrets and God is letting Nebuchadnezzar know what is going to happen in the latter or **last days**. Daniel said that God was going to let him see the future – beginning with Nebuchadnezzar’s day until Christ’s **return** (Daniel 2:29). When do these latter or **last days** start? Remember, this image of Nebuchadnezzar’s dream represents **the future** from King Nebuchadnezzar’s time until Jesus establishes The Kingdom of God on earth. It is when Christ destroys all the human kingdoms of the world. After which, only God’s “**kingdom**” will continue forever.

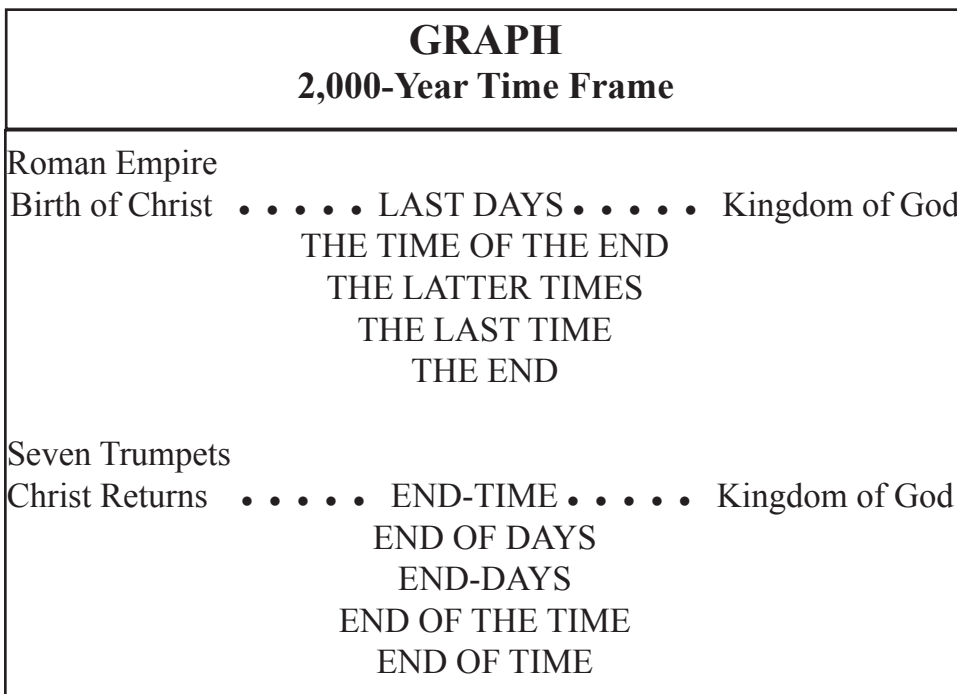
The Apostle Paul knew **the last days** and **the end-time** do not necessarily refer to **the same period**. Paul said in these **last days**, God speaks to you through His Son, Jesus (Hebrews 1:2). Paul is letting you know **the last days** began when Christ **first** came. The English word “end” is “*eschatos*” in Greek and means “**the farthest point**.” The English word “eschatology,” means “the study of the last days.” Paul said “the last days” **started** when Christ was born. Peter confirmed **the last time** or **the last days** started when Jesus was born (I Peter 1:20). John also said, it was the **last time** or **last days**. In Peter and John, the words in English, “end days” are translated “times” and in the Greek, it is “*eschator*” which is also interpreted “days” or “**last days**.” So, Paul, Peter and John all knew they were in **the last days** starting with Jesus at His **birth**. Why do **the last days** begin at the time of Christ’s



**birth** and not at **the end-time**, when God’s “**kingdom**” becomes “**the kingdom**” of this world?

## End-Times

At the end of *The Book of Daniel*, God tells Nebuchadnezzar he will die or go to his rest and stand in his lot (resurrection) at **the end of the days** or **the end-time**. The Hebrew word for “**end**” is “*qets*.” In Hebrew, it carries the meaning of “extremity,” “utmost,” or “border.” Truly “**the end-time**” or “**end of days**.” You find a big difference between **the last days** and **the end of days**. Both do not refer to the same period of time in history or prophecy. Why the difference?



## The Image And The Beast

In Daniel 2, the image with its **four parts** constitutes a time

period from Nebuchadnezzar's day until Christ **returns** and establishes The Kingdom of God, which will last forever. From Daniel's time, this image exists until human history ends. **There is no missing period of time.** This horrible image in Nebuchadnezzar's dream relates to all of humanity's future till the very **end-time** (when Christ **returns**). Why is this so significant? Later, you will **biblically** prove this image of Nebuchadnezzar ties directly to the beast prophesied in Revelation 13. Without understanding these Four World Empires in Nebuchadnezzar's dream, you can never know who the beast is in Revelation 13.

## The Four World Empires

Daniel 7 covers **the four beasts**, which came out of the sea. Each beast is different one from the other. The first was like a **lion**; second, like a **bear**; the third like a **leopard**, and the fourth beast was stronger and worse than the preceding three.

This Fourth Beast absorbs all of the former beasts. Who are these beasts? These great beasts are four kings, which shall come from the earth (Daniel 7:17). God's **saints** will take over these four kings or kingdoms and reign over them forever (Verse 18), **just as the dream** in Nebuchadnezzar's image when Christ takes over God's "**kingdom.**" These four beasts and the image are **one** and the same. **They cover the world's future.**

Daniel 8 covers another vision which tells you what happens after The Kingdom of Babylon, The Kingdom of Media and Persia takes over. Then, The King of Grecia or Alexander The Great defeats The Medio-Persian Empire (Daniel 8:22). Now, you have three of the four beasts revealed. The first **kingdom** is The Babylonian Kingdom, which is **the head of gold.** **The second king-**

**dom** is The Medio-Persian Kingdom, represented by **the chest and arms of silver**. **The third kingdom of brass** is Alexander's "**kingdom**." The Fourth Beast made of **iron and clay** was The Roman Empire, which absorbed all the other governments. This **fourth kingdom** or The Roman Government occurs in **the latter times** or **the last times** (Daniel 8:23). In Hebrew, the word "latter" denotes "hinder" or "last times." There you have it. "**The last days**" are **the days of The Fourth Kingdom of Rome** during the 2,000-year time-period.

When did **the fourth kingdom** begin? It began during the days of Jesus Christ when He was walking this earth. The Roman Empire existed during the time of Jesus, Peter, John and Paul. This was **the beginning of the last days** – the day of The Fourth Kingdom of Rome. You are living in **the last days** just before **the end days**, when Christ **returns**.

Jesus said The Gentiles would control Jerusalem until **the time** of The Gentiles is fulfilled (Luke 21:24). What is **the time** of The Gentiles? Christ said this **Gentile "rule"** ends immediately when they see Jesus returning in the clouds (Luke 21:27). Now, you have it. **The last days** started with The Roman Empire at the birth of Christ and lasts until **Jesus' return** to establish God's "**kingdom**." This Roman system is to exist until **the end-time** or **end of days** just before Christ **returns** and establishes The Kingdom of God. The **Gentile rule** ends in Jerusalem, which is at **the end-days** and began at **the end-time** frame of **the last days**. The **time of The Gentiles** ends when Christ **returns** in the clouds. *The Gospel* will have been preached to the world (Revelation 14:6).

### **At The Time Of The End Till The End-Times**

The Fourth Beast Empire begins with the expression "**at the time**

**of the end,”** the 2,000-year time-frame. The major mistake most commentators make is to take **at the time of the end** and regard it the same as **the end of the time** when Christ **returns**. **The end** should be applied to the transition from **the third kingdom**, which was Greece, to **the fourth kingdom**, which **was and still is** The Roman Empire system, which begins to incorporate the whole world. The legs on the composite beast of Daniel 2 never ceases to exist until “**the stone cut out of the mountain without hands**,” smashes those ten toes. It is then, **the kingdoms of this world cease to exist** and Jesus brings The Kingdom of God to this earth (end-days).

The Roman Empire, which is dominating the old world, continues to spread its abomination until it covers the whole world. The two legs of the composite beast begins **the time of the end** (the 2,000-year period) and ends with the **end of the time** (Christ’s **return**) of human rule. When the commentaries on *The Book of Daniel* make at **the time of the end** or **last days** (the 2,000-year period) **the same as the end of the time** (Christ’s **return**), they confuse the long history of The Roman Empire system. This in turn interrupts the understanding of *The Book of Revelation*, which follows the same pattern as *The Book of Daniel*. Where the historical **ful-filled prophecy** ends and the events of the **end-time** begin is left in utter confusion. Once the **last days begin** with the emergence of “**the fourth empire**” more than two thousand years occupy the space between **the time of the end**, until the **end of the time** or **end-days** when Christ **returns**. The Fourth Empire begins with the rise of Julius Caesar. After the murder of Julius Caesar his name became a title for the Emperors who ruled in his name.

Julius Caesar received a deadly wound in 44 B.C., after ruling from 49 B.C. This name or title “Caesar” comes from the Hebrew word “sar” or “Prince of Princes” – “the top ruler of the world.”

## From Daniel To The Book Of Revelation

A 120-year period of **fulfilled prophecy** occurs from 49 B.C. when Julius Caesar takes control of The Roman Empire until 70 A.D., when **the second temple** in Jerusalem lay in smoldering ruins. When correctly discerned through historical evidence, the predictions in Daniel 7, of the ten + 1 kings, end with The Roman King, **Vespasian** as “**the seventh head,**” which ends the nation of The Jews in 70 A.D. What does **not** end is **the fourth empire** that extends from its beginning in 49 B.C. with Julius Caesar. While Julius Caesar begins **the biblical “fourth empire”** of Daniel, it continues the long historical periods in history until the prophesied events that are to occur when The Son of Man comes “in the clouds.” Unless you understand the difference between **the last days – the time of the end**, the 2,000-year period, which begins with Julius Caesar, you will fail to read the signs in the events at **the end of the times** (end-days); you will be blinded to the coming of The Son of Man “in the clouds.” **Christ will not come in secret.**

From the end of The Jewish Nation in 70 A.D. both *The Book of Daniel* and *The Book of Revelation* reveals **the end of the time** (Christ’s **return**) of man’s rule, and the establishment of The Kingdom of God upon the earth. At that time, Gentile **rule** ends and *The Gospel* is preached to the world (II Thessalonians 2). Although most of the prophetic historical events of Daniel 7, the two legs of the composite beast of Daniel 2 have already extended more than two thousand years. (Western Empire of Rome and The Eastern Empire of Rome under Constantine).

*The Book of Daniel* has been likened to looking at several mountain peaks in a row. The events represent the significant events, each as a mountain summit. What is not always disclosed in the

narratives of Daniel is the distance between the mountain peaks. What can be said for *The Book of Daniel* applies as well to *The Book of Revelation*. From prophecies that have either had partial fulfillment of completed history, to the future events must be discerned through **the scriptural** texts and the future events themselves. At **the time of the end**, beginning **the end** of “**the third beast kingdom**” and the emergence of “**the fourth beast**” is a 33-year period from 3 - 2 B.C., the **birth, life, death and resurrection** of Jesus Christ.

From the rise of Julius Caesar (49 B.C.) to the birth of Jesus was 47 years and from the birth of Jesus to His death and resurrection – 33 years. From His death to the desolations of Jerusalem and **the second temple** was just 6 months shy of 40 years. The total number of years for the emergence of the head Julius Caesar to the desolation was 120 years. Jesus said as in the days of Noah a **120-year period** was allotted for **repentance** and then destruction came (Matthew 24:36-39). The fact that Jesus connected these **scriptures** to the coming of The Son of Man “**in the clouds**,” you must understand that even if you had a 120-year period as in the days of Noah, there is a long gap of time between the 70 A.D. desolations and **the end-times**, with The Return of Christ. It is as though the mountain itself **peaks** again. From the 120-year period of time that ended in 70 A.D., to the coming of The Son of Man in the clouds has already been nearly 2,000 years. This means you must find the historical events that fulfilled this prophecy before you can separate these events from those in **the end-times**, just before The Son of Man comes in the cloud. Believe it or not **bible scholars** have ended prophecy that found fulfillment in historical events, TWO CENTURIES TOO SOON! In Daniel 11:35, scholars have closed **fulfilled prophecy** with the exploits of Antiochus Epiphanes and his overthrow by The Hasmonaean Family. These historical facts tell a different story, as the rush to fulfill the pro-

phetic Word of God. The mountain peak of the significance of 70 A.D., the time gap before The Son of Man appears in the cloud to that last mountain peak **the end-times**, are revealed by the significant events. **The end-times** (Christ's **return**) meaning the closing of the times of The Gentiles, are in Daniel 2. One Gentile Kingdom after another swallowing up the preceding – until the first three kingdoms became part of The Fourth Kingdom of Rome. From the beginning of *The Book of Daniel* to the ending in Chapter 12, The Fourth Empire never ceases to exist until “**the stone cut out of the mountains**” smashes the toes and causes all of The Roman Empire to collapse upon itself (Daniel 2:45).

## **The Rise And Fall Of Empires**

The Babylonian Empire began the times of The Gentiles when The Jewish **people** were carried out of the land of Judea in three deportations. The first occurred in 605 B.C. when Daniel was carried to Babylon. The second invasion was 597 B.C. and lastly 586 B.C. when The Babylonians destroyed The City of Jerusalem and **the temple**. “**As kingdoms come**” and “**kingdoms go,**” the powerful Persians along with The Medes, who had merged under The Great King Cyrus, defeated The Babylonians, to establish themselves as **the world power**.

What lies ahead and perhaps nearer than many might suppose, is the formation of the ten toes into a **global configuration**. What began in one part of the old world – The Roman Empire system – has insidiously and almost unnoticed spread and crept in to **encompass the whole world**.

Jerusalem shall be trodden down by The Gentiles, until “**the times of The Gentiles are fulfilled**” (End of their rule) (Luke 21:24). Even though there is The State of Israel in the modern world, The

Gentiles continue to tread down Jerusalem. When will “**the times of The Gentiles**” end and cease to tread down Jerusalem? When the stone cut out of the mountain in Daniel 2, which is The Son of Man coming in the clouds when **the end of time**, brings Jesus and The Kingdom of God to this earth. What are the events that usher in the fulfillment of the two legs and ten toes of Daniel 2? What are the events in *The Book of Revelation*, which have direct relevance to Daniel 2? These explanations will be explained later.

The main purpose in “**the continuing story**” is to correlate history with fulfilled prophecy. The Medes and Persians under Cyrus, The Great overcame and swallowed up The Babylonian Empire. Cyrus had married a daughter from The Mede **royal lineage** and The Medes were incorporated into The Persian Empire. This is how it became The Medo-Persians as **the second beast empire** in *The Book of Daniel*.

## **The Medo-Persian Empire**

Daniel 11:1-2 does not cover the entire Persian reign. *The Book of Daniel* is about his people and the nations. Only the important highlights are covered. “**And now will I shew thee the truth. Behold, there shall stand up yet three kings in Persia; and the fourth shall be far richer than they all: and by his strength through his riches he shall stir up all against the realm of Grecia.**”

The translators broke up the story between Chapter 10 and Chapter 11 by making a chapter break in the middle of a subject when the narrative should not have ended until the thought was completed. The historical time period is that of Darius, The Mede. What becomes important from the historical perspective is when Xerxes, The King who became the **husband of Esther**. It was



Xerxes who was richer than all the others, from the accumulation of wealth from the pillage of many nations. Xerxes made an effort to take The Kingdom of Greece and though his advance on Greece failed, it was never forgotten. Although other kings followed Xerxes, The Persian Empire was in rapid decline. This leads directly into The Fourth Empire of Alexander, The Great – the mighty king who advances to swallow up the nations before him. So great were the exploits of Alexander, The Great, the head of the future Roman Empire sought to follow his example. At the young age of 33 Alexander was dead and **the kingdom** he established was split among **four of his generals**.

Only two of the four become important in relation to the people of Daniel, The Jews. The General of Alexander – Seleucus I Nicator occupied the territory **north** of Jerusalem in Syria. Out of Egypt, was Ptolemy I Soter as The King of the **South**. In Daniel 11:5-35 are the wars between The Seleucids Kings of The North and The Ptolemy Kings from The South.

The worst of them all was Antiochus IV Epiphanes in Daniel 11:21-31, when he was defeated by the sons of Mattathias – later called The Maccabees. The downfall of the kingdom established by Alexander, The Great, became the rise of “**the fourth kingdom**” which never ceases to exist in *The Book of Daniel* until the stone cut out of the mountain crushes the toes, and causes the entire historical beast to fall to the ground. This will be explained later since **the stone kingdom** is yet for a time in the future.

## The Rise Of Rome

You can pick up the historical fulfillment and the rise of The Roman Empire in Daniel 7. Commentaries on *The Book of Daniel* are not as helpful as you would like them to be. The most misun-

derstood concept of all commentaries on prophecy is where they determined – at **the time of the end** being **the end of the time** of The Gentiles. The failure to understand – “the time of the end” (last days) is not the same as **the end-times** (end-days). There is a wide time-span between **the time of the end** – and **the end-times**. The two legs and ten toes on the metallic beast image set up by Nebuchadnezzar should not be confused with the ten + 1 kings of the historical **fourth empire** (Hosea 1).

The ten + 1 “Kings of Daniel 7” have become history and their reign is from 49 B.C. to 74 A.D. **the time of the end** the 2,000-year period of **The Nation of Judah** (Hosea 1). From this historical fulfillment, time jumps ahead to when The Roman Empire is transformed. But for now, you should concentrate on the historical Roman Empire where Judah was given a 120-year period as in the days of Noah. *The Bible* speaks of “Kings” but no “Emperors.” Daniel 7 speaks of kings – “ten kings” were to arise. Then in the midst of these kings comes up **a little horn** “king.” He is different from the first kings.

In Daniel 7, Daniel is having a dream, where visions pass through his mind. Daniel writes down the substance of those visions. What troubled Daniel most was the terrifying “**fourth beast**.” Daniel wanted to know the true meaning of “**the fourth beast**” with its iron teeth and bronze claws – which was different from all the others, and most terrifying, crushing and devouring its victims and trampled whatever was left (Daniel 7:19). The Jews were given into the hands of the little horn (the 11<sup>th</sup> king) under whose authority Jerusalem and **the great second temple** were destroyed. Josephus, The Jewish **historian**, furnishes all the details in **The War of The Jews**. During the first year of the war the victory went to The Zealots. This was in the year of 66 B.C. But from the spring of 67 A.D. to the fall of 70 A.D., it was all downhill for Judah.

Vespasian, The General (from The South in Egypt) was chosen to put down The Jewish rebellion.

To prevent attack from the backside, Vespasian began his siege in Galilee defeating one city after another. The Roman Kings (or Caesars) came after him, but fell before him in the space of one year. In Daniel 7, the record is that three kings were plucked up by the roots, from before this 11<sup>th</sup> “little horn” king. The “**little horn king**” was put over the entire Roman Empire when those three kings were plucked up from before him. In *Revelation* this king is said to be **the eighth king** but still the **seventh head**. How can this be? If **Vespasian** is historically **the seventh head** after the three plucked up from before him, how can he also be **the eighth king**?

The beginning of **the time of the end** (last-days) was the emergence of **Julius Caesar**, the “**first king**” of The Roman Empire in Daniel 7. **Augustus** was the second king, and the third king was **Tiberius**. Fourth was **Guis**, to be followed by the fifth – **Claudius**. The **sixth was Nero** at the time of John recorded in *The Book of Revelation*. The three kings which were plucked up by the roots were: (1) Galbo (2) Otho and (3) Vilellius; all came and fell before Vespasian. The three plucked up by the **roots** means **although they were; they are no more** and **Vespasian** becomes **the seventh king of the historical beast**.

What perhaps is more than a coincidence is when Vespasian began to besiege Judah in the spring of 67 A.D., (exactly two periods of three and one half years), making the war of The Jews a **seven-year war**. From the spring of 67 A.D. to the fall of 70 (three and one-half-years), The City of Jerusalem and **the second temple** lay in smoldering ruins. A remaining three and one-half-years were needed to end the war of Jews in taking of the last strong hold of

**Masada.** Is there a connection to the last seventieth week of **the seventy-week prophecy** in Daniel 9?

A certain amount of prophecy has been fulfilled beginning at **the time of the end** (2,000-year period). **The Roman Empire swallowed up The Gentile Church** and made it subject to **The Emperor** or **Constantine, The Great** (as a false prophet). The change in The Roman Empire, which began to be ruled from Constantinople, eventually split into The Orthodox of The East and Catholicism in Rome. These two Christian groups were forced to accept all **pagan teachings** (which were changed to Christian names) from Emperor Constantine at The Council of Nicea in 325 A.D. When the two legs appeared, one in The East and the other in The West, the two legs on the image in Daniel 2 began to emerge.

These are The Western and Eastern “**two legs**” in Daniel’s Image of The Roman Empire. Although the beast changed its form, it is prophesied to exist until the ten toes are crushed which causes the image to fall. Then, The Kingdom of God replaces it forever and ever. To understand the chronology of the beast and its part in ending The Nation of Judah, the desolation of **the second temple**, and the destruction of Jerusalem in 70 A.D., you must study *The Gospel of Luke*.

## **Luke’s Gospel And The Olivet Prophecies**

Luke, the traveling partner of The Apostle Paul, observes the need to compose a correct chronology of the things that have been fulfilled. Luke has carefully analyzed those things which occurred – the miracles performed, and the words spoken by Jesus during His historical ministry. Jesus and His Disciples are teaching in **the temple** (Luke 21). In departing from **the temple**, The Disciples were remarking how **the temple** was adorned with beautiful

stones. At which time, Jesus follows with a shocking statement, **“As for these things which ye behold, the days will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down”** (Verse 6).

Pay careful attention to what Luke records. Since two questions were asked by The Disciples, each question relates to **two different events**. The first question is when will these things be, and the second question, what will be the sign when these things shall come to pass? **The destruction and desolation of “the temple” will be so great that not one stone will be left upon another.** The Disciples were wondering when the destruction to **the temple** would occur. Josephus, The Jewish historian, has carefully recorded the historical desolations of 70 A.D., in his *War of The Jews*.

The general and crown prince, firstborn son of Vespasian, was assigned to bring Jerusalem into obedience under Rome. The siege began by Vespasian in upper Galilee when he took one city after another. With the death of Nero, three more kings stood up claiming the crown. The Legions in The East went over to Vespasian and the three kings fell before him, all in a one-year period. Vespasian returned to Rome to stabilize the government while Titus with The Eastern Legions came from Egypt to besiege the Jerusalem stronghold. From the spring of 67 A.D. when Vespasian began to besiege Judah to the fall of 70 A.D. (a three and one-half-year period), sacrifices had ceased as **the temple** lay in smoldering ruins.

Luke describes this fulfillment after The Disciples asked Jesus these questions. In order to retrieve the gold that had melted from the burning temple (70 A.D.), the very foundational stones were toppled. Amazingly, what Jesus had predicted nearly 40 years be-

fore, came to pass in the fall of 70 A.D. As Jesus predicted, not one stone was left upon another. In Luke 21:24, the preceding verses are those events, which occurred from 67 to 70 A.D.

Remember to always discern the difference between at **the time of the end** (2,000-year period), from those predicted for **end-times**, at Christ's **return**, otherwise you cannot separate the two predicted events. Luke in Chapter 21:24, points back to the desolations of the **temple** and The City of Jerusalem. The term at **the time of the end** (2,000-year period) is split between the historical and the future, which must be termed as **the end-times (when The Son of Man returns in the clouds)** (Verse 24). If you mix the two separate events, the one ending in 70 A.D., relating to the geographical locations of Galilee and Judah, you will miss **the global tribulation**. Luke 21:24 gives the correct chronology of what came to pass and what in **the end-times** is yet to be fulfilled. This verse, also, separates at **the time of the end** of The Jewish Nation, from those events just prior to **The Return** of The Son of Man.

**“And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem will be trodden down of The Gentiles, until the times of The Gentiles be fulfilled”** (Luke 21:24). Not only has The Nation of Judah come to its end, **the temple** was destroyed; Jerusalem is laid waste. From this point, The Gentiles will tread down Jerusalem until Christ **returns**. How long shall The Gentiles tread down Jerusalem? Luke tells you **until the times of The Gentiles be fulfilled**. This is **THE END** of **“the fourth beast”** when Christ **returns**. When will that be? When the stone cut out of the mountain without hands crushes the nations – the whole Roman **“system.”** When the times of The Gentiles begin to come to their end, Luke 21:24-25 leaves the historical fulfillment at **the time of the end**, (the 2,000-year

period) meaning **the end of The Nation of Judah**.

## **The Times Of The Gentiles To The End-Times**

Read carefully the transition from at **the time of the end** (the 2,000-year period) of The Nation of Judah, to the global Great Tribulation to come upon the nations. “**And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring**” (Luke 21:25). This is during The Sixth Seal (Revelation 6:12). “**Men’s hearts failing them for fear, and looking after those things which are coming upon the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken**” (Luke 21:26). Luke sets straight the chronology from those things that have come to pass, to those things, **yet, for a future time**. Luke takes you from the geographical tribulation upon Judah, to the global tribulation upon the nations. Luke gives the answers to the two questions asked by The Disciples of Jesus. **The second temple** is no more – even to such desolations that one stone has not been left upon another. From **the time of the end** the 2,000-year period beginning with “**the fourth empire**” in Daniel, when **the fourth empire** has covertly taken its system and extended it to global proportions, to **the end-times** (Christ returning). Luke records the signs of this global tribulation. What are those signs that precede The Son of Man coming in the clouds? To understand those things relating to **the end-times**, turn to *The Book of Revelation* since it continues from *The Book of Daniel*.

## **The Same Beast**

Revelation 13:1 reveals this beast, rising out of the sea, having **seven heads** and **ten horns** and each horn has **ten crowns**. Verse 2 states this beast was like a **leopard**, feet of a **bear**, mouth of a

**lion** and the **dragon** or **Satan** controls these governments. Who is this beast? Remember, Satan is “**the god**” of **this world**. Revelation 17:8-16 prophesies this beast coming out of the sea (Mediterranean) constitutes many nations and languages of **the whole world**. The seven heads are seven kings, five are fallen, and **one is** (when John wrote *The Book of Revelation*), and the other **is yet** to come. When the **seventh comes**, he continues only a **short time**. The beast finally has an **eighth head** and is of “**the seventh**.”

The **seven heads** are **all Roman Emperors** who think they are “gods.” Remember, Daniel tells you God sets up the **basest** of **men** (and they think they are God), and as Nebuchadnezzar learned, only God in **heaven** actually gives men or women their rulership. These kings **are not God!** When they think they are God, then He removes them like Belshazzar in Daniel 5. That is why only Nebuchadnezzar, tried by God, is the head of **gold**. All the others are inferior and each deteriorates to silver, brass and finally, to iron or The Roman Empire. The **emperors** in this Roman Empire, who think they are God, are removed. These are the **seven heads** of the beast – the last Gentile beast.

Some churches believe these heads are represented by future rulers such as Charlemagne, Napoleon and Hitler. This is preposterous. The **seventh head** lasts only a **short time after the sixth**, and they all refer directly to The Roman Government of John’s time. The **sixth head exists** while John is writing *The Book of Revelation*. The **seventh head** comes **shortly** after the **sixth head**. All **seven heads** must be Roman Emperors and not some future European leaders. Stick to **The Scriptures** and not what mankind dreams up in their minds.

Who does this beast look like? Is it exactly like another beast? Yes, it is. In Daniel 7:1-18, **four great beasts** come out of the sea



(world) just as the beast in *Revelation*. Also, these **four beasts** look like a **lion, bear** and a **leopard**. Again, just like the beast in *Revelation*. Verse 8 states a little horn comes along and devours the previous three which leaves only “**the fourth beast**” or The Roman Empire.

One of **the angels** is asked the interpretation of the four beasts (Daniel 7:16-26). The interpretation reveals this fourth beast (Rome), devours the entire world. This fourth beast speaks **great words** against God and claims to be God and represents God’s government on earth. Constantine claimed he was The 13<sup>th</sup> Apostle after The Twelve Apostles and declared Rome was God’s “**kingdom**.” This government persecutes **true** Christians for three and a half years or The Great Tribulation. These are God’s **two witnesses** (Revelation 7 and 11) going into The Great Tribulation, Israel (Church in Wilderness) and Gentiles (Church of God) (Revelation 14).

This **fourth beast** uproots three of the kings of the ten which leaves seven (Daniel 7:24). These four beasts with only the fourth remaining, is the **same** beast which also comes out of the seas (world). What is left? Seven horns (governments) and seven kings just like the beast in Revelation 13. The Revelation 13 beast is the same beast in Daniel 7 and continues as the seven heads of The Roman Empire and not any future European or world rulers. *The Bible* and history combined have now proved who the beast is – The Fourth World Ruling Empire – The Roman Empire. What happens to it?

## The Image

This **fourth beast** of Daniel is the last ruling Gentile Kingdom, although still ruling **during The Great Tribulation** for forty-

two months or three and a half years (Revelation 13:5-8). How does this happen? The Roman Empire ceased to exist hundreds of years ago. The **two little horns** answer the question. These little horns get the whole world to worship The Roman Empire's **image** or **system**.

## The Two Horns

When horns are mentioned in *The Bible*, they symbolize a government, although not necessarily a nation. In this case, it is a religious government. Revelation 11:9-12 declares anyone who has **ears** and is willing to **listen** to **the truth** will know who this **religious government** is.

Then, another beast comes out of the earth and not out of the sea like the other beast (Verse 11). This government is human, out of the earth (like Adam) and claims to be God's "**kingdom**" on earth. It also has **two horns** or two religious governments, but both are human and not God's "**true kingdom**" of **rule**. These are of **the seven churches** of Christ and are Christian – **the called-out ones**. Also, it states both of these religious systems speak as **Christians** or as a **lamb**, but Satan deceives them, and they are really led by Satan. Remember, Christ warns The Seven Churches He knows where Satan's seat is. These **two Christian churches** are being deceived by Satan, (Revelation 2 and 3). These **two horns** are Christ's **two churches**. That is why Jesus wants them to come out of this Satanic system, which is mixed both with pagan and Christian teachings. Martin Luther is just an example of one trying to come out of it. This confused Babylon/Christian teachings. Jesus states "**COME OUT OF HER, my people**" (Revelation 18:4). Then Revelation 14:12 prophesies that these two Christian **churches** promote the ideas and teaching of the former, **fourth beast**, The Roman Empire, by Constantine, as Rome's Emperor,

at The Council of Nicea in 325 A.D. Constantine as Rome's Emperor **took over** the **control** of the **two Christian churches** which were The Catholic and Eastern Orthodox. They had **no choice**.

Christianity, from this point on, belonged to Rome, including its Eastern and Western domain. From those two segments, all Christian **churches** have been spawned to this very day. A mixture of **truth** and **paganism**. Babylon prevails in today's world in all **denominations and splits**. All the while, **true** Christians are trying to **grow spiritually** to continue in God's **truth** from His Holy Word, *The Bible*. That is why Christianity and Judaism are **divided** into so **many groups**! Revelation 18:4 warns **growing Christians** to come out of the false teachings of **the fourth beast**, The Roman Empire, which Christ will defeat at His **return**.

These two lamb horns (Christian) are able to do great **false miracles** just like the **magicians** in Pharaoh's day with Moses (Revelation 13:13-18). God's "**two witnesses**," **The 144,000 Israelites** and **the innumerable Gentiles** (who are Christians growing **spiritually**) are praying for God's help. God hears their prayers and sends **The Seven Trumpets** (as in Jericho) to protect them while witnessing **the truth** (Revelation 11:5-6). These two lamb horns will claim they are God's "**kingdom**" on earth and say The Seven Trumpets of God are because of them. They will really **believe it is the truth** because **Satan** is allowed to deceive "**the Christian churches**." Remember "the tares" of Satan are standing along with God's "wheat."

The Roman Empire continues even though the physical Roman government ended hundreds of years ago (Revelation 13:15-18). These verses prophesy these **two lambs (world Christianity)** "part true" – "part false." **The called-out ones** (God's **churches**) are those who are **fooled by Satan believing they have "the**

**truth” and promote the world to worship** the beast of The Roman Empire as **an image**. But Christ **returns** and destroys this beast which will have ten kings or **the ten world rulers** from **all nations** to fight Him.

As in the past, today’s Christianity has begun more wars in the name of religion than for any other reason and will continue to do so until The Return of Jesus. Christianity and its **mixed religion** of **truth, lies, good** and **evil** will continue until Jesus **returns** with God’s **kingdom**. Christianity will promote the **image** or the system of The Roman Government until **the end of the time of The Gentiles!**

## Summary

It is this beast by the continuance of its **image** or system, which exists until **the end** when Christ defeats and smashes the ten toes or final ten kings of **all** nations in Daniel’s great image (Daniel 2). The Seven Christian Churches in Revelation 2 and 3, along with Israel as the other natural olive tree, will be invited to The Wedding Feast of The Groom (Christ).

This was fully explained in Chapter 3, ‘*The Marriage Registry*.’ Remember, Revelation 18:4 announced that all **Israelites and The Seven Churches** should “**come out of her, my people**.” Out of what? Out of Babylon! As long as you believe you are in **the only “true church,”** you **cannot grow spiritually!** Why? Because **everyone is in Babylon** and everyone is to come out of her! Satan has mixed his “tares” (false doctrines) with “the wheat” (Christians). All Christians and Israel, God’s **two witnesses**, are commanded to come out of this Babylonian **system**. **ONLY GOD’S WORD, THE BIBLE HAS GOD’S TRUTH AND IS THE ONLY MEANS TO SPIRITUAL GROWTH.**

## CHAPTER 5

### MARK OF THE BEAST

**Much has been biblically written about The Mark of The Beast and the need for all Christianity, including the rest of humanity, to avoid receiving it. Why? God is going to vent out His wrath upon all who possess it. Is it a literal mark? To zero in on the identity of this mark, everything from one's social security number in the U.S.A. to The United Nations has been identified as The Mark of The Beast. On it goes with continuing speculation. Read the biblical truth and how you have been deceived by Satan.**

*The Book of Revelation* seems so mysterious. However, once **its purpose** and storyline is understood, *The Great Book* reveals a great blessing to the entire world. The Apostle John is told to seal this *Book of Prophecy*. He is told that in the future he must prophesy to all the world what is in *The Book* (Revelation 10:4). However, he is also told to eat *The Book*, which would be **sweet** in his mouth, but **bitter** when it reaches his stomach (Revelation 10:8-11). Why?

John finds it is **sweet** in his mouth because Christ is coming to restore God's **kingdom**, which makes it feel very **sweet** as it is tasted (Revelation 11:15). But, it is also God's **time of wrath** upon the unrepentant world (Verse 18).

Obviously, this is **the bitterness** to come in John's stomach. Who

is to receive **the wrath** of God's anger and who will be **SAVED** from God's wrath?

This is the terrifying **mark of the beast**. Biblically, a satanic **mark** is to be placed upon the people who follow Satan's way in *The Book of Revelation* (Revelation 16:2). God pours out His vial of wrath at the end-time (Christ's **return**), upon all the world who possess **this mark**.

Many in the Christian world try to define this mark. At all costs, this **mark** is to be avoided by Christians, as well as Israel, God's people (Revelation 18:4). What is The Mark of The Beast? Let *The Scriptures* do the interpreting and not the dreamed-up thoughts of mankind.

## At The Beginning

What is the genesis of this **mark**? When did it begin? Has this **mark** been around and no one really is aware of it? Remember, this **mark** is Satanic. It is the devil's system, which manifests itself at **the end-time** as prevailing throughout the entire known world, just before The Return of The Messiah or Christ.

## A Stamp

There are those who believe it is a physical symbol such as the social security number or a Cain "**mark**." Why? Because Revelation 13:16-18 states no one will be able to buy or sell during that time. Making a living will be difficult and that alone will make life difficult. Will it be a physical sign or stamp on a person which will be the only way to allow them to make a living? For a true **biblical definition**, the Greek word "*charagma*" signifies "a scratch" or "etching." It is like a sculptured figure. This word

correlates to “char ax,” “a stake,” that is, “a military mound for protection in a siege or attack.” It is “a figure” or “resemblance of something,” like an “idol” or “eikon.” **It is not a physical mark placed or carried by anyone.** It resembles another image, but what image or likeness is it? It is those who worship the image of the beast (Revelations 14:11). Whose image is it? It is **the dragon** or Satan, who gives power to this beast (Revelation 13:4). This image of the beast is of Satan, the devil. Obviously, those with **the mark of the beast**, worship Satan and his system. What is Satan’s system that the world worships and follows? The answers were given 6,000 years ago in The Garden of Eden.

### **Where The Mark Started**

After Adam and Eve disobeyed God by eating The Tree of Good and Evil – God said they would die. What did Satan, as the dragon and the serpent (snake), say the benefit of eating the forbidden fruit would give Adam and Eve? Satan said, “**For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil**” (Genesis 3:5). There it is. Satan said to follow his advice, eat the fruit and they would be **their own god**. They would be totally free and could decide for themselves what was **right** or **wrong**. Wow!

Satan’s system never includes God or His Holy Spirit (The Tree of Life). Just as Satan is **the god of this world** with his own ideas of right and wrong, allowing each to do what seems right in his own eyes. That is Satan’s system. Total liberty or freedom to do any combination of **good** and **bad**, but without “**the true**” God **involved**. It is Satan’s form of democracy without God. Paul said God is the only way to real liberty or total freedom (Romans 8:21). Without God, you have bondage. When you become one of **God’s “children,”** you then are delivered from Satanic bondage.

True Democracy or freedom can only come to pass when God is involved! This is a dichotomy, Satan's way is **without God**. Satan, and each follower, is then his or her own master or their own "little god." God's way is liberty or freedom with only **One God**, The Father. That is why God is opposed to idolatry because without God, there can be no **life**, only **death**. Satan is the god of the dead and "**the true**" God is The God of The Living. Life can only come from **life** and only The True God has **life**. When you have more than The "**one true**" God, determining right from wrong, you will find it only causes confusion or Babylon. Satan's system was spawned in The Garden of Eden and since Satan is **the god of this world**, this system mushrooms and infects the entire world before Christ's **return**. This Satanic system, **prophetically** and **scripturally proved**, becomes **The Mark of The Beast**.

## **Inheritance Vs. Globalization**

The world today is divided between two groups – the developed nations and the undeveloped nations. The **haves** and **have nots**. Why is it so? Partly, God had fulfilled His **promise** and truly blessed the nations of The Abrahamic Covenant (Genesis 12:3).

The world governments, especially the top six developed economies, come together to resolve the economic disparity. Their solution is globalization or free trade! The answer is a point of economics – stimulating free trade among all the nations. However, each nation protects its personal economic security in any and all trade agreements. Many times this causes hostility if one nation can't compete with another. This human system, by human reason, is based upon competition. One outdoing the other!

When God is involved, competition is not the motivator for a healthy world economy, because **inheritance** is God's answer.



Each nation is given, by God, their territorial right to freely develop and benefit their nation and not compete with each other. Moses said, “**When the Most High divided to the nations** [sons of Adam for] **their inheritance, when he separated sons of Adam he set the bounds of the people according to the number of the children of Israel**” (Deuteronomy 32:8).

Instead of wars, people fighting people, breaking God’s **inheritance**, a world of confusion has developed with horrendous human problems between nations. What is the answer? Satan is the god of this world; his system is having each nation competing against the other, each deciding right from wrong with one dominating over the other. Free trade, **with competition** has been the answer to the world’s problems. God’s **institution of inheritance**, giving everyone a fair share is ignored. Competition with free trade puts each nation against the other. What are **the end-time** results?

## True Liberty

From the very beginning, God and His “**way**” was for everyone to be free and have true liberty. Paul said the entire **CREATION** is waiting for this “**redemption**” or “**liberty**” (Romans 8:22-23). **Democracy** is God’s **way**, but only when God is the standard (Romans 8:21). On the other hand, Satan’s “**way**” totally rejects God as the standard and espouses each person to be his or her “own god.” Satan is the one who wants the whole world to look to him and ignore **the true God**. Satan, himself wants to be **the savior** of the world (Matthew 4:9). Satan wants to be the one worshipped instead of Jesus, The Christ.

## Mystical Numbers

The **apocalyptic** *Book of Revelation* speaks of a mystical beast

coming out of the sea. This beast has seven heads and ten horns. The beast was like a leopard and his feet were as the feet of a bear and his mouth that of a lion; and the dragon gave him his power and his seat along with great authority. Who is this beast and who is the dragon?

The dragon is the **old serpent** (Garden of Eden), called the devil and Satan (Revelation 12:9). The dragon who gives power to this beast is the same Satan who deceived Adam and Eve. Satan has since **deceived** the whole world. Do you get it? The entire human society is deceived. It means the world doesn't even realize they are all **fooled** by what is happening right before their eyes.

As Christians, you, being in the world, may believe **good** will win over **evil**, but **the truth** is, the world is completely in a state of confusion, or Babylon, mixing **good** with **evil**. All who can, are and will be, deceived. Satan or the dragon is mad at God's people and is at war with "**the church**" (Revelation 12:17). This dragon, Satan, is sponsoring this beast and thereby, fighting against God's people. Who is this beast? **THE SEVEN HEADS** are **SEVEN MOUNTAINS** and **THE SEVEN KINGS** are **OVER THESE MOUNTAINS OR GOVERNMENTS** (Revelation 17:9-10). The sea from which the beast with seven heads and ten horns **ORIGINATES, IS THE WORLD**. (Verse 15). Specifically, this sea refers to **THE MEDITERRANEAN SEA** and **THE KINGDOMS SURROUNDING IT**. The **WATERS ARE THE NATIONS OF THE WORLD**, which the dragon – Satan – controls. They are an enemy of God's people – Israel – and will **make war against them**.

Another beast, which comes out of the earth or from the world, has two horns like a **lamb**, but speaks deceit because his words are from the dragon or Satan (Revelation 13:11). This beast, out of the earth, rides the beast which came out of the water. **Out of**

**the earth** means **human**, or of human origin just as Adam was made from the earth. **This beast looks like a Christ, but speaks the words of Satan.** This is a **man-made religion**, not of God. This is **the anti-Christ**, the false worldly religious leader who supports the beast with seven kings or seven governments. All these are an enemy of God's people. THESE HORNS, LIKE A LAMB, ARE THE FALSE PROPHETS (Revelation 16:13). THIS IS THE ANTI-CHRIST.

This false religious leader gives "life" or "belief" to **the image** of the beast with the seven heads. Notice this **anti-Christ** supports an **image** of the beast. What is that image? If you do not worship the image, you will be killed (Revelation 13:15). "Image" in the Greek is "*eikon*" or "representation."

The world must worship what the beast, with the seven heads, stands for. The world will be just like this beast who is directed by Satan, the dragon and worshipped as a God; and if they do not, they will be killed.

THIS ANTI-CHRIST MAKES THE WORLD ACCEPT THIS IMAGE AND PLACES A **MARK** IN THEIR RIGHT **HAND** OR IN THEIR **FOREHEAD** AND NO ONE CAN CONTINUE IN BUSINESS TO EITHER BUY OR SELL.

Generally, the right hand relates to work and making a living and the forehead is one's mind and how they think. What is this **mark of the beast**?

## 666

In Revelation 13:16-18, this image of the beast, and the accepted way of human life, must worship this worldly system of com-

merce and government. The proto-type was Tyre, The Phoenician government of world trade or “**globalization.**” Satan ruled this system with The Prince of Tyre just as it will be again before **The Return of Christ.** In both cases, it is Satan the dragon’s form of government and business (Isaiah 14 and Ezekiel 28).

By worshipping this image the world is not only deceived, but they believe it is God’s **approved government** with His Son, Jesus, ruling, as King of Kings. **In truth, it is the anti-Christ, “the man of sin”** revealed in II Thessalonians 2.

The world will love this false government, which claims to be God’s **government** – The True Kingdom of God. They will worship it. Do you understand the impact of this prophecy? Those, who are alive at the time of this event, will **believe** it is of God. They will worship it. This is a real **warning** to those who only want to do **the true God’s “will.”** What is the sign? How will you know **the truth?** This **anti-Christ** will cause **all the world** to receive a mark in their hand or forehead (Revelation 13:16).

World trade will not be able to function without this mark. If you want to benefit from this system, you must either have this **mark** or **image** and/or the **number** of his **name** (Revelation 13:17-18). What is the number of his name?

If you have wisdom, you will understand what the number of the name means (Verse 18). What is that number? The number is 666! By understanding the number, the wise will define, exactly what this number represents. Since God’s “**word**” is wisdom, let God’s “**word**” define what the number “666” means.

According to Revelation 13:18, the number “666” is the number of a **man** or **humanity.** Why is 666 the number of a man? The

answer is in Genesis 1. Man was created the sixth day of the week (Verses 26 and 31). That is man's day or the number of man. Why then three sixes or 666?

In Matthew 12:38, the “**scribes**” and Pharisees asked Christ to show them a **sign** that He was of **God** and not of **Satan**. That is the exact point of **the mark of the beast**. In Greek, the word is “*semeion*,” “a sign which distinguishes” or “a mark.” That is exactly the point. How does one tell the difference between the real Jesus and Savior (Matthew 18:11) and the **false savior** and **anti-Christ**? Jesus will tell you. Only an evil generation seeks a sign or mark to reveal who “**the real savior**” is (Matthew 12:39-40). The only physical sign is that The Messiah will be in the grave only three days and three nights. The number “**three**” **biblically**, delineates the completion or fulfillment for **salvation**. Three constitutes completion, fulfillment or **perfection**. 666 is humanity's way of determining **the restoration** to God's government. Six represents man's or human reasoning, and the three sixes denote humanity's way of determining **salvation** through Christ.

The mystical number, 666, according to *The Bible* interpreting itself is a totally human idea as each person decides **right** from **wrong** for himself. Each decides what is **the truth** or how to achieve **salvation** in **paradise**. This is exactly what Satan, the dragon, in Genesis 3 told Adam and Eve they would be able to do if they ate of the fruit of The Tree of Good and Evil. This is **Satan's system of government**. It is Satan's rule as **the god of this world** for all humanity. Only those who follow God's “**will**,” **without a physical sign**, will worship and follow “**the true**” God. Human reasoning leads to following Satan and his government. The beast, with the false prophet, will claim this Satanic system is literally God's government on earth, but it is not The Kingdom of God, but **the kingdom of Satan**.

**The mark of the beast** is not a mark placed upon someone, but **a way of belief** or a **faith**. Those with **the mark** will refuse to repent (Revelation 16:9). The mark in the forehead is the mind or what one believes and worships (Revelation 17:13). In the right hand is how they work and lead their lives. It is Satan's way of **living** instead of **The One True God's Way of Living**. **The mark of the beast** is not some imprint, but **A WAY OF LIFE**. Satan's way of life and the whole world will be **deceived** just as Adam and Eve were first deceived.

Jesus said, "**I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me**" (John 14:6). The only way to The True God is by the real Christ or The Messiah. **The mark of the beast** leads to an **anti-Christ** or a counterfeit **false savior**. Before Jesus **returns**, the entire world will follow a false savior, Satan, **the god of this world**.

## Seven

God's number for The True Savior and to achieve SALVATION is "**seven**." Genesis 2:2 and Hebrews 4 reveal God's **rest** or **paradise** with The Tree of Life is The Seventh Day Rest. Those who receive God's **seal** will be protected from The Wrath of God (Revelation 9:4). This word "seal" in Greek is "sphragis," meaning "a **mark** of privacy" or "genuineness." This is God's **true government**. This is God's **mark** or **seal**. It sets Christians apart from those with Satan's **mark of the beast**. Christians will be protected from **the end-time** punishment of God. Ephesians 1:13 reveals this Seal of God is God's Holy Spirit which leads you into all **truth** (John 17:17). True Christians will know the difference between **the deception** of **the mark of the beast** because they will be **sealed** with God's Holy Spirit which leads them to understand the **deceptive mark of the beast**.

## Wrath Of God

Those deceived who are still UNREPENTANT, but are blessed with all the riches of globalization of a free trade democracy, WITHOUT THE ONE TRUE GOD, as a standard of right and wrong, will receive God's **winepress** and His "**wrath**" (Revelation 18:3-4).

Revelation 16:15 proclaims "blessed are those who do not defile their GARMENTS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS." Don't be deceived or fooled, as the world accepts Satan's **mark of the beast** (Revelation 19:18). At that time, the world will look good and prosperous, but in reality, **in the end** will reap the vengeance of God "**Almighty**."

## You Are Gods

In Genesis 3, Satan said to Eve she will be her "own god" (free to decide), to tell **right** from **wrong** by herself. Eve became Satan's "mother of all living." Satan was truly the god of this world with his government of rulership. The **true** God, who only gives LIFE, was totally bypassed by Satan's image or mark. This image was completely made by Satan through humanity's own ideas of right and wrong. **The real true** God in **heaven** had absolutely nothing to do with it. Notice how long this beast-like system remains in the world.

## The Prophecy

Daniel, God's Prophet, reveals to Nebuchadnezzar, The King of Babylon, a historical prophecy starting with Nebuchadnezzar's reign in Babylon until Christ, The Messiah, **returns** and establishes God's own "**kingdom**" and form of **government**. Remem-

ber, until Jesus **returns**, these historical events are all of Satan and his government when he first began his deceit in The Garden of Eden. These are all **Gentile “kingdoms”** ruled by Satan, until Satan is overthrown and Christ takes over God’s **true government**. Daniel 2 relates this historical prophecy in the form of an image, mark or idol.

Daniel begins interpreting a dream Nebuchadnezzar had of this great image or idol (Daniel 2:28). Daniel states that it is God, The Father in **heaven** who reveals these secrets to the king. Daniel states the dream which the king had has to do with historical events from Daniel’s time until **the end-time** when God’s **government WILL BE ESTABLISHED FOREVER**. All these Gentile Kingdoms will “**end**” or be “**fulfilled**.” The word “**Gentile**” means it came from “human ideas alone,” without The True Almighty God. These Gentile “**kingdoms**” are all in Satan’s image as started in The Garden of Eden. This giant image or idol had a **head of gold**, arms of silver, belly and thighs of brass, his legs of iron, his feet being part of iron and part of clay (Daniel 2:31-33).

Now for a surprising event which takes place. A stone cut out without hands or human origin breaks the image’s feet and the entire image collapses and is blown into pieces by the winds of the earth. The stone that smashes the image on the feet replaces The Gentile **system** and becomes **the true government of God** upon the earth **forever**. This covers the entire history from the government of Babylon under Nebuchadnezzar until The Return of The Messiah (Daniel 2:34-35).

These are “**the four kingdoms**” which exists till God’s “**kingdom**” takes over (Daniel 2:36-45). In history, these kingdoms are known as The Babylonian, Medo-Persian, Greco-Macedonian and The Roman Empire. Then, Christ begins His **reign**. What



is significant is that only these four governments rule the earth until Jesus **returns** with God's "**kingdom.**" How can this be? You will soon see Rome's government **never ends till Christ returns.** Nebuchadnezzar reveals another dream, which includes a large tree where the birds, along with the peoples of the whole world, receive their sustenance. The tree is chopped down and only its stump remains. The King asks Daniel to interpret (Daniel 4). Daniel states this "**tree**" is Babylon, The King's Empire, which he rules and everyone is taken care of by **the tree** (Daniel 4:1-16). This tree, ruler or king, is cut down and no longer rules Babylon. Why?

Nebuchadnezzar was vain enough to take all the credit himself. He felt, he, personally, was responsible for his "**kingdom**" and gained by his own power and not realizing God was responsible for putting him there (Daniel 4:27). Daniel told Nebuchadnezzar to repent and understand how he came to be a king.

The reason for this dream was to teach Nebuchadnezzar it was only God in **heaven** who rules over all and puts into power even the basest of men. In essence, He said, "Nebuchadnezzar, humble yourself and don't worship this great image or idol in spite of you being the head of it" (Daniel 4). Because of his ego, he had to lose his mind and roamed as a beast in the wilderness until he acknowledged that God in **heaven** and only through Him do kings rise and fall according to God's **purpose.** Nebuchadnezzar wandered for seven years as a wild man, and then finally repented and was restored to his kingdom.

When Nebuchadnezzar's rule was past and his grandson, Belshazzar, ruled Babylon, he became **big headed** and acted as if he were God, so in that day, God simply removed Belshazzar as king (Daniel 5).

## God Rules

These “**four kingdoms**” had power as long as the rulers didn’t claim to be God or take credit for themselves to rule their **kingdoms**. Even though these were Gentile **governments**, without God, they were picked and allowed to rule only by God’s permission – just as God allows Satan to do what he wants, but for a short time.

The **mark of the beast** was totally of human origin, from humanity’s imagination as led by Satan, the dragon. This **image of the beast** was the same image in Daniel 2. The **mark of the beast** is this Gentile image in Daniel. One flows from the other.

You have seen how this image or **mark of the beast** started in The Garden of Eden with Adam and Eve and continues right through history until Christ’s **return**. From “**the kingdom of Babylon**” until “**the fourth kingdom**” – “The Roman Government” will stay as humanity’s system on this earth till The Return of Jesus. This **mark of the beast**, a totally human system, without God, rules until The Messiah’s **return**. This fearful **mark**, especially for God’s people (Israel and Christianity) is to be avoided at all costs by God’s people because if they don’t they will be killed. CHRIST SAID, “YOU ARE IN THE WORLD, BUT NOT OF IT” (John 17:15-16). God said the wise shall know who and what **the mark of the beast** is, so you cannot and will not be deceived. How do you avoid this **mark of the beast**?

## Gold – Silver – Brass – Iron

Nebuchadnezzar’s great image had a head of **gold**; arms and chest of **silver**; stomach and thighs of **brass** and lastly the legs and feet of **iron** and **clay** (Daniel 2). Then Daniel states, Nebuchadnezzar

is the head of gold, and the rest (of the kingdom) become more inferior compared to the head of gold – why? Nebuchadnezzar was tried and tested. He was the head of gold because like gold, he was **refined**. What was the reason God tested and tried Nebuchadnezzar? Nebuchadnezzar made a great image of his dream and passed a decree that everyone should **worship** this image and have **no other god** (Daniel 3:11). **The king** excluded The True, Most High God from **his kingdom**. What was the outcome?

Daniel tells the king to repent and humble himself to “**the true**” God who gave him his throne (Daniel 4:27). Because he didn’t, God took away Nebuchadnezzar’s **kingdom** for seven years and he lived in the wilderness as a beast. After seven years, the king came back to his senses and praised God. Only then did God restore his kingship. Then Nebuchadnezzar said it is The Most High God in **heaven** who places men in their position of kingship (Daniel 4:34-35). God’s “**kingdom**” is the only lasting, ruling “**kingdom**,” which will rule forever. Nebuchadnezzar, as a Gentile King, repented and accepted “**the true**” God in **heaven** as “**the ruler**” of all. He finally understood only God sets up the basest of men in rulership.

Nebuchadnezzar became a head of gold because he was tried and refined and finally humbled himself before The True, Most High God. That is what made Nebuchadnezzar the best Gentile King of this **great image**. God humbled him, and therefore, he was a superior king over the others, who followed. Now, you are ready to really understand the **mark of the beast** and why God gives a man’s number of 666.

Each king, who followed the one before, started to think of himself as a **god**. They credited themselves and did not give God any of the credit. That is the key to the **mark of the beast**. The beasts

believe they are **god** and do not need The Most High God to direct them to rule their kingdom. They claim they are **The Kingdom of God** on earth. This is **the mark of the beast** or image of the beast!

Belshazzar, the grandson of Nebuchadnezzar, got carried away with himself (Daniel 5). Belshazzar even desecrated The Holy **things** taken from **the temple** in Jerusalem (Daniel 5:3-4). While he is feasting with his lords and being intoxicated, a finger starts writing on a wall and decrees – that very night – he would lose Babylon with the invasion of The Medes and Persians. That night he did, indeed, lose his rulership. This is the critical point of **the mark of the beast**. Whenever a ruler, over any empire, decrees himself as a god, without the humility of giving credit to Almighty God in **heaven**, their rulership and kingship will be removed. Only God establishes God’s “**kingdom**” on earth by His Son, Jesus (Daniel 2:39).

## **Back To The Garden**

This **mark** or **image** of this type of king, which claims to be God’s “**kingdom**” on earth, is doomed and under God’s curse and eventual destruction. This was the image Satan portrayed to Eve in Genesis 3. Each of the subsequent kings in Nebuchadnezzar’s image became worse and worse until “**the fourth kingdom**,” Rome, which was and is “**the worst**.” This kingdom deteriorated to the cheapest form of metal – **iron**. It has mighty strength (militarily), but has the least value.

It was a kingdom completely devised from human imagination and reason. In fact, Julius Caesar was the first in The Roman government to call himself Caesar or “*sar*” in the Hebrew. The Russians called their Caesars, “Tsar,” from word in the Hebrew

“*sar*” which stands for “prince of princes” or “head ruler.” No one higher. They claim to sit in God’s **throne**.

This **mark of the beast**, which started with Eve, a type of mother – Babylon, procreates the human family, which degenerates in **the end-time** to a complete and total government devised as a self-produced human government with its religion based entirely upon **the commandments of men**. This world government will be a system led by Satan, a false prophet (**anti-Christ**), and the ten kings who control the entire world based upon man’s democracy without including The Most High God. It will be exceedingly rich and prosperous and all who **worship** this **image** or **mark of the beast** will, indeed, prosper and succeed. Everyone will be free to decide for themselves which gods to worship – this image, which is the **mark of the beast**.

Notice, the world worships the **image** of the beast. The Roman Empire lasted only about six hundred years and then died. That was the end of the **seventh** head with **one** to go, the **eighth** and final head which is of the **seventh** (Revelation 17:11). The Roman Empire’s **image** or the **eighth** head of the beast will include **all the nations** of the **world**. The world will love it because of the prosperity it will bring.

Since The Roman Empire ended, it is the “**image**” or “*eikon*” (idol) from The Greek which remains. It is “**the system**.” Its human form of government and human religious system exists until the eighth head appears. Christ will destroy this final government as Daniel 2 prophesies. How do you tell the difference between those with this mark and those sealed by God’s angels?

Simply, “666” is a governmental system claiming to be God’s government. As 666 denotes, it will be a democracy based upon a

combination of world religions all designed by **human imagination** and accepted as the church of one's choice. It will be filled with either keeping The Letter of The Law, to know right from wrong or just plain designed commandments of men. What is the difference between those with the **mark of the beast** and those with The Seal of God – His Holy Spirit? Those with the **mark of the beast** will be piously religious, but it **will not change human nature!** Everyone is **still carnal** and will **die**. Those sealed by God “**will**” actually have their very heart and mind changed to only follow “**the will**” of The Most High God. There it is – plain and simple.

## **A Great Deception**

God's angel warns God's people to come out of her – Babylon – which has made **all the world** drunk or deceived by her teaching. Christians will be deceived, as well as Israel (Revelation 18:4). Basically, this is referring to The 144,000 from The Tribes of Israel and the innumerable multitude – among The Gentiles (Revelation 7:3-14).

Obviously, the **mark of the beast** is not some symbol or literal mark. If the **mark of the beast** was some physical emblem or sign, it would be very apparent to the true believers of God Almighty. The **mark of the beast** is a totally human system of government and religion. It is truly a **number** of a **man** or from **humanity's imagination**. Its “**god**” is **Satan** and not God, The Father in **heaven**. The **mark of the beast** makes **man** his own god, as well as, deciding right from wrong on his own. Notice what God reveals about this **end-time**, just before Christ **returns** with The Seven Last Plagues. In II Thessalonians 2:4-11, Paul gives you **the truth**. Paul states because humanity will follow a false governmental and religious system as if it is God's “**king-**

**dom,**” God will cause them to be deceived and become delusional (Verse 11). Christians will be deceived and only come to their senses after the great tribulation caused by Satan.

The **mark of the beast** is a worldwide governmental system and religion, which will be tolerant of all religions, ruled by Satan, with the beast and the false prophet or **anti-Christ**. It will be based upon man-made commandments. When did this system start? In The Garden of Eden with Adam and Eve. This system in Daniel’s time prevailed as a Gentile system starting with Nebuchadnezzar as the head of gold. It was the best of all future empires. Why? Because Nebuchadnezzar was refined of gold by his seven years in the wilderness as a beast. Because he finally acknowledged The True God as The Most High God, he had the most superior kingdom.

Those following until The Return of Christ are all inferior kingdoms because they made themselves a **god** and only have a **humanly devised government**. The final Roman Empire continues through the beast with seven heads until Jesus **returns** with His armies and will become King of Kings over The True Kingdom of God.

## **Satan’s Lie**

Satan’s **lie** to **Eve** was that she would **not die** if she ate the fruit of The Tree of Good and Evil. Satan’s system, as the god of this world, can only exist as long as humans remain – **human**. Only when humanity becomes SPIRITUAL is Satan’s power finished. Satan is “**the god of the dead.**” His mark, a totally devised human system of government, economics and religion can only end in death. The **mark of the beast** is the image or idol of Satan’s rule as a human being. Even though this **democratic system**

without The Most High God will be global and will, indeed, produce prosperity in the world, it **never changes human nature!** Unless **humans repent**, they cannot become “**spirit beings**” or **inherit eternal life in God’s kingdom**. The end result of Satan’s government started in The Garden of Eden and finally, at the end time, becomes the world’s system of government and religion. This religious system accepts all religions with a false Christ, **the anti-Christ**. This is a system devised by Satan, which will be filled with piety and religious works by human effort which never changes **human nature!**

THE CHOICE IS LEFT TO YOU. THE WISE VIRGINS WILL REMAIN BLAMELESS OR PERFECT. ALL THE REST WILL PARTAKE OF THE WRATH OF GOD UPON CHRIST’S RETURN, WHICH IS GOD’S GREAT WINEPRESS (Revelation 14:19).



## CHAPTER 6

# BABYLON AND THE TWO GRAILS

**Babylon, The Great Whore. Babylon started at The Tower of Babel and this Babylonian system has continued to exist until Christ returns. God blames Babylon for all the religious deceptions incorporated in all the churches. Everything from “no God” to God being “a mountain” or “tree” or “some other part of the creation.” Christianity, itself, is divided, as well as all the divisions in The Jewish Faith. Who is Babylon, The Great Whore?**

To begin, consider the story about a potter. This potter decided to build a sculpture of Himself, a self-portrait. The **potter** is God. God said to the heavenly host, “**Let us make man in our image**” (Genesis 1:26). God wanted to duplicate humanity in His likeness. To accomplish this goal, He told **the angels** they would be His **messengers**. After all, when angels appear, they look like humans (Genesis 18:1-2). The Apostle Paul clarifies God’s **purpose** as a potter. Paul refers to humanity blaming God saying, “**Why hast thou made me thus**” (Romans 9:18-25)?

Why did God make humans? Paul said God is **the potter** and you are the clay, made from dust and He decides for your own good, how you can have honor or dishonor in God’s **eyes**. Some humans become enemies of God and others are chosen by God to be His own. God is **the one** who decides how He is making you in His **image**. God is **the potter**; humans are but clay.

Paul said those humans who are against God are, unknowingly, fulfilling **God's plan** (Verse 22). God is willing to endure grief, but is also willing to show His wrath to make **His power known**. God endures this life process by suffering Himself to finally have His wrath (anger with grief), fitted or set in proper order to ruin or destroy those who are evil. God decides who needs a severe spanking.

Why? So, you will eventually seek only God, **the true God**, who can give you LIFE (I Timothy 2:4). It is God's "**will**" that everyone be **SAVED**, but only, in His Order according to one's growth (I Corinthians 15). God vents His wrath upon those who refuse to **REPENT**. How does God deal with the vessels of dishonor?

## **Return Of Christ**

The 144,000 **saints** are with God on Mount Zion, by The City of David (Revelation 14:1-4). Who are these 144,000? God is ready to bring curses upon the earth, but holds them back until His **servants** are **sealed** (Revelation 7:3). Who are God's **servants**? These 144,000 are of The Twelve Tribes of Israel who came out of **the great tribulation** from Israel (Revelation 7:4-15). Only 144,000 Israelites are converted to Christ at that time. Then, a **great multitude** from all nations will also be converted by going through **the great tribulation** just before Christ **returns** (Verses 9-10).

The 144,000 in Revelation 14 are 12,000 from each of The Tribes of Israel who will meet Jesus **in the clouds** and stand on Mount Zion. This depicts Christ's **return** to the earth with all the angels and His saints or bride.

This is the **first resurrection** (John 5) or the **early spring barley**

**harvest.** (Read Chapter 7, ‘*The Mystery Harvest*’). Next is the **late ingathering harvest** or **wheat harvest** and finally, **the fall grape harvest** or **God’s wrath**.

## **God’s Judgment**

An **angel** tells John that **the wheat harvest** consists of those who will go into God’s “**kingdom**” and later comes a **third harvest**, which is a **grape harvest**, upon whom God unleashes **His wrath** (Revelation 14:15-20). This harvest is God’s **winepress** which takes place outside a particular city (Verse 20). What city is this?

## **Babylon, The Great**

An **angel** cries out that the hour of God’s **judgment** has come. At this point, the **angel** announces everyone should repent and worship **the true** God (Revelation 14:7-11). Then another **angel** shouts, “**Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication**” (Revelation 14:8). This great city made everyone **drunk** or **deceived** about **the true** God and His **ways**. This great city **deceives the whole world** with her idolatrous religious ideas. All those with **the mark of the beast** will receive God’s **wrath** or **seven last plagues** and be thrown into The Lake of Fire if they do not **repent** (Verse 9-11). Where is this great city of Babylon?

## **Babylon And The Grail**

Check *The Scriptures* to prove which is really this great city (who is a whore). Some say it refers to Rome or even The Catholic Church. Others say **the harlots** are The Protestant Churches. Some say it is New York City and on and on it goes. What do *The*

*Scriptures* say? God is about to make judgment concerning this **whore** (Revelation 17:1-2). This woman has committed fornication with the inhabitants of the earth and its kings and rulers by making them drunk with the wine she gives to the world (Verse 2).

You will see the drunkenness is caused by picking **the church** of his/her choice. Everyone is doing what is **right** in his/her own eyes. This **new Babylon** is a **great city**, where many nations worship their individual God according to the religion of their choice without having **the truth** of **The Real God Almighty and His Son, Jesus**. The world is all made drunk from the wine of this cup or grail.

## New Babylon

This **end-time** city not only causes **confusion**, but is, also, a **mystery**. No one who is of this world can really understand **the truth** about this city. In fact, until later, no one seems to even know what or where this city is. She is called great, because she is worshipped by the world and the world makes her rich. This city is a mother or one who spawns or accepts daughters who are harlots. Who is this mother who teaches religious confusion and her daughters are harlots just as she is? Because of her false religious teachings, this great city causes martyrdom to those who are God's **true saints** or **righteous ones** who do not worship her. This **great city** reigns over the entire world (Revelation 17:18).

In Greek, the word for “fornication” refers to “**idolatry**” – “**the worship of false gods**” or “**a false religion.**” “Abominations” and “filthiness” refer to “every unclean thing, **which is a lie.**” This is the exact opposite of what is **the truth**. She claims to be what she isn't. This is quite a woman. Who is she? Now, for a great surprise!

## The Whore And Harlots

This great city of Babylon, worshipped by the world, is **not** Rome, The Catholic Church, The Protestants or harlots, or even New York City. Also, it is not The United Nations as some believe. Ezekiel, The Prophet, discloses who this **whore** is. God tells Ezekiel to tell **Jerusalem** of **her abominations** (Ezekiel 16:1-2). Babylon is the city filled with **abominations**. Here God calls Jerusalem a woman filled with **abominations**. Jerusalem started as a Gentile City of The Amorites and Hittites (Verses 4-5). No one was interested in her. God found her covered in blood (i.e., wine which symbolize pagan teachings) (Verse 6). God said she became a city that has LIFE and not death. God made a **marriage covenant** with her to become His Bride. God courted her and was preparing her for The Wedding Feast by making her prosperous (Verses 9-16). She became extremely wealthy in King David's and Solomon's Day and then what happened? Because of Jerusalem's great wealth, she started to commit idolatry and became a whore (Ezekiel 16:17-23). She made agreements with other nations but **not with the true God**. This is Jerusalem, not any other city. She even started to follow pagan customs by burning their children in fire, in a place known as The Valley of Gehenna or "hell."

*The Book of Revelation* states the time period will be after **the two woes** with **the third woe** (Verse 23). This **third woe** occurs at **the seventh trumpet** when Christ **returns** and unleashes **the seven last plagues** or the **wrath of God** upon mankind and the earth.

Ezekiel accuses Jerusalem of accepting all the religions of the world with their high places or churches of worship. God calls Jerusalem – Egypt, the mother of idol worship (Ezekiel 16:24-27). Jerusalem is worshipped as the center of the world's religious beliefs.

The term “Philistine,” is the modern day Palestine or Palistinians. The **daughters** of The Philistines, which are today’s modern day Palestinians, hate Jerusalem and The Jews for this very reason (Verse 27). They hate Jerusalem because of The Jews who have allowed all religions to venerate and have differing **Holy places** in that city. Palestinians are Muslims and have no use for The Jewish **religion** or any belief other than their own of Islam. There you have it. The Mosque of Omar is there. It is biblically very clear, this great city of Babylon is where everyone in the world, worships – **Jerusalem**.

God states Jerusalem is a wife committing adultery and buying off her lovers – the world, to keep her prosperous and peaceful (Ezekiel 16:31-35). God’s **wrath** is poured out against His unfaithful wife by having her lovers, who made her prosperous, turn and devour her (Verse 37-46). All nations of the world shall turn against Jerusalem and make her naked. They turn on her because she proves not to be God’s “**kingdom**” on **earth** and **they (the beast)** are deceived (Revelation 17:15-18). Why? When Jesus **returns, the beast, the false governments** of the world turn on her because they are inundated when God unleashes his **seven last plagues** upon them. They know they were deceived about **the true Christ**. There you have it. Who is this **great city** of Babylon? **Jerusalem in the end-time! THE FALSE NEW JERUSALEM!**

## The Harlots

Babylon is, also, called **the mother of harlots**. Who are these harlots? In *The Book of Hosea*, God tells Hosea to marry a whore whose name is Gomer. “Gomer” in Hebrew means “finality” or “completion.” Gomer represents Jerusalem, which is God’s **bride**. Hosea marries Gomer and bares him a legitimate son, Jezreel. In the beginning, God accepted Jerusalem as His, even though her

birth was of pagan origin. He regarded her as His. To learn how she corrupted herself, read all of Hosea. After Jezreel's birth, which was legitimate, she bore a daughter, Lo-ruhamah, which in Hebrew means, "**I will no more have mercy.**" Who is Lo-ruhamah? Hosea said this daughter represents Israel. Lo-ruhamah is not of Hosea's seed, but his wife's – while playing the whore.

Then, Gomer commits adultery again and bares Lo-ammi who represents Judah. Lo-ammi, in Hebrew means, "**you are not my people.**" Israel and Judah are both rejected by God. What is the reason? At the **end-time**, both Israel and Judah will be united as one nation under God (Hosea 1:10-11). In the first chapter of *Hosea*, you cover all the history, from The Ten Tribes of Israel going into captivity under Assyria and later Judah going into captivity under Babylon. Both, Israel and Judah finally **unite** and become God's people (Hosea 2:23). Israel and Judah ultimately accept **the true God**.

Hosea 2:4 reveals how Jerusalem's children become whores or harlots. In Hosea 4:11, The Prophet states Israel plays a whore because she drinks **wine**, especially **new wine**, which causes **real drunkenness**. Israel is called "**the harlot**" (Verse 15). Why would Israel be called a **harlot**? She drinks wine which is sour and plays the harlot (Verse 18). Her rulers, in Hosea 4:17, pray to idols or commit fornication. In duality, you now know **Jerusalem** is **the whore** whom God married and her children, **Israel** and **Judah**, are **the harlots**.

**Babylon**, that great center of all the major religions of the world is **Jerusalem**, the mother of **all** harlots. The harlots are Israel and Judah who accept all these other idolatrous, human-made religions by agreements made by their rulers. **Babylon**, or the end-time **Jerusalem**, becomes a **great world city** and is **worshipped**

as the **world's religious** center of all major beliefs in the world. There you have it.

## **Innocent Blood**

Now you know, Babylon, **the great whore** is **the city** – Jerusalem, at **the end-time**. Israel has made pacts with all the nations and rulers of the world. Trade agreements worldwide or globalization, produces “prosperity” for the entire world. Each having its religion accepted by contracts with the rulers of Israel who play the harlot. Peace, peace when there is no peace.

At last, Israel is accepted as a legitimate state in the world. A variety of church edifices of all religions fill this international world City of Babylon (the end-time Jerusalem). Israel, as a nation at last, does have peace.

A **temple** is built with **the anti-Christ** proclaiming to be The Messiah. This **temple**, however, **is not sanctified** by God. The whore claims God's “**kingdom**” is already on earth. The world actually rejects **true Christianity** and those who are **faithful to the true God**. In fact, they go through condemnation and persecution. Revelation 18:6 reveals **true Christians** will be martyred. They know the real Jesus will descend from the east as lightening with great thunder.

Matthew 24:23-25 warns Christians this will be a time when false Christs and false prophets will arise and would even deceive **true Christians**, if possible. But, it will **not** be possible because they will be witnessing **The Return of The True Messiah**. Revelation 11 states they will witness **the truth for three and a half years of the tribulation**. This is the reason they will be killed. John continues and declares God's **two witnesses** will be killed



(Revelation 11:8). Where? John reveals God now looks upon this great city (end-time Jerusalem), **spiritually**, as **Sodom** and **Egypt**. They are completely saturated **spiritually** with sin and every abomination and filthiness (just as Revelation 17:5 states). What city does *The Bible* clearly say Babylon, the whore, is? Notice, the last part of Revelation 11:8 plainly tells you, “**where also our Lord was crucified.**” There is no doubt, Babylon, the great whore, where our Lord was crucified, is spiritually dead. Jerusalem with an **anti-Christ** in a **temple** or a **tabernacle** and all other human religious edifices and churches are worshipping this great city as their **seat of origin**. Those who worship this city and the beast despise **the truth of God**. They follow a **false Christ**, an **anti-Christ** instead of **the true Messiah** and God’s **saints** are martyred! The world will believe The Messiah is in Jerusalem. The Messiah came secretly.

Revelation 18:24 states this Babylon or spiritually-dead Jerusalem was found with the **blood** of **Prophets** and of **saints**, and all that were slain upon the earth. Religion has caused more wars and deaths than any other cause. Notice, however, *The Old Testament* Prophets were killed in Jerusalem. Rome, New York nor even The United Nations qualifies as this city. Babylon, the great city, is none other than the end-time Jerusalem. God calls this end-time Jerusalem – Sodom and Egypt, “**spiritually**” where **the true Messiah** was crucified.

## The Grails

Jesus enjoined all Christians to drink His cup of wine, which represented His **blood** for the remission of sins (Matthew 26:27-28). An **angel** descends from heaven who is so powerful the entire earth is filled with an extremely bright light (Revelation 18:1-8). The **angel** cries out that Jerusalem/Babylon becomes the world

center of every demon and foul spirit. God causes the destruction of the city because **all nations** have drunk the wine from Babylon's cup, which causes those with **the mark of the beast** to be deceived with her false teaching about the real Messiah and God's "**true kingdom.**"

A voice declares, "**Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues**" (Verse 4). These are those Christians who come through The Great Tribulation with The 144,000 Israelites. God decries Babylon, because she made everyone drink of her false, deceptive **cup** about Christ and God's "**kingdom.**" They are to be paid back **double** for all her false teachings (Verse 6). God's **wrath** is about to be released upon everyone who has the **mark of the beast**. You will come to see that Christ's cup and Babylon's cup refers to God's **wrath**, which ends with The Lake of Fire. **THERE ARE TWO GRAILS.** Babylon loves her prosperity and the worship she receives. Because she believes herself to be "**God's kingdom**" on "**earth,**" she torments everyone who does not follow and worship her (Revelation 18:7).

This Queen, "**Babylon,**" states in her heart she **sits a queen** and is **no widow** and will **not know sorrow**. This queen does not require the **death** or sacrifice of **the true Christ**, for she has no husband. This whore claims she has **no husband** and was **not widowed** by Christ's death since she is God's **kingdom** on earth. She truly sits a queen without the need of any husband as king. She claims she will never die. God's **wrath – the seven last plagues** – ending with The Lake of Fire brings **judgment** to the world (Verse 8)!

## **Christ's Cup**

The patriarch, Jacob knew about the coming Messiah and proph-

esied about Christ drinking from His **cup of wine**. Jacob said, in **the last days**, Jesus would come “**Binding his foal unto the vine, and his ass’s colt unto the choice vine; he washed his garments in wine, and his clothes in the blood of grapes**” (Genesis 49:11-12). Jesus Christ, The Savior took upon Himself, **the wrath of God, God’s winepress** for each and every Christian who drinks of that cup.

Jesus was given “**gall**” to drink (Matthew 27:34). Gall was **mixed with wine** to give those crucified a drug to alleviate the pain of crucifixion. Once Christ tasted it, He would not drink any more. Why?

Jesus, The Christ, wanted to feel the **pain** of his death and **crucifixion**, so He took upon Himself God’s **wrath** for each and every Christian. Just as He spilled His **blood** to show His **love** for you, He took the **stripes**, as well, for your healing and thereby, going to hell for you. Jesus would not drink the wine given Him. Jesus, The Christ, The Savior paid fully for the penalty of all of your sins.

The **whore’s cup** and **Christ’s cup** represent the **same thing** – God’s **wrath**! Jerusalem’s fornication teaches an **idolatrous god**. Satan’s cup, Babylon, was now to pay the full penalty of God’s **wrath** in The Lake of Fire as God’s final spanking.

These are the two grails. Babylon and all the world’s human religions are still looking for and seeking **the holy grail** of Christ. The crusaders sought it; archeologists seek it and in the fictional account of The DaVinci Code, they attempt to find **the true cup** of Christ. Babylon, the great whore, never will be able to drink of that cup because at **the end-time**, Jerusalem will be asking the world to drink of her cup, filled with **false teachings** about

God's "**kingdom**" which says she is The Kingdom of God, but it will fail. ONLY THE TRUE MESSIAH, JESUS, THE CHRIST, CAN BRING GOD'S ACTUAL KINGDOM TO REIGN ON THIS EARTH.

## CHAPTER 7

### THE MYSTERY HARVEST

**Most Christian denominations believe there are two harvests representing those who are “saved.” There is The Spring Harvest in Jerusalem, which was basically a harvest of barley. The Great Fall Harvest, known as the “ingathering,” was a “wheat harvest.” Surprisingly, there are three harvests. There is a Barley Spring Harvest; then in the fall, The Wheat Harvest and ultimately, The Grape Harvest. Read the wonderful account, this mystery harvest which reveals everyone is finally saved.**

Paul said The Sabbaths and Holy Days are a **shadow** or a **prophecy** of things to come (Colossians 2:16-17). Each Christian **church**, which accepts The Holy Days, determines on their own what part to incorporate into their creed. Each denomination has their belief of faith tied directly to which Holy Days they believe or accept.

Catholic, Protestants, Greek and Russian Orthodox pretty much accept the death of Christ as their Passover. Jesus is **the sacrificed lamb** and by the drinking of the wine and eating the bread shows the remembrance of His death. Today, most call it Communion because it represents the body and blood of Christ – your Passover. Also, these groups accept Pentecost as the receiving of The Holy Spirit or the genesis of The Church of God. From here on, the rest of God’s Holy Days are not followed but corrupted with pagan days such as Easter, Christmas, Halloween, etc. This

restricts **the shadow** or **prophecy of things to come** for these groups. Some Evangelicals and **independents** understand other Holy Days such as The Feast of Trumpets as The Seventh Trump commemorating **The Return of Christ**. The Worldwide Church of God and The Seventh Day Church of God, among others, accept **almost** all of God's Holy Days – Passover, Unleavened Bread, Pentecost, Trumpets, Atonement, Tabernacles and The Last Great Day. Those of The Jewish Faith, also, accept all The Holy Days.

Amazingly, although thinking they keep all The Holy Days, they do not include **all** THE HOLY DAYS. One of the major Holy Days, which lasts for a year is barely known or voiced by **any group**. This is **The Jubilee Year**, which is a Holy time of God's, occurring every fifty years. What is the mystery? What does The Jubilee represent? Leviticus 25 covers this Holy time.

Jubilee also signifies a **shadow of things to come**. IT IS A JUBILEE OR FEAST WHERE EVERYONE IS RELEASED FROM THEIR DEBTS AND RETURNED TO THEIR FAMILY INHERITANCE. Only **The Gentiles** (those without God), are **not released**, but are kept in slavery forever. Why?

### **Time Of Release**

The Jubilee is a **great festive period**. It lasts for an entire year. It is a time of rejoicing and all debtors are forgiven their debts without penalty. It is a **time of release** and every family is to return to their **family inheritance**. It is truly a period of rejoicing and feasting. It is the genesis of **the horn of plenty**. When a family goes into debt and sells their land and properties, the buyer can only retain that land and property until The Jubilee Year. Once The Jubilee arrives, all debts are forgiven and the debtors have their property back **free and clear**.

An exception would be when a family member redeems the land back by paying the debt off, which would include a premium and then the land goes back to the family. *The Book of Ruth* is a good example of **redemption** by Boaz. **The inheritance** is returned before The Jubilee, free and clear. Only The Gentiles, **those without God**, are not released from **debt** and **must make full restitution**. Read and study Leviticus 25 thoroughly to validate these facts. Remember, all The Holy Days of God are a **shadow** or a **prophecy** of things to come. Biblically, The Jubilee represents The Final Harvest, which God calls a **mystery**.

## God's Mystery

Paul said **the saints** and **the faithful** Christians in Ephesus have the privilege of knowing a mystery, which had never before been revealed (Ephesians 1:9). It reveals a very wondrous **prophecy**. In Christ, **all things** (everyone – the world) in **heaven** and the earth ARE GOING TO BE SAVED (Ephesians 1:10). Jesus said everyone who confesses Christ before men, in like manner, THE CHRIST, Himself, will confess as being the High Priest (Melchizedek) before **the angels** (Luke 12:8). Every single person who confesses The Christ will receive **salvation** (Romans 10:9-10). Paul clearly defines who is SAVED. He states every knee will bow and confess Christ, in **heaven**, on the **earth**, and those under the earth (the dead) will be SAVED (Philippians 2:9-11). God thought of everything in His **plan** and will SAVE EVERY SINGLE PERSON. But, how does all this come to pass?

## Parable Of The Sower And The Seed

Jesus speaks of the **parable** when a farmer sows seed in his field and at harvest time, finds beautiful wheat, but some wheat plants had only blades without fruit. There were tares or weeds keeping

those blades from maturing into wheat (Matthew 13). What happened? The landowner tells his servants that an enemy had seeded the tares along with the seeds of his wheat (Matthew 13:27-30). He allows them both to grow together; then, at harvest time, he tells them to take out the tares and burn them and gather the wheat into his barn.

But wait! In this **parable** when the tares are burned, the wheat is still there – the same seed God planted, which had blades, but, without wheat or fruit. What does the owner do with them since these seeds did not bare fruit? Christ reveals two more parables. One is a grain of mustard seed that grows into the greatest among herbs and all the birds lodge in it. Nothing is lost (Matthew 13:31-32). His **second parable** relates that a woman took some leaven and hid in it three measures of meal till the **whole** was leavened. It became a loaf of wheat bread. Again, nothing is lost – everything is used. Jesus is saying ALL WILL BE SAVED, even the “**blades**” of wheat will be used for bread and everything will be **saved**. How does God and His Son accomplish this? The answer is revealed in The Jubilee Year and THE MYSTERY HARVEST.

If a brother mismanages or some of his plans don't work out, making him poor – in debt – and he has to sell his **inheritance**, then a kin (relative) can REDEEM **the inheritance** before The Jubilee (Leviticus 25:25). Likewise, the debtor, himself, when he recoups some funds, may, also, **redeem** his land. *The Book of Ruth* shows a kin, Boaz, taking steps to recoup Naomi's land. This lineage is King David's forefather and likewise Christ, David's seed, REDEEMS all of humanity by **His blood** or the giving of **His life**. This is the reason Pentecost (count fifty from Unleavened Bread – means “**becoming sinless**”) is fifty days after The Feast of Unleavened Bread. Christ **redeemed** “**the church**” before The Jubilee and gave **the inheritance** to them, which is GOD'S HOLY



SPIRIT. John 5:25-27 reveals this is THE FIRST RESURRECTION and James 1:18 calls them **THE FIRSTFRUITS**. What harvest is this? This Firstfruits Harvest is in **the spring** (Exodus 23:16-19). **The fall harvest** is at the end of the year, which is The Great Harvest known as **The Feast of Ingathering**. This harvest comes in **the fall** (Verse 16). You have two harvests, **spring** and **fall**. Ruth 1:22 shows Naomi and Ruth coming back to Naomi's home in **the spring** called **the barely harvest**. This **barley harvest** represents "**the church**" **REDEEMED** by Christ before The Jubilee Year.

The large wheat harvest is in **the fall** or **time of ingathering**. This is the completion of the year's farming and includes only **two harvests**, THE SPRING BARLEY HARVEST and THE LATE WHEAT HARVEST. Notice, Matthew 13 only refers to **the wheat harvest** or The Jubilee when everyone is returned to their **inheritance**. So far, there are only two harvests. What is **the third harvest**? It's a **mystery**. This is a "**hidden harvest**" which has literally been hidden from the world. Notice, it is only "**the church saints**" and "**the faithful**" who understand what this THIRD HARVEST is as God's "**word**" reveals it.

## **Gentile's Slaves Forever**

God states if a brother is sold into slavery because of debt, during The Jubilee, that debtor must be freed and returned to his **inheritance** (Leviticus 25:39-43). No usury can be charged and one cannot treat the brother as if the owner is a dictator. He is still a brother and should be set free during The Jubilee Year.

In "**the church**," they are to be **spiritual Israelites** – as a brother (Romans 2). All others are to be **bondsmen** or **slaves** for life (Leviticus 25:44-46). These are the **unconverted**. These are **the**

**heathen** or **pagans**. Why? Remember, pagans are those without **the true God**. What happens to the pagans? How are they **saved** when God refers to being ALL AND IN ALL in **everyone** (I Corinthians 15)?

## **The Wrath Of God**

Prophecy in *The Bible* reveals the answer to the mystery of THE THIRD HARVEST. THE SEVENTH ANGEL or THE SEVENTH TRUMPET begins to sound (Revelation 11:15). Paul said this is the time of THE FIRST RESURRECTION, at **the sound of the trumpet**. This is **Christ's return** and "**the resurrected saints**" **meet Jesus in the clouds** (I Thessalonians 4:16-17). It is at The Seventh Trump, The First Harvest, when all the kingdoms of this world become God's "**kingdom**" with Christ as King of Kings (Revelation 11:15).

One hundred forty-four thousand (144,000) Israelites are resurrected and follow Christ (Revelation 14:1-4). They are called THE FIRSTFRUITS and are in The First Resurrection. This event is summarized when the one hundred and forty-four thousand (144,000) – The Tribes of Israel **along with an innumerable multitude** from **all** nations are given God's **seal** or **inheritance** of The Holy Spirit (Revelation 7:1-14). Who are they? These are those who will be coming out of "**the great tribulation yet to come**" (Revelation 14). **They are God's "first fruits"** or of **The First Barley Harvest**, along with those who make this harvest **in the last three and a half years of tribulation BEFORE** Christ returns. This completes **The Barley Harvest**.

**Those who do not repent** and instead follow Satan with **his mark** will have God's **wrath** poured out upon them (Revelation 14:10). This **wrath** of God is compared to **wine** and called God's **cup of**

**indignation** ending in The Lake of Fire. In the Greek, “indignation” carries the meaning of “anger with grief.” Read all of Hebrews 12. This is God’s **final spanking**; it has the power to do everything it takes to SAVE you. God’s **wrath** is portrayed as a **cup of wine**. What did Jesus say about wine?

## Christ, The Vine

Jesus said He is the **vine** (John 15:1-6). “**Vines**” refer to “**grapes**.” Christ said unless you are attached to Jesus who is the vine and **bear much fruit**, you will be gathered (in harvest time) and thrown into The Fire or Gehenna – The Lake of Fire (Revelation 14). Christ revealed when you drink His **cup of wine**, your sins are forgiven (Matthew 26:27-28). Jesus is the vine and by drinking from His **cup**, The Passover “**cup of wine**” allows you to be forgiven for your sins. This is His **blood**. Christ had gone into God’s **winepress of wrath for you** when you drink His **cup** as a memorial. Why?

Christ states if you merely drink **His cup of wine** BUT are not **bearing much fruit**, you will **still** be thrown into The Lake of Fire. Jesus said to gather up the **tares** (weeds) and burn them (Matthew 13:30). So, the wheat is left after the tares are burned. No wheat is lost. How does God **save** everyone? The wheat, all of it, is put into the barn.

## Winepress Of God’s Wrath

The time of **the seventh trump** announces The First Resurrection with Christ’s **return** to earth along with His armies (Revelation 11:15). There can be **NO SECRET RAPTURE** when Christ, with **the saints** and **the angels**, unleashes **the wrath** of God which comprises **the seven last plagues**. Christ standing on Mount Zion

with The 144,000 and an innumerable number, sing a new song about their REDEMPTION (Jubilee) (Revelation 14:1). Another angel cries out, “**Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations [the world] drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication**” (Verse 8). These are those who never drank of Christ’s **cup of wine**; meaning they **never repented**.

Revelation 14:9-10, “**The third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, [those who] worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand [and his image] shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God [notice the outcome] ...he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the Holy Angels, and in the presence of the Lamb.**”

This is NO SECRET RAPTURE as **the entire world witnesses this spectacular event**. Christ with His saints and angels pour out THE LAST SEVEN PLAGUES or THE WRATH OF GOD, which finally concludes with The Lake of Fire (hell). Then blessed are the saints who have patience and who “**keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus**” (Verse 12). Then came the out-pouring of THE SEVEN LAST PLAGUES and WRATH OF GOD (Revelation 15 and 16).

## **Two More Harvests**

John prophesies that those who die “in Christ” will go to their rest until their **resurrection**. “**Another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud, Thrust in thy sickle, and reap: for the time is come for thee to reap; for the harvest of the earth is ripe**” (Revelation 14:15). This angelic announcement speaks of another harvest (Revelation 14:13-20).

## The Wheat Harvest

In Revelation 14:14 one **who looks like** The Son of Man having on his head a golden crown (king) and in his hand, a sharp sickle. Remember, this is during **the seventh trump**. Christ resurrects those in **The First Resurrection** (barley harvest) and **unleashes The Seven Last Plagues** while standing where The 144,000 are standing on Mount Zion – David’s **throne**. Another angel came out of the temple. For this **harvest**, this **angel** comes out of the temple and does what? The angel cries out to The Son of Man and states, “**Thrust in thy sickle, and reap: for the time is come for thee to reap; for the harvest of the earth is ripe**” (Verse 15). This is **The Ingathering, or Fall Harvest of Wheat**. You have **two harvests, The Barley in The Spring, and now, The Great Fall Harvest of Wheat**.

## The Mystery Harvest

What is this mystery **third harvest**? Another **angel** came out of **the altar** (Verse 18). In **the wheat harvest**, the **angel** comes out of **the temple**, but this **third angel** comes out of **the altar**. Why? This angel has power or control over fire (Verse 18). This is God’s **wrath** finalizing in The Lake of Fire or hell (Gehenna). What is this **angel** going to do? This **angel** cries to him who had the sharp sickle, saying, “**Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth; for her grapes are fully ripe**” (Verse 18). This is a Third Harvest – **The Grape Harvest**. This is **THE MYSTERY HARVEST** mentioned in Ephesians 1:9-10. It is a **grape harvest**. Why?

## The Winepress

“**And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered**

**the vine of the earth, and cast it into the great winepress of the wrath of God**” (Revelation 14:19). God is going to make wine from **this harvest** or **spilled blood**. **The seven vials of God** ends by those who are not in *The Book of Life*, and are being thrown into The Lake of Fire or **the final hell**. Those in God’s final harvest – the grape harvest, are thrown into Gehenna to be burned (Chapters 15 to 20). That is just what Jesus said, “**Let both grow together [wheat and tares] until the harvest: and in the time of harvest [wheat and grape] I will say to the reapers [plural], Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn**” (Matthew 13:30). Why the tares first?

## The Tares

Jesus details the process of these two harvests (wheat and grapes). Christ reveals, “**The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares [weeds] are the children of the wicked one**” [Satan] (Matthew 13:37-43). Satan sowed the tares. What are **the tares**? The tares are Satan’s deceptive teachings which have to be burned (I Corinthians 3:13-15). Jesus said the same in Matthew 13. The **false teachings** or **lies** have to be burned (**first**) before **The Grape Harvest**. Then what happens? The grapes are ready to be harvested after **the carnality** or **false thinking** is burned away (Revelation 14:18). All false ideas or carnal teachings will suffer loss (I Corinthians 3:14-15). How? By fire! However, all persons who had followed Satan will eventually be **SAVED**. There you have it. There are **THREE HARVESTS** – **The Barley (Spring)**, **The Wheat (Fall)**, and **finally, The Mystery Harvest**, which is The Lake of Fire. God has arranged to **SAVE** everyone. For the complete **process of salvation** of those in **The Grape Harvest**, read the last third of the book – *God’s Work*.

## The Grape Harvest

Does *Revelation* disclose this grape harvest? Yes! Continuing with the context in Revelation 14, you find Revelation 15 follows with **the seven last plagues**. God's winepress is ready to unfold. The **seven last plagues** are **the wrath of God** (Revelation 15:1). Then all of a sudden in Verse 2 John sees "**a sea of glass**." What is this **sea of glass**? John states this sea, a picture of the world, is **mingled** with fire. Who is in this glass **mingled** with fire? Clearly, it states all those who have finally repented and gained victory over **the beast and his mark**. However, to do so they have to come out of **the sea of glass, which is on fire** or The Lake of Fire (as you will **soon prove**).

Those, who overcome the beast and his mark, **sing two songs**. First, it mentions **The Song of Moses** and, also, **The Song of The Lamb** (Revelation 15:3). Amazingly, *The Bible* has *The Song of Moses*. This song is for the whole world and the entire earth will hear it. This song is a prophecy about Israel and how they strayed from God and God's **way** (Deuteronomy 32:1). God abhorred what Israel had become. God warns what Israel's **end** would be. God is angry and the unrepentant Israelites go into **The Lake of Fire** (Deuteronomy 32:19-22). Their **vine** (grapes) is like Sodom and Gomorrah and their grapes are **grapes of gall** – bitter and wild (Verse 32). Their vine is the poison of dragons and a poisonous snake (Satan) (Verse 33). This is *The Song of Moses*. Those who come out of The Grape Harvest (God's **wrath**) come out of The Lake of Fire – REPENTED. These are The Israelites.

*The Lamb's Song* is about those left, The Gentiles, who repent and sing, "**Great and marvelous are thy works, Lord God Almighty; just and true are thy ways, thou King of saints.**" This Grape Harvest includes everyone **ever** born (Revelation 15:3). "**Who**

**shall not fear thee, O Lord, and glorify thy name? For thou only art holy: for all nations shall come and worship before thee; for thy judgments are made manifest”** (Revelation 15:4). Compare this with Ephesians 1:10 and Philippians 2:9-11.

In the Greek, the word for “nations” is not “*cosmos*,” “the world,” but “*ethnos*” which means “all the races of the world.” NO ONE LEFT OUT. God and His Son will not lose any of you – even when you are duped into following the worldly ways of Satan. EVENTUALLY, EVERYONE WILL BE SAVED.



## CHAPTER 8

### THE MIND OF CHRIST

God's "kingdom" with the rewards are based upon only one thing – your "spiritual growth." Salvation is a free gift, unearned and totally free, which will be given to you. *The Book of Revelation* is the uncovering or revelation of what rewards you will receive by your works. Those who have Christ "in them" (Colossians 1:27) are growing spiritually. The degree of "Christ's mind in you" determines your spiritual growth. The mind of Christ must dwell "in you" in order for you to achieve the rewards God has for you.

Too many Christian groups equate **the mind of Christ** with doctrinal beliefs. They use The Apostle Paul's statement in Philippians 2:5 as a wedge to make everyone in God's **church spiritually believing the same set of doctrines**. **The mind of Christ** has become a **tool** for too many churches to control God's people.

#### Parable Of The Ten Talents

Jesus compares The Kingdom of God to those who receive talents or money from an owner who goes on a trip to a far country for a long period of time (Matthew 25:14-30). His servants are given differing amounts of money. Some receive five talents, some two talents and another one talent. When the owner returns, the one he had given five talents had earned five more talents. The one with two had earned two more talents. The one who only received one

talent was afraid because he believed his owner was a hard man and he feared him. Instead of investing the one talent, he buried it in the ground. He was too afraid to earn more in case he would lose the only one talent he was given. The owner praised the one with five and the one with two talents. He praised both of them because they put their talents to work and increased or doubled what they were given. So the owner promoted those two over all he had. The one who buried his one talent because of his fear merely dug up the money and returned his one talent without any interest. His master was furious. He took away the one talent he was given and gave it to the one with ten talents. The servant was fired and removed to outer darkness. The owner or master demanded growth on his money. Unless a Christian grows **spiritually** and **continually**, the master will reject that servant.

The first point for you to understand is that not every Christian is at the same place of **spiritual understanding**. Secondly, the person with only one talent was afraid to grow. Many times a person thinks he has **all** the necessary or **required truth**. BIG MISTAKE! I remember a young man who grew up in a church from a little boy into his 30's. The **headquarters' church** eventually split into hundreds of different groups. Instead of studying *The Bible* and praying, he accepted the group that was closest to the one he grew up in. When questioned, he remarked, "I'm too tired to go to all that work trying to decipher which split group was closer to **the truth**." In other words, he was satisfied at the level he found himself. It was a comfort to him to hear all the same sermons, doctrines and works he was familiar with. He literally did not want to investigate if there was another level of growth he could attain to.

To be fair to this young man, he had personal trials – going through a divorce. His wife only married him to be able to come to The

United States. He had changed careers and then he was in a car accident that didn't allow him to drive for long periods. He had to move to be near his office. But, all is not lost. When his life settles, he will begin to grow in the knowledge of Jesus Christ as **new truth** hits him in the face.

When one feels they have **the truth**, it hinders future personal growth. The need for **spiritual growth** of thirty, forty and fifty times becomes a secondary reality. When you feel you have enough **truth** or literally satisfied with the knowledge you have, you may find Jesus expects much more dynamic growth from you than you may expect from yourself (Matthew 25:29-30).

## Jerusalem Conference

The Apostles were a good example of having different levels of **spiritual understanding** between themselves. The Pharisees (who believed in Christ), kept complaining, asking why the converted Gentiles are not circumcised and not keeping The Law of Moses. So, a conference had to be held with The Jerusalem Church, which included Church Elders and Apostles. The Pharisees, also, felt those Gentiles who weren't circumcised and not keeping The Law were also **not in the church** (Acts 15:1-24). The "**church teaching**" believed only Israelites should be in "**the church.**" This created quite a disagreement and caused arguments. If Gentiles could be part of The Commonwealth of Israel without being circumcised and not needing to keep The Law of Moses, then it caused a change of belief. But notice, "**the church**" accepted The Pharisees' disagreement even though the believing Pharisees and their followers were only a **sect** in "**the church.**" "Sect" in the Greek means "**a heretic.**" Even though they were heretics, "**the church**" did not demand their excommunication. In fact, they held a conference in reference to the various opinions of all The

Apostles, Elders and The Jerusalem Church in general. The reason the problem was settled peaceably was due to their listening to God's Holy Spirit by having **the mind of Christ**.

According to James, the outcome came about because The Apostles, The Elders and the entire Jerusalem Church agreed that ONLY ISRAELITE CHRISTIANS had to be circumcised and keep The Law of Moses. Why? Because **the temple** was **still there** with "**the shekinah**" and to be able to enter "**the temple**" **one had to be circumcised**. This existed until **the temple** was destroyed in 70 A.D. and *The Old Covenant ceased* and only *The New Covenant* existed after that time (Hebrews 8:13). It was decreed The Gentiles would receive The Holy Spirit without the need of circumcision or keeping The Law of Moses. This was NEW SPIRITUAL GROWTH and **A CHANGE OF CHURCH DOCTRINE**. They all had to grow by accepting the NEW TRUTH (Acts 15:24). In fact, some of Paul's ministers who served with Paul were part of **the circumcision party** (Colossians 4:11). But, realize, none of them were **at the same spiritual level**, yet still had **the mind of Christ**.

## Faith And Sin

Romans 14 is a great chapter proving THE DIFFERENT LEVELS of **spiritual growth** and understanding God allows to comprise "**the church**." Paul covers those who are weak or those who understood very little **spiritually** or even those who felt they knew what the whole truth was and felt they needed nothing more. It turned out some **weak** Christians believed they had to be vegetarians. Others believed they could eat anything. Then, there were others saying you must keep a specific day to please God; so, Paul admonished them to let each person be fully persuaded in their own mind with their own **spiritual level of growth**. Paul was

teaching an extremely important **spiritual lesson**.

The Apostle explains how you must stop judging one another **spiritually** (Romans 14:7-13). Paul contends you, as Christians, must never **offend anyone**. The point of this chapter is to prove Paul was referring to **the mind of Christ**. Paul summarizes, "... **for whatsoever is not of faith [or personal belief] is sin**" (Romans 14:23). Paul tells you at whatever **spiritual level** of belief or **faith** you are at, you **must** do what you believe God wants you to do! Your Christian duty is to try **not to offend anyone**. You, as Christians, must only be ready to answer with the hope that is in you when someone asks what and why you believe as you do (I Peter 3:15).

Peter asks what attitude you should have if someone asks you for **an answer** of your **faith**. Peter states you should answer in humility, being careful not to offend the one seeking or asking you. Peter, as well as Paul, refers to **the mind of Christ**. Both Apostles state as a Christian in God's **church**, you, as well as **everyone** else, may be at a **different level** of **spiritual understanding** and **truth**. It all depends upon whether you are **spiritually growing** or not and whether you are getting more of the mind of Christ.

## A Heretic

The Pharisees in **the church** were considered a **sect** or **heretic**. In the Greek, a "heretic" or "*haritikos*" is defined as "a separating tendency." That is why in Acts 15, The Pharisees were called a **sect** instead of defined as **schismatics**. Even though they had a doctrine or belief, they were not **schismatic** or **divisive**. In other words, they were **never** trying to cause a **split** in "**the church**." On the other hand, Paul said that a heretic, known to be subverted, sinning and self-condemned, after being admonished twice, should

be rejected (Titus 3:10). (Two strikes, and you're out). Why? Because it was a matter of trying to **split "the church."**

The Pharisees who were considered a **sect** or **heretical** weren't causing a split in "**the church.**" They had a different understanding. Once "**the church**" decided Gentiles did not have to be circumcised or keep The Law of Moses, The Pharisees could remain in "**the church.**" That is why Paul accepted his fellow minister, Justus, as his co-worker (Colossians 4:11). Justus believed Gentiles should be circumcised and should keep The Law of Moses; but Justus never caused any **schisms.**

## **The Body Or Church**

The Apostle Paul makes it extremely clear how "**church members**" in The Body of Christ should relate to each other (I Corinthians 12:22-27). Paul said those members who are the most **feeble** or **weak** must be given **more honor** because **they lack the spiritual knowledge** others had. Paul relates this in Romans 14. The difference is this, "**That there should be no schism, [or split] in the body [the church] but that the members should have the same care for one another**" (Verse 25). **Now, for the mind of Christ.** It matters not if everyone is believing exactly the same, doctrinally, because it is Christ and God's Holy Spirit, only, which brings you and everyone else to **the truth.**

## **Divisions And Splits**

What causes a schism in "**the body?**" Simply those trying to force their beliefs upon others. That is why "**churches**" split and divide. That is not **the mind of Christ.** Christians can be at varying levels of **spiritual understanding** and still be part of **the body.** The weaker Christians, who **only** have **the milk of the word,** can-

not swallow a large piece of **meat** or **the truth**. You need to grow at a pace God knows you are able to digest and grow as Christ leads you. You, as Christians, need to be careful that you do not offend the weaker ones in **the body**, but give honor and respect to everyone. Paul confirms this in I Corinthians 12.

What causes all the different denominations, groups and “**churches?**” Simply the **act of incorporation**. A letter of incorporation merely defines people as a **creed of belief** which does not allow **spiritual growth**. That is what Paul was against in II Corinthians 3. When you do not allow fellow-Christians to be at their own specific or different levels of **spiritual truth**, you are following Satan who wants to stop you and other Christians from growing by God’s Holy Spirit (as wise virgins) (Matthew 25). Your responsibility before God is to be ready to help those who are ready to seek your help by not offending anyone. Now, to prove what is **the mind of Christ**.

### **No Written Letter**

In II Corinthians 3:1-2 Paul said, “**Do we begin again to commend ourselves? or need we, as some other, epistles [letters] of commendation to you, or letters of commendation from you? Ye are our epistle written in our hearts [New Covenant], known and read of all men: Forasmuch as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ...**”

What is an “**incorporated church?**” An “**incorporated church**” is a group of people, who come together based upon a legal letter or epistle. Paul said **true Christians do not need a legal letter**. This legal letter is sent to the capital of their state so they can receive a stamped document as a declaration which states any number of members belong to that particular group, and thus al-

lowing them to be approved for incorporation. But Paul said just the opposite of what a **true Christian** needs to do. A stated **letter** or **epistle** limits your **spiritual growth**. How? Everyone in that **letter of incorporation** must be at **the same level of belief** or are not considered part of that group. Paul warned against such actions should they decide for themselves which minister they wanted to follow.

In I Corinthians 3:1 Paul states The Corinthians Church was carnal and they were only “babes” **spiritually**. He then explained why they were carnal (Verse 3). They had splits and divisions among them by choosing the minister they liked or “**the church**” of their choice (I Corinthians 3). Paul states all ministers are **Christians** if they are based upon Jesus, The Christ. He relates that all ministers’ teachings will be tested, ultimately, in The Lake of Fire. Ministers need to be extremely **careful** in all their teachings. If their preaching is false, it will **all burn**. Why? Christians are at **different levels of spiritual understanding**; so ministers and fellow **Christians** must all have **the mind of Christ**.

### CHRIST’S MIND

The **True Church of God** is not any incorporated group, but a **spiritual group** with God’s Holy Spirit leading Christians who are at different levels of **faith and growth**. It is not an incorporated group by any letter or certificate but is totally a **spiritual body** with Christ in them (Colossians 1:27). Each and every member can be growing in the grace and knowledge of Christ at different levels of understanding. So, what does it mean to have **the mind of Christ**? Read Philippians 2. Paul said if there be any comfort or fellowship (church group), it is by God’s **spirit** with bowels of mercies. There it is. BOWELS OF MERCY is what keeps God’s “**church**” as “**a body**” in fellowship. NOTHING ABOUT



CREEDS OR DOCTRINES. Jesus said everyone will know you are His Disciples because **you have love for one another** (John 13:35). No doctrine or creed is needed.

Paul said you are to be like-minded. How? By creeds and doctrines? No! By being of one accord and of **one mind**. He said every man should look not to his own good, but what is good for others (Philippians 2:2-4). “**Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus...**” What **mind**? (Philippians 2:5). Even though Jesus was The Son of God, He became your servant (Verses 6 and 7). That is **the mind of Christ**, to not cause splits or divisions or starting different church groups. **The mind of Christ** never causes splits or schisms over creeds or any doctrines. If Christ be “**in you**,” you are at a different level of **faith** from others in “**the church**.” Jesus said some of you have two talents, five or even ten talents. Your job is to increase the amount of talents God has given you.

## KNOWING THE TRUTH

Christians have God’s **love** (I John 5:16). As long as you love God and your neighbor, you would not be a sinner by even having THE THOUGHT OF BREAKING THE TEN COMMANDMENTS. You are Christ’s “*Epistle*” and it is written in your hearts. As long as you have **the mind of Christ**, being a servant, you won’t have any splits or differing groups.

## Spiritual Growth

Any inspired preaching by a **minister of the word** must be tested (I Corinthians 14:29-31). Each member, as an individual Christian, is to check all *Scriptures* the way The Bereans did. The Greek, in this case, is “*diakrino*” or “to try and separate.” Just as

The Bereans had to prove to themselves from *The Bible*, whether these things be so or true, and so should you (Acts 17:11). You do not **all** have the same amount of **spiritual knowledge**. You will not have schisms or splits in the body of Christ if you have **the mind of Christ** – serving others! Why did they search *The Scriptures*? Unless one continually studies *The Bible*, your level of **spiritual growth** will be limited or eventually stunted. Faith increases by The Word of God (Romans 10:17). The more one studies, the more one increases in **faith** and **spiritual growth**. As long as you have **the mind** of Christ, always attempting to serve others, you will always be of “**one body**” – **the “body**” of Christ! When everyone finally becomes **perfect**, as God is **perfect** and as Jesus admonished, you will eventually come to have the same amount of **spiritual understanding** and will truly know God as your only guide to SALVATION (I Corinthians 13:12).

## CHAPTER 9

### WHAT IS SIN?

**Most Christians want to avoid sin. Trouble is each Christian's denomination has its own "version of sin." Anyone who sins and then repents, their sin is forgiven. The less you sin, the better your life will be. Your spiritual growth continues to achieve your reward in God's "kingdom." Amazingly, sin for a Christian has a greater requirement than you might realize. You will discover what the definition of Christian "sin" is and a greater understanding about God and His "kingdom."**

God's "**word**" declares, "**Sin is the transgression of the Law**" (I John 3:4). Pretty clear, or so it seems. For many Christian groups, it is the verse which defines sin according to *The Bible*.

To commit murder is a sin. To steal is a sin. To covet a neighbor's goods is a sin. God's Laws define sin. Humans transgressing these Laws are sinning.

### Missing The Mark

More specifically, the question is, what does it **mean** to sin? In *The Bible*, the Greek word for "sin" has many **shades** of meanings. However, sin mainly conveys the meaning of "missing the mark." The question, which should be asked, is "missing **what** mark?" You will discover sin **varies** in **the mark** that is missed.

A “**mark**” is a target toward a goal one tries to achieve. “Missing the mark” or “sinning” can be different depending upon which group is doing the defining. What type of people are missing the mark when, indeed, they are obeying God’s Law? Always remember, sin is the transgression of The Law.

### **Using The Law Lawfully**

Surprisingly, God’s Law **was not given to everyone** as a legal requirement! Wait, don’t jump to conclusions. You must **scripturally prove** how God determines how you keep God’s Law for **the purpose God had always intended**. The Apostle Paul said many are busy teaching God’s Law but do not have a **complete understanding** of what **purpose**, initially, God had in giving His Law (I Timothy 1:7). God has a **specific reason** for giving His Holy Law to achieve a certain **mark** or **goal**. **Missing the mark** or **sinning** against God’s Law means one has come short of **fulfilling His Law** as He had intended. To claim to be a teacher of The Law and not know God’s reason for The Law is **missing the mark** or **sinning** by misleading many individuals.

### **Purpose Of The Law**

Paul states if one uses The Law as God **intends** then The Law is good (I Timothy 1:8). By using or keeping The Law for the **wrong purpose**, is “**missing the mark**.” Only using God’s Law as He intended makes The Law “good.” A person must use **The Law lawfully**, the way God intends; otherwise, he or she will be sinning.

Paul makes an amazing statement in I Timothy 1:9-10, “**Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for**

**unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers, For whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for menstealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine;”** Wow! There it is. It can’t be any simpler. God’s Law was not intended for **Christians or “repentant,” “converted people.”** Christians must have a different definition for **sin or missing the mark.**

## **Unrepentant Israel**

Paul said The Abrahamic Covenant came 430 years before The Law was given (Galatians 3:17). Abraham knew God’s Laws, but it wasn’t until **430 years** later that The Law was ratified with Israel for a very special reason (Genesis 26:5). At the time of Moses and Israel at Mount Sinai, God made The Law – **a covenant** or a **contract** with Israel. Only then, did The Law become **legally binding**. Remember, The Law not only had **blessings** but **cursings** to it. The Law now demanded **judgments** or **sentences** in a Court of Law in **the tabernacle** and **the temple** (I Kings 8:32). Israel ratified or agreed to keep every jot and tittle of it (Deuteronomy 30:19). Did you ever wonder why God enforced The Law with Israel as a legal requirement?

## **No Law, No Sin**

Even though God’s Laws were known prior to God’s **covenant** with Israel, God’s Law was not legally binding. What was the difference? In Romans 5:13, Paul said until The Law was legally binding upon Israel as *The Old Covenant* – sin or transgression of The Law **wasn’t imputed** or **legally** binding upon humanity because there was no Law with **judgments** or **cursings**. In Genesis 26:5, there were no **judgments** at the time of Abraham. If one

kept The Law, he or she would live a good human existence as Paul said in Galatians 3:12. He said if a man keeps The Law, he shall live in them. His life experiences will be great. However, if he didn't follow The Letter of The Law, there would not be a penalty or curse, but there would be consequences when they made bad choices – breaking any **commandment** or **statute**. Why did God institute **The Letter of The Law** as a binding, legal contract? In Galatians 3:19, Paul was inspired by God when he said The Law **was added** as a legal requirement for sin (I John 3:4), because after God gave The Ten Commandments, orally, Israel broke them. After they sinned, God added **the statutes** and **the judgments**, which made The Law a legal requirement for Israel (Malachi 4:4).

Notice, the same thing was mentioned in Deuteronomy 5:22 when God gave The Ten Commandments, He **added no more**. Only when they sinned He added to The Ten Commandments – The Statutes and Judgments (Deuteronomy 5:31-33). Because of Israel's sin, God made The **Letter** (written) Law legally binding in “a **court of Law**.” Sin or transgression of The Law was now **missing the mark** in keeping The Law. This legal contract was now binding upon Israel once they entered **the promised land** and it lasted **only** until The Messiah or Christ came (Galatians 3:19). When Christ did come, The Law once again would have no legal binding and there would not be the necessity for any **judgments** or **curse**s for **Christians** (Galatians 3:13).

When Christ came, the new Priesthood of Melchizedek removed the curses of The Law. The Law was changed under this **new administration**, which only gave **life** and **not death**. Keeping The Letter of The Law gave a **blessed human existence**, but **never promised salvation** (Deuteronomy 30:15-16). That is all keeping The Letter of The Law could ever do, which is the very reason

Abraham kept them – to have a decent life (Genesis 26:5). Then, why did God **bind The Law** as a legal entity? In Genesis 26:5, there were no Holy Days. They did not begin until Exodus 16 with The Sabbath, which started The Holy Days. These were all **shadows** for Israel.

In Deuteronomy 5:29, God answers, by saying if only there was such a **heart** in them, that they would fear me and keep My “**commandments**” **always**. Israel just couldn’t keep The Commandments because they were **unconverted** and **unrepentant and had a carnal heart**. That is why God made *The Old Covenant* of legally keeping The Letter of The Law with Israel. They were unrighteous, just as Paul said in I Timothy 1:7-10. The Law, in The Letter, to be used lawfully applies only to **unrighteous, unconverted, unrepentant** people. Therefore, I John 3:4 does not apply to Christians! The Law, in reference to sin or **missing the mark of the righteousness** of The Law is meaningless for **salvation**. The Law can never justify or make you **righteous**; nor could anyone ever expect **salvation**. Keeping The Letter of The Law only gives a good human existence.

## The Vail

After Israel sinned and Moses was returning the second time from Mount Sinai, his face was shining and the people were afraid and began to worry. Whenever Moses spoke to Israel, he put a vail covering his face. When he would go back and speak to God, Moses would remove the vail. What was the reason for this (Exodus 34:29-35)? Paul gives you the answer in II Corinthians 3:6-16. Paul revealed Moses wore the vail because the people were afraid to hear God speaking to them. They knew Moses had spoken to God when his face was shining so brilliantly. They did not understand God’s message. In II Corinthians 3:13 and 14, Paul said

Israel just did not understand God's reason for The Law. They couldn't understand *The Old Testament* or *The Torah* Law, which would have led them to Christ. The Law as a **legal contract** was to teach them they could never keep it and could only make them realize they had to **repent** (Galatians 3:24). They were carnal and weak in the flesh and all God wanted was for them to have a change of heart (Deuteronomy 5:29).

Instead, Israel thought The Law would make them "**righteous.**" Even if The Law with its sacrifices made them acceptable to God, The Law could never make them "**righteous.**" The Law only reminded them that they were, indeed, sinners. The Law became their "**righteousness**" (Deuteronomy 6:25) instead of relying on God's "**righteousness**" to lead them to "**perfection**" (Matthew 5:48) and be Holy as God is Holy (Ephesians 1:4).

Sin is the transgression of The Law (I John 3:4) for **carnal, unconverted, stiff necked** people. They could never, however, completely keep The Law. They, then, became transgressors of The Legal Law (James 2:10). They sinned and **missed the mark** in trying to keep God's Law **perfectly**. They had a wrong heart. Keeping The Law in The Letter could never and would never change their hearts. They could not become **righteous** or Holy as God by keeping The Law. **Sin**, as the **transgression of The Law**, legally only applies to carnal, unconverted, unrighteous people as Paul said in I Timothy 1:7-10. The definition of **sin for a Christian** is far more **demanding** than the transgression of The Law.

## The Offense

Once Jesus removed **the curse** of The Law with His **sacrifice**, The Law only became a way of living a good human existence. The Law has no dominion over **Christians** in The Letter (Romans



7:4-6). Sin now becomes a **spiritual matter** and not a **legal problem**. It changes the definition of what **sin is** for a Christian or a **repentant person**. The Apostle Paul goes back to the beginning of creation referring to Adam in The Garden of Eden. Paul states sin entered the world by **one man** – Adam. Since all have sinned, death passed upon all mankind (Romans 5:12-21).

In Romans 5:13, Paul makes an amazing statement concerning **sin**. Paul states that **sin was in the world** even though there was **no Law**. In Genesis 26:5, Abraham already knew God's Laws before The Law became a **legal covenant** with Israel. What did Paul mean? Simply, Paul went on and said **sin is not** imputed where there is **no Law**. One cannot **miss the mark** if there are no legal demands of a Law. Since The Law was not a legal requirement by God for 430 years after Abraham so **sin** had no law saying it was, indeed, "**a sin.**" There was **no legal requirement to not miss any mark**.

Adam's sin had nothing to do with a Law. Although Adam did not break any legal Law, his sin was still an **offense**. It caused an **injury to God**. Romans 5:14 states Adam's sin was a different similitude than legally breaking a Law or The Law.

Adam's transgression against God was eating of The Tree of Knowledge. Adam's sin had nothing to do with The Law. Therefore, in I John 3:4, the transgression of The Law, was not Adam's sin. Adam's sin was not against God's Law. Adam's sin and transgression was against God's command when he ate of The Tree of Good and Evil. The meaning of sin can change in relationship to the goal God wants you to achieve.

In this case, sin is called an offense and not a sin against a Law. Sin, in Adam's case, had a completely different definition than

the transgression of The Law. The word **sin** does not have a static definition. How plain, sin can vary within God's **purpose** and **plan**. God only wanted Adam to eat of The Tree of Life, God's Holy Spirit, without any Law.

The Law had no legal requirement at the time from Adam to Moses, even if The Law was known. The definition of sin had to do with an **offense** rather than the breaking of a Law. If no Law, there is no sin of The Law. It is still an **offense** to God as it **injures God** or His **creation** as well as mankind. That is why **The Great Commandment** is to LOVE God with all your heart, mind and body and to LOVE your neighbor as yourself.

Ultimately, any **offense** or **injury**, physically, mentally or **spiritually**, causes God an **injury**. Any **unrighteous act is missing God's mark**. It is still a sin in God's eyes without the transgression of The Law.

## Christian Sin

What is a **sin** for Christians? Missing the mark or sinning for a **Christian is a lot more demanding** than I John 3:4 or the transgression of The Law. Notice, Christ's comment when He said He did not come to destroy The Law but to fulfill it (Matthew 5:17-18). In fact, Christ continued and said that not one jot or tittle of The Law would pass till **all be fulfilled** or completed. The Greek word for "**fulfilled**" is "**teleroo**," which is "**completion of everything**." When The Law states it is to be "fulfilled," in the Greek, it does not mean "to do," or "keep" but "**to finish since it is full**." The Greek word "to do" or "to keep" is "**poeio**" not "**pleroo**." Jesus made an astonishing statement in Matthew 5:20, "**For I say unto you, that except your [Christian] righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall**

**in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven [God].”** Christ puts **sin** on a much deeper level than I John 3:4. What does Jesus mean by being more **righteous** than **the scribes** and Pharisees? The wages of sin in transgressing The Law brings death. **CHRISTIAN SINNING KEEPS ONE OUT OF GOD’S KINGDOM.**

The answer, **scripturally**, is given by Christ in the rest of Matthew 5 and culminating in Matthew 5:48. Jesus said, “The Law and The Ten Commandments, must now be written in your hearts.” If you do not steal, The Law states you are **righteous** (I John 3:4). To be in God’s “**kingdom**” (**salvation**), Jesus reveals you can’t even think it in **your mind to steal**. If one doesn’t steal, he doesn’t break The Law. Why the difference? Because as Paul stated in I Timothy 1:7-10, The Law is made only for **unrighteous** or **carnal people**. Carnal humans can only keep The Law in The Letter. The definition of sin for a Christian is a matter of **mind and heart** because The Christian is not carnal but has repented. The goal is **spiritual**, not of the flesh but of **the mind and heart**. For **Christians**, one cannot by human effort, ever please God (Romans 8:8). Therefore, I John 3:4 does not apply. It is completely a **spiritual matter** and that is why the real target or goal is Matthew 5:48, “**Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.**” That is your **Savior’s definition** of being **more righteous** than “**the scribes**” or Pharisees. Christians must become **PERFECT**.

The word “**perfect**” in the Greek is defined as “**blameless.**” When you strive to be **perfect** or **blameless**, you do not **miss any mark** or **sin**. They have hit the goal of **righteousness**. They have committed no offense to God or His **creation**. This is exactly as Adam’s offense when sin or missing the mark of The Law was not legally enforced even though known. The Law doesn’t change nature or make one **perfect**. Now, you **know** what **real Godly**

**righteousness is.** Read **the biblical definition** of sin for a **Christian**, “**All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not unto death**” (I John 5:17). Committing **any offense**, which **injures God, His creation or mankind**, in any way, whether in **mind, heart or physically**, is **missing the mark** or sinning. To offend someone in any possible way, should not even come into your thoughts, because even thinking about it, is **a sin**. God’s goal is that you become **Holy or perfect, blameless**, with God being “**all and in all**” (Ephesians 1:4 and I Corinthians 15:28). Transgressing The Law for a **Christian** is almost meaningless compared to **Christians** never even **thinking of sinning** let alone **literally sinning** (I John 3:4). Committing an **offense** keeps you out of **God’s “kingdom.”** How does God make this come to pass?

## **The Aim Of The Commandments**

Everything God does is to give you every chance to become **perfect** and Holy as God, by and through His Son, Jesus. “**The end [or aim] of ‘the commandment’ is charity [or LOVE]**” (I Timothy 1:5). The Ten Commandments were given to bring you to LOVE God and your neighbor from your very **heart**. Paul continues, “**out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned**” (I Timothy 1:5). This is far more than not sinning against The Letter of The Law. The Law never expected or demanded or could ever lead you to **perfection**.

The word “pure” in the Greek is a “catharsis” or “uncorrupt heart” or “good desires.” “Good” in the Greek is “beneficial” or a “profitable conscience.” Finally, FAITH that never **loses trust** in God and in His Son, Jesus. Remember, what is not of **faith** is **a sin** or **missing the mark**. This is a total change from a carnal (beast-like) nature to a Holy, Godly **nature**. This change is much, much more demanding than merely following **only** The Letter of The

Law. In Verse 6, Paul said some have turned aside from **the real purpose** of God's **plan** for you to become **perfect** and instead try to use The Letter of The Law to make you **perfect** or **righteous**. These people are ignorant of God's **purpose** for His Holy Law. The Law cannot make anyone **righteous**. It is meant for carnal people to change from having a stony heart to acquiring a heart of flesh and come to Christ (II Corinthians 3:1-5). The Law is for carnal people so they can, eventually, **repent** and be able to come to Christ.

### God "All In All"

Paul said if you LOVE God, you begin to understand God does everything for your good (Romans 8:28). Paul states when you LOVE your neighbor, it fulfills (pleroo) or completes God's Law (Romans 13:8). LOVE is the vehicle God uses and **not** The Letter of The Law, **to complete** or **fulfill** The Law (Romans 13:10). LOVE is God's tool to make you **perfect** (Colossians 3:14). It is simply God's Law shed abroad in your heart by God's LOVE (Romans 5:5). It is just what Christ said in Matthew 5:48. Finally, when Christ puts down all enemies, God will be **all and in all** (I Corinthians 15:28). Remember, GOD IS LOVE. Christian **sin** will no longer **miss the mark**. All **unrighteousness is sin** but God and all His Family and **creation** will be in LOVE and there will be **no hurt** or any offense in His "**kingdom**."

### God's Righteousness

Christian sin is defined as "**all unrighteousness**." Any offense or injury to God or His **creation** is "**missing the mark**" of God's "**righteousness**." How does God make you **righteous** as He is **righteous** and **perfect**? As expected, God gives His "**righteousness**" by His own **free choice**. It is a decision you, too, have to

make. That is why **repentance** is required. **Repentance** is your free choice to seek only God's "**will**" or His "**word.**" How does God do it?

Once you have REPENTED, your mind and heart will desire and only want to think, do and be, just as your Father and His Son, Jesus. What does God do at this point? When you have REPENTED and, by free choice, you had your mind open, which only God can open – this is an unmerited **gift** from Him. Romans 5:5 Paul said, God sheds His LOVE in your hearts by His Holy Spirit. God's Holy Spirit leads you to TRUTH or reality. No more carnal deception. You, now, have hearts (desires) and minds (pneuma) open to be taught **the truth** by God (John 17:17). WHAT TRUTH?

**The truth** is about God and His **creation**, which includes all mankind. God's Holy Spirit manifests God's **agapè** type of LOVE. LOVE, so strong, that the ONE giving that "love" gives all that God is – all His "**glory,**" **riches** and **righteousness**. God's **righteousness** is God's LOVE or **agapè**. **Ultimate giving** was "**the life**" His Son, Jesus, gave. This is the **mark or goal of God's righteousness**. This Glory of God is all His **goodness** and **riches** in Christ. Anything less is missing **the mark** or **Christian sin** (I John 5:17).

When God reveals His LOVE for you through His Holy Spirit, you grow in that LOVE as you discover more and more of His Holiness and "**goodness.**" Your "**love**" for God and His **creation** will escalate as you grow in Christ's **riches** until you achieve the stature and maturity of Christ (John 13:34-35). When you eventually receive a **spirit body** and your heart and mind is also **spiritual**, you will then be Holy, **perfect** or **blameless** as God, The Father. No Law or conditions will apply. You will, then, have complete liberty or freedom. Absolutely no restrictions or conditions (Ro-

mans 8). You will LOVE God and everyone He has created, **with all your heart and mind**. You will not commit any sin or offense because God's Law will be written in your heart and mind. You will be total **agàpè** – LOVE as GOD IS LOVE. THEN, WITH YOUR SPIRITUAL BODIES, YOU WILL BE PERFECT AND HAVE ACHIEVED THE MARK OF PERFECTION.

## Love Vs. Human Imagination

The Apostle Paul issues a warning for all Christians in II Corinthians 10:4-5. He said Christians must fight the war against carnality or being beast-like – with their human imaginations. What is human imagination? Paul continues and reveals that any human thought against God's **thoughts** must subject itself to Christ's **mind**. Paul relates Christians have warfare to fight your human mind or reasoning whenever it is contrary to God's thoughts. Why? In Matthew 15:19, Jesus said out of your hearts or desires, proceed evil thoughts. Just before the world flooded in Noah's time, He said humanity had come to the place that every thought in mankind's **imagination** produced nothing but **evil thoughts**. What is wrong with human imagination?

## Human Imagination

In Hebrew, in *The Old Testament*, the word for “human imagination” is “yester.” This word connotes “things framed.” It compares to a potter, who as an artist, “**framing whatever he chooses within his mind**.” This is what in contemporary art is known as **abstract art**. It has no restrictions, no discipline or standard. The abstract artist sets his own limits or standards. He is totally free to draw whatever he wants. The point is this type of artist determines his own **reality** or being TRUE to himself of what he desires to produce. God said that a human's heart (desire and

thoughts) following his own imaginations is evil from his youth up (Genesis 8:21). Why? From your birth, as long as you do not seek God's "**thoughts**," your imagination (given enough time), ends in evil. Why?

## **Human I.Q.**

The higher one's human intelligence or I.Q., the more ability for one to abstract or imagine reality or **truth** from his own point of view. In science, it is called a Human Paradigm or "**point of view**." In higher education, it is known as "**abstract reasoning**" or "**thinking outside of the box**." There are no standards, no restrictions or limitations except what the individual decides on his/her own as to what is "right" or "true." In the time of **The Judges**, Israel decided by themselves, "**what was right in THEIR own eyes**" (Judges 21:25). That is why God said it is those who are humble or poor, with limited thinking options, which grasp and understand **the truth** or reality. It is far easier when one does not have as many options to come to **repentance** as a child.

When babes are born, they are totally neutral. They know neither good nor evil. They are teachable. They are humble, ask questions and seek **truth**, which is why Jesus said, "you must become like a little child" (Mark 10:15). But, deep within you, yourself, is the real culprit. It is your flesh, trying to survive at any cost, which is an issue. Besides your flesh, the heart, your motivations and your desires begin to corrupt your thought processes as to manufacture any solution (good or bad) for survival. The desires of the heart are at the root of your problem.

God made you this way for a very **good reason**. Since God is Holy and is making you Holy, you must become as He is. And, eventually, with God as "**your coach**," you will be "**all and in**



**all**” with God, The Father (I Corinthians 15:28). Since God has total **free choice**, He can be whatever He chooses to be. God in His **perfection** wants to make you exactly the same way. One difference between God and humanity is **GOD IS THE ONLY STANDARD!** Anything less is not God or Holy or **perfect**. Only God has **life** to give.

Even by human effort keeping **the righteousness** of The Letter of The Law doesn't do it because it requires human effort to keep it and your **human effort** is too weak in the flesh (Galatians 4:9). You need God's "**righteousness**" in your heart and mind (Hebrews 10:16). Remember, Einstein's sentiment: "I only want God's **thoughts**; the rest are details." How do you get God's "**thoughts**?"

## **God's Thoughts**

Christ said in John 17:17, "**Thy Word is Truth.**" God's thoughts are **reality** or absolutely **the truth**. In Greek, the word for "truth" is "aletheia" or "verity," "certainty" or "absolute." That is why Jesus said in Matthew 4:4, "**Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God!**" There it is. How does God put His "**word**" in your heart and mind?

## **A Standard**

By now, you have proven **human reason** or **imagination** has no limits or standards to determine **right** from **wrong**. That is why God gave Israel The Letter of The Law as its standard of **righteousness**. However, keeping The Letter of The Law does not change anyone's carnal nature. Only God can do that. How does God bring it to pass? Once you know your imagination has no stan-

dards or limits for **judgment**; God tells you, through Christ, to use “**righteous judgment.**” How do you use “**righteous judgment?**”

In I Corinthians 10:5, Paul states Christians are to cast down every **imagination**. Here the Greek word is “logismos” or “what is humanly logical.” Human logic, continually, comes up with a host of solutions to any problem. *The Bible* refers to it as Babylon or confusion. Many differing languages, along with different cultures, cause many not to understand a standard of “**right**” and “**wrong**” when conversing in these languages or cultures. God, therefore, has created a standard, even with all the diversity of nationalities; and all will be united in harmony by this **one standard**.

With all the creative diversity, God has arranged for His family or His “**kingdom**” to have a FUTURE THAT HAS NO END. A future that entails discovering God and all His **riches** and **goodness**. These riches come through His Son, Jesus, as God’s **firstborn**. God states, The Firstborn Son is the beginning of His (God’s) “**strength**” (Deuteronomy 21:17). Since His Son is the beginning of God’s strength, you, also, as His family of Sons, add **your strength with The Son, Jesus** and all the **riches** in Christ. The creative reality is truly unlimited with **innumerable dimensions**, which at present, are only known by Christ and Your Father. How glorious and beyond human comprehension (I Corinthians 13:9-10). Now for THE STANDARD, which grants you to have His Laws written in your heart and mind. Paul said humans, at present, even with God’s “**word,**” can only know in part (I Corinthians 13:9). It is a discovery process, which evolves into a **set standard** or schoolmaster. What is it? You **already know it**, but how does God guarantee you will have His **righteousness** or Holy **goodness?**

Paul reveals an amazing reality when he said, “While in this child-

hood state, you learn **piece by piece.**” Then, “when you are **perfect** (Matthew 5:48), what you know, in part, will be done away” How? Paul reveals **agàpè LOVE** is the greatest **gift** from God. Why? Because God is “**love**” or completely giving and charitable (I Corinthians 13:11-13). God’s “**love**” is perfected in you by His “**word**” (I John 2:5). **LOVE IS THE STANDARD** that is missing from the carnal, unconverted minds and hearts. That is why Israel, being carnal, needed The Letter of The Law. Its imagination or human thoughts could only come to evil, when contrary to God’s “**word.**”

**LOVE – “agàpè love” is “total giving,” even at the cost of one’s life.** That is why The Great Commandment is to **love** God with all your heart, mind and body and **love** your neighbor as yourself, which makes you **perfect** or Holy as God. Why? Because God is **love** and that is what you are to become when He sheds His **love** abroad in your heart by His Holy Spirit (Romans 5:5). That is **THE MISSING STANDARD.** Once perfect, and you have God’s **love**, you will not sin; in fact, you cannot sin (I John 5:18). That is **the standard of righteous judgment**, which God will add to your heart. How simple, how clear. This takes absolute **faith** in the heavenly Father.

When God’s **love** takes over your **logic** or **thinking** process, all your creative choices become free to do whatever you wish. Total liberty and freedom. No Laws, no restrictions, no conditions. Through Christ, the whole **creation**, in His “**kingdom family,**” will create unbelievable riches and goodness because then God will be **ALL AND IN ALL.** **THE UNPARDONABLE SIN IS TO REJECT GOD, HIMSELF,** which is His **love** given by His Holy Spirit. **That is the sin unto death** (I John 5:16). When you have **GOD’S LOVE**, it will never enter your heart or mind to break any “**commandment**” or to cause any offense or injury to anyone, let

alone God.

## The Chosen And The Faithful

In Ephesians 1, Paul said The Christians at Ephesus are **chosen** and **faithful**. The **chosen** are THE SAINTS (Holy) who will be The Bride of Christ. The **faithful** (God fearers) will be The Guests at The Wedding Feast with Jesus as The Groom. As amazing as it seems, even those of The Jewish **faith** know The Letter of The Law does not make one “**righteous**.” In The Jewish religion to be **righteous**, one has to be a “**hassidim**” or a “**righteous one**.” To be a **God “fearer”** one has to be “**tsedaq**” or “**faithful**.” The word “**faithful**” in Hebrew is “**tsedaq**” and comes from Melchizedek or “**the faithful ones**.”

Whether in *The Old Testament* (The Scriptures) or *The New Testament*, you must become Holy or **perfect** as God. To fool yourself and not have **the love** (agapè) of God by His Holy Spirit is a **lack of faith**. One is not even a “**God fearer**” or “**tsedaq**” let alone becoming **righteous** as God or a “**hassidim**.” Christian sin is “**all unrighteousness is sin**” (I John 5:17). You must become Holy and **perfect** as your Heavenly Father, Almighty God. Anything else is not having God’s “**righteousness**.” Christians cannot be guilty of any offense to God or His Creation. **YOU EITHER HAVE THE LOVE OF GOD (AGAPÈ) SHED ABROAD IN YOUR HEARTS OR YOU HAVE MISSED THE MARK AND ARE SINNERS.**

## CHAPTER 10

# GOD'S REQUIREMENTS FOR CHRISTIAN SALVATION

**Your salvation will now be covered. Since everyone will be saved by Grace, what are the requirements and rewards for Christians? Those who do not meet the requirements will go in The Lake of Fire or “hell.”**

**To avoid The Lake of Fire and to be able to receive the greater rewards of God's “kingdom,” *The Bible* clearly reveals what each and every one of you must strive to become. You will finally know, biblically, who can and will achieve Christian salvation.**

Many Christians, striving for **salvation**, fall into two extreme groups. One group believes all you have to do is believe in Jesus Christ. You must believe in your heart and accept Jesus, as God's first begotten Son. In addition, you must know, for a certainty, Jesus' **sacrifice** paid for your sins, so you can be **saved**. This view can be termed the “**extreme liberals**.”

The second group consists of “**super conservatives**,” who believe a Christian must keep The Letter of The Law. The only **works** annulled are the offerings and sacrifices. Since Jesus was your sacrificial lamb, a Christian is not required to offer sacrifices. The rest of The Letter of The Law is incumbent upon Christians as a

requirement for **salvation**. Which group is right? **Scripturally**, you will find both are **right** and both are **wrong**.

## **God's Purpose**

What is the problem? Why are there such diverse ideas among Christians as to the requirements for **salvation**? The basic difficulty is they do not understand God's **purpose**. Once you know why God created the universe and all mankind, you will have a better foundational understanding to learn what Christians are required to do to be **saved**.

The following is a list of accepted beliefs by many Christian groups for **salvation**. They are accepted as God's **purpose** for humanity by many differing Christian groups. **THEY SEEM SIMILAR, YET ALL DIFFER IN SOME RESPECT.**

### **What Is God's Purpose For Humanity?**

- 1 Is God building a "**kingdom**?"
- 2 Is God building a "**family kingdom**?"
- 3 Is God creating sons and daughters to be in His "**kingdom**?"
- 4 Will God's "**kingdom**" be in **heaven**?
- 5 Will God's "**kingdom**" be on earth?
- 6 Is God's "**kingdom**" a physical "**kingdom**?"
- 7 Is God's "**kingdom**" a "**spiritual kingdom**?"

You must **biblically prove**, EXACTLY, according to God's "**word**," what God's **purpose** really is. Surprisingly, God's real **purpose** is **none** of those just mentioned.

God is creating a "**kingdom**" composed of "**spirit beings**" who will be His "**family**." This family will be on a new earth with God, The Father and His Son, Jesus.

This is the **message** of The *Gospel*. It is God's newsletter – **the good news** for His "**family kingdom**" on the new earth. However, this is not God's **full or complete purpose**. *The Scriptures* prove God's real **purpose** is to help all mankind. This will be the beginning of your understanding to know what you, as a Christian, will be required to do to receive **salvation**.

### **“All In All”**

God will reveal His entire **purpose** to you if you read all of Ephesians 1. From Verses 1-8, Paul states from the very beginning, before any physical creation, God PLANNED for you to be one of His Sons. God foreknew and preplanned all this. Then, Paul made an amazing statement, “**Having made known unto us the mystery of His will, according to his good pleasure which he hath purposed in himself. <sup>10</sup>That in the dispensation of the fullness of times [end-time] he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in him.**”

Do you understand the **magnitude** of Paul's statement? God is going to **SAVE EVERYONE**. This is an amazing revelation.

God, through Christ, intends to **save** His entire **creation**. That is why The Apostle Paul said God's entire **creation** is **groaning** and

waiting to become His Sons in Christ (Romans 8:21-22). Paul states this is a **mystery!** This mystery is why so many Christian groups differ in their understanding. Not everyone has **spiritually grown** to understand this puzzle or mystery. Paul does give the details of how Christ will **save** everyone (I Corinthians 15).

## I Corinthians 15

This is known as ‘The Resurrection Chapter.’ Some believed the resurrection had already passed while others believe there is no resurrection. Paul states Jesus was the first to be resurrected and Christians will be resurrected, later – every man in his own order (I Corinthians 15:20-28). Paul said just as all of Adam’s children died, they all will be **saved**; but God has a specific order or time table for each of you and all who have ever lived.

Paul said **the end-time** comes when Jesus defeats all of His Father’s enemies (Verse 24). The last enemy is death. Death will be abolished. Once death is finished, all the authority given to Christ, by God, is returned to God by Jesus. Why? Read Verse 28! Jesus gives all authority back to God, The Father, so **God may be “all and in all.”**

Scripturally, at the end, God’s **purpose** is for Him to be “**in everyone.**” Everyone in heaven and earth will be “**in Christ.**” God **saves** everyone, so God can be “**all and in all**” (Ephesians 1). **This is God’s biblical truth and purpose.** God is not only building a “**family kingdom of sons,**” but He is going to be personally “**in**” everyone.

God’s **purpose** is to make everyone Holy with God, Himself, dwelling in everyone by His Holy Spirit. God will actually be “**all and in all!**” This has been God’s **plan** or His **complete purpose.**



Since God's ultimate **purpose** is to be **all and in all**, how is God accomplishing this work of His? Jesus said, "**This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he has sent**" (John 6:29).

This is exactly what Paul wrote in Ephesians 1. Paul said at **the end-time**, God had predetermined that everyone in heaven and earth, will come to God, The Father. God will eventually be "**all and in all!**"

## Only Believe

One group, "**the liberals**," believe you don't have to do anything but just **believe** in order to have **salvation**. Just believe in Christ. That is all that is required. Jesus said, "**Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life.**" (John 6:47). There you have it. All a Christian has to do is **believe**. Nothing else is required.

The Work of God is to believe on Him whom He has sent. Whatever Christ states, you should believe Him. Prove, according to His "**word**," what Jesus is teaching you. Paul said in these **last-days** God has spoken to you by His Son (Hebrews 1:2). In times past, God spoke by The Prophets (Hebrews 1:1). Now, God, The Father, speaks to you by His Son. Christ will tell you **exactly** what you need to do. In Matthew 4:4, Jesus said, "**It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.**" So, just believing in Christ's name is **not enough**. Much more is required. What is required? God speaks through and by His Son, Jesus. You are to believe in everything Christ states. Jesus, The Christ, said you are to live by every Word of God. Jesus is speaking God's "**word**." Christ said, "**Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall**

**not come into condemnation; but is passed from death until life**” [Just to believe in Jesus is not enough] (John 5:24). One has to “**hear and understand every word**” that Jesus tells you.

Christ has the only answer. What did Jesus say is required to pass from death to **life** or **salvation**? The liberal view of Christianity is not enough. You must believe **Jesus’ “words”** which tell you what is required for **salvation** and, **biblically**, you must test the ultra-conservative view of what a Christian must do for **salvation**.

## **The Letter Of The Law**

The “**conservative**” Christian group, on the very far right, believes you must keep or do **The Letter of The Law**. *The Torah* or The Law includes *Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers* and *Deuteronomy*. Only the offerings and sacrifices are **not** to be kept. Why? Because Jesus was your “**sacrificial lamb**.” That is true, but is that all Christ came to do? Did Jesus come merely to keep The Law, fulfill and complete The Law?

The “Letter of The Law” in Greek means “gramma,” or “what is written.” It is *The First Five Books of The Old Testament*. These ultra-conservatives justify their belief by the following **scriptures**:

- 1 Matthew 5:17: Jesus said He did not come to destroy The Law, but fulfill it. Those advocating their agenda reiterate, “See, Jesus did not destroy The Law but came to keep it.”
- 2 Book of Acts: Those advocating keeping The Letter of The Law always tell you to read *The Book of Acts*. The Apostles kept The Holy Days.

Therefore, you must keep The Letter of The Law.

- 3 Genesis 26:5: Since The Law was not written or enforced until 430 years after Abraham, why did Abraham tithe and keep God's **commandments, charges and statutes**. The Law, therefore, was enforced before Moses. Therefore, Christians are required to keep The Law.
- 4 Exodus 18:16: Before The Ten Commandments were given at Mount Sinai, Moses was already teaching The Israelites all of God's **statutes**. The Law was known before Israel made **the covenant** with God to keep The Letter of The Law.
- 5 Matthew 23:3 and 23:23: Jesus said The Pharisees sit in Moses' seat and therefore, do all they say. In Verse 23 Christ said to keep The Law.

There you have it. Biblically proving, The Law was known and kept by Abraham before God gave it to Moses and Israel. Also, Moses taught **the statutes** before they came to Mount Sinai.

Jesus, also, said you are to keep The Law since The Pharisees sit in Moses' seat. Christians are, therefore, required to keep The Letter of The Law. In addition, I John 3:4 states, "**sin is the transgression of the law.**" Unless you keep The Letter of The Law, how are Christians to know what sin is?

This seems very logical and understandable as to why so many Christians believe they are required to keep The Letter of The Law.

## An Agenda

Before you **scripturally prove the truth**, it is helpful to be in a Godly state of mind or have **the mind of Christ**. In Philippians 2, to have Christ's **mind**: (1) You must take on the attitude of a servant and not as a master of **the truth**. (2) You must be willing to be teachable, as little children (Mark 10:14). (3) You, also, must realize mankind can only know in part. No one knows the **whole truth**. God reveals to each as Christ directs His "**body**" or "**the church**" (I Corinthians 13:12). (4) **You, as well as all other Christians, are at a different level of faith or belief** and must respect each other's level or position of belief.

Read all of Romans 14. Finally, Jesus said He speaks in mysteries about **God's "work"** (Matthew 13:11-12). However, those who diligently seek God (Acts 2) will have God's puzzle opened to their understanding. The **truth is one flawless, beautiful story**. Each **morsel of truth fits perfectly**. If one piece of your understanding doesn't fit, you are not rightly dividing The Word as Paul told Timothy (II Timothy 2:15). Keep praying and searching for **the truth** of God's "**word**."

As is evident in searching **the truth** in *The Bible*, you must not hold to a **personal agenda**. A **personal agenda** is when a person studies *The Bible* and approaches The Word of God; to prove what they already know or presently believe is **the truth!** But a servant, as a little child, wanting their Father's direction, studies *The Bible* to learn whatever it reveals even if it may contradict one's present belief. Do not allow your human mind to have its own imaginations. Instead, seek God's "**will**" and His "**word**" as revealed by His Son. Increase your **talents to two, five and ten** as Christ admonished (Matthew 25). Don't hide your one talent in the ground.

## Word Definitions

You are now almost ready to prove what God requires for a Christians' **salvation**. Your quest is to resolve what Christians must do to be **saved**. No other consideration is at stake, neither prophecy or whether having a happy human existence, or attempting to prove your personal beliefs, etc. **Salvation is the issue**, nothing else. Many discussions, by differing Christian groups over their faith are meaningless, as they do not stick or follow through to what is **required for salvation**. This is the only discussion. Nothing else. Your only quest should be to find out what you have to do to be **saved**!

## The Apostle Paul's Answer

The *Book of Galatians* deals personally with **salvation** and exactly what you must do, especially in regards to the keeping of The Letter of The Law and **circumcision**. Paul answers the claims by the ultra conservatives who demand **the keeping** of The Letter of The Law as a requirement for **salvation**.

## Definitions

To address Paul's clear explanation of "**the works**" and **deeds** of The Law **with circumcision**, requires you to define certain Greek meanings of words translated into English. Words such as **righteousness, perfect, justified, faith, works, deeds** and others.

As you study *The Bible* and read these terms, you may have been viewing their meanings in a very **general** or **generic** way. Yet, in reality, in Greek, these terms signify **precise** and very **defined meanings**. You must attempt to come to a common **understanding** of these words.

- 1 **Perfection:** Commonly, you would think the meaning is to be “without mistakes.” The Greek, carries the definition of “being without blame in a court of law.” It signified “being in court” and “being innocent.” You are, therefore, blameless (whether guilty or not), according to your repentance.
- 2 **Righteousness:** Normally, you would believe “righteousness” would mean “to do something perfectly” or “never making a mistake.” The Greek conveys “what is legally – just – whether mistakes have been made or not.”
- 3 **Justified:** The Greek, in this case, is closer to its generic understanding so “one had a right to do what they did, whether right or wrong.” “To be ‘justified’ is not to be held legally responsible.” “One is innocent, even though guilty.”
- 4 **Faith:** “Your point of view” or “how you choose to believe” or “what you believe” and “whether wrong or right, is not the issue.”
- 5 **Works and deeds:** Both English terms come from a Greek word, “ergon,” which means “any human effort” or “work.”

You will find all these words have to do with either **being on trial** or **going to court** (before God and Christ) to determine if one is committing a crime against God and/or is guilty of sin against **His standard of righteousness**. God’s **court** revolves around the **mercy seat** in God’s **temple**. **The true temple** is in heaven and

this **mercy seat** is occupied by God, The Father, and Jesus, The Christ or Melchizedek.

On earth, **the temple**, when in existence, was God's **throne** or **mercy seat**. It is an exact duplicate of **the true temple** in heaven. However, this **mercy seat**, on earth, only had God's presence, occasionally, when God's "**glory**" or "**shekinah**" was there. Inside this **mercy seat**, are two tables of stone or The Ark of The Covenant. In each case, in **heaven** or on **earth**, both relate to receiving mercy for a person's crimes or sins before God. You must **biblically prove**, what is **the purpose of the mercy seat**? The final definition is to understand why **God even had a temple on earth** and continues to have **one in heaven**.

When you read all of I Kings 8, you'll find Solomon's dedication prayer for **the temple** he built on earth. **The purpose of the temple** is where God judges His people, Israel, whether they are guilty or innocent regarding His Laws (I Kings 8:32). Clearly, **THE TEMPLE'S PURPOSE IS TO HAVE A PLACE TO WORSHIP GOD AND A PLACE TO RECEIVE MERCY OR FORGIVENESS OF ONE'S SINS OR CRIMES**. **The temple** on earth and, also, the one in heaven are **God's court houses** where people are indicted and are tried as to their guilt or innocence. **The temples** are **God's courts** – one for The Israelites and one for The Gentiles. All the questions about The Law revolve around God's **courts** and whether one is going to receive **mercy** for their crimes or found innocent, regardless of **guilt** or innocence.

**The temple** on earth has to do with one's guilt or innocence **while living this human existence**. **The court** or **temple** in heaven has to do with the final White Throne Judgment. Either way, **both temples** have mediators or attorneys for the defense as The Levitical Priesthood or The Melchizedek Priesthood. Now, to the

question of the requirements of The Law upon “**the Christian community.**”

## The Temple Court

Without understanding **the purpose of the temple**, which is a **courthouse**, where Israelites go to worship God and ask for mercy – there is no possibility of finding out how The Law of Moses, or *The Torah*, applies to Christians. Since it is God’s **purpose** to be **all and in all**, those who are **saved** become Holy as God is Holy. This is a family relationship (Hebrews 12:10). God chastises people **but only to bring them to the truth** (Hebrews 12:11). When Israel sinned by building the golden calf, God would no longer lead them into “**the promised land.**” From that point on, God had an **angel** lead them and judge them. This **angel**, as God’s **judge**, would give **no mercy** (Exodus 23:20-21). This necessitated **the tabernacle**, a **courthouse**, where God would **try** them for committing crimes against His Laws administered by Moses.

Originally, God, at Mount Horeb or Sinai, **verbally** gave them The Ten Commandments only **AND ADDED NO MORE** (Deuteronomy 5:22). At this point, The Law of Moses only **included The Ten Commandments**. All God wanted from Israel at this juncture, was for Israel to keep His Ten Commandments in **their hearts** and He wanted nothing more. Notice, The Ten Commandments are in **the mercy seat**. One’s guilt or innocence is based upon The Ten Commandments alone. **The Letter of The Law** only **reminded** them they are **still sinners**. Keeping The Letter of The Law did not give mercy.

Once Israel sinned and because Moses pleaded not to have God **slay them**, God instituted a legal system of **works and deeds**. God made them pay penalties such as animal sacrifices or, if a



heinous crime, they were put to death. This was the only way Israel could be God's **witness**. This court system with its legal demands was intended to bring Israel to repentance or to Christ, The Messiah.

The Law of Moses not only included The Ten Commandments, but, now, the added **statutes** and **judgments** and became **the judicial system** in **the tabernacle** (Malachi 4:4). It was Israel's chance to plead for mercy or acceptance by works.

The Levitical Priesthood was their intermediaries or defense attorneys, enabling them to settle out of court, by offering sacrifices, which was a reminder they had sinned.

### **The Mercy Seat**

**The tabernacle** or God's **court** for Israel was based upon the principle of receiving mercy or **settling** out of court (I Kings 8:32). God's angel, however, offered no mercy (Exodus 23:20-21). How could an Israelite, who was guilty of breaking God's Law, get mercy? Only by having access to **the mercy seat**. No one, however, could go into The Holy of Holies except The High Priest and only once a year on The Day of Atonement. Even, The High Priest couldn't have direct contact to **the mercy seat** because the two angelic cherubs guarded it just as they protected The Tree of Life in The Garden of Eden. No one could have contact with "the ark" to receive mercy. Until Christ came, the way into The Holy of Holies wasn't possible. Mercy only came after Christ died.

In "the ark" only the two tables of stone containing The Ten Commandments were there – nothing else. **The mercy seat** was placed right over this "**ark**." The only way **mercy** could be obtained in God's **court** was by keeping The Ten Commandments. However,

these **ten commandments** were written in stone because Israel was carnal and had a stony heart or were not repentant (II Corinthians 3:3). This is why The Israelites could never receive mercy from God, as long as they kept The Ten Commandments in The Letter, but without a **right heart**. (Read Chapter 9, ‘*What Is Sin?*’) **The court**, therefore, always required “**an eye for an eye**” or “**a tooth for a tooth**” – and absolutely **no** mercy!

The reason God does not give **salvation** or grace to those keeping The Letter of The Law is because they had and still have a wrong heart. The Apostle Paul said by keeping The Letter of The Law you would only receive death. Paul stated The Letter kills but keeping The Law in “**the spirit**” gives **life** (II Corinthians 3:6). This is why **the angel** gave no mercy. You must keep **the commandments spiritually**. Keeping The Ten Commandments, in The Letter only, is not good enough! Only by keeping The Ten Commandments, **with a right heart**, gets mercy! Keeping The Letter of The Law only allowed a good human existence but **no salvation!**

God told Israel in Deuteronomy 5, “**29O that there were such an heart in them, that they would fear me, and keep all my commandments always, that it might be well with them, and with their children for ever!**” That includes eternal life or salvation.

That is the only way to receive mercy from God and be saved. Nothing else is required. After God gave Israel The Ten Commandments, He added nothing more. Pretty plain and, as usual, simple to understand. That is all God ever demanded for salvation.

## **God’s Court Of Law**

First, you need to understand God’s legal terms in His **court** or

**temple.** In too many cases, you could make a giant mistake, especially when the conservatives try to defend themselves in **court** without an attorney or mediator who understands The Law and its legal meaning. If you go before God for “**mercy**” it is wise to be knowledgeable about the rules of conduct in God’s **court**. Just as you have defined certain terms for righteousness, you must understand the **legal definitions**, to know when asking God to forgive you – in His **court** or **temple**.

- 1 **Holy:** The Greek word is “hagios.” The definitions are “blameless,” “purified” or “without blemish” or “spot.” “To be Holy” is “not to have a **spec** of uncleanness or sin.” “Totally pure.” Absolutely PERFECT, without a spec of error or being wrong. A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump. Not a spec, only completely Holy (I Corinthians 15:6).
- 2 **Sin:** The Greek word is “hamartia,” meaning “an offence” or “to miss the mark.” One has caused “an offence” to someone or something, and therefore, “missed the mark” or “sinned.”
- 3 **Offence:** The Greek word is “paraptoma,” meaning “a slip,” “lapse” or “deviation” – “an error.” To cause an offence to someone or **something** is “to make a slip” or “error towards that person or thing.” It is “causing an injury” or “some sort of harm.”
- 4 **Transgression:** The Greek word is “parabasis.” The definition is a “violation” or “breaking of The Law,” **that is, a Law which is legally binding in**

### **a court of Law.**

- 5 **Debt:** The word in Greek is “opheilema” translating to “something owed” or “due.”
- 6 **Perfect:** The Greek word is “telios” and can mean “fully mature” or “be complete” or “full age.” It does not mean “to do” or “keep” or “be without mistakes.”
- 7 **Mercy:** The Greek word is “elchos,” meaning “compassion” or “tender hearted.”

What happens in **court**?

## **Christian Court**

In I Peter 4:17, Peter said **judgment** or a Christian’s trial is now in this present, human life. (Romans 5 discusses this entire subject). Paul said Christians are justified or legally innocent in God’s eyes because of **faith** (Verse 1). You can, therefore, have peace with God and Jesus Christ, as your Mediator and Defense Attorney. Notice, no law requirement or debt or sentence needs to be paid. You are made **legally righteous** by **faith** and God is not offended by you **when you repent**. God sees no error or guilt in you. You have **atonement** or **acceptance** and have received mercy from God (Verse 11).

Now, to learn the history of sin. Sin, or **missing the mark** or **to be accepted** was due to Adam by his sin or **offense** to God. He was, therefore, **guilty**. Adam did **not break God’s Laws**, but **disobeyed** God, and therefore, **spiritually broke The Fifth Commandment**. Adam had a choice between The Tree of Life and

The Tree of Knowledge. His sin was **not** a **breaking** of The **Letter** of The **Law** as there was no legal requirement of The Law. It was because Adam **spiritually** broke The Fifth Commandment, he sinned or “**missed the mark**.” Without Christ’s sacrifice, Adam received the penalty of **death**. Death passed on through Adam and Eve’s progeny even though everyone since then had sinned and deserved death. In Romans 5:13, Paul said, “when there is **no Law, sin or missing the mark, is not imputed** – there is no Law.” Adam did not break The Letter of The Law because **it did not exist**. He broke it **spiritually, only**. So, **sin, missing the mark** or causing an **offence**, is not a **transgression** and has no **debt, penalty** or anything **owed**. Amazingly, one can sin and not be **guilty** before God’s **court** unless a Law is in force. Throughout history, it is the same in most nations. Without a Law, sin doesn’t carry a penalty. God certainly had a wonderful **plan**. Since the world is carnal, **nations require laws** in order for their citizens to live in a somewhat **civilized society**. Since humans aren’t Holy, there has to be Laws. Laws are only required for carnal, unrepentant people, so they can finally **repent** and come to Christ.

Paul called Adam’s sin an **offense** and his **transgression** or **debt** of **death** was not caused by breaking any Letter of a Law in any **court**. Romans 5:15 states you have a **free gift** or **grace** by Jesus, The Christ. As Christians, to commit an **offense** is sin, without any Letter of The Law (I John 5:17). **Righteousness** or what is legally **just** for a Christian is Christ “in you” (Verse 17). His “**righteousness**” or being “**just**” is **His free gift** or **grace** given to everyone (Verse 18).

The Letter of The Law was put in force as a legal requirement to receive mercy so you could understand you are **guilty** of **sin**; and therefore, are **transgressors** and do **owe a debt** (Verse 20). That is what **repentance** is all about. Israel was **carnal** and never

**repented.** The Law, legally, in The Letter, could only produce **death.** Once a Christian repents and has God's Holy Spirit, that Christian is dead to any of the **legal** requirements of The Letter of The Law. Once you have God's Holy Spirit, any and every **offense** is sin. That is what Romans 7 is all about. Read it. Once you die with Christ, you no longer have any legal demands levied by The Letter of The Law in God's **court.** This is the reason there is no White Throne Judgment in God's **heavenly temple or court for Christians.** Now, for Christian's, **grace** (a gift) reigns through **righteousness** or being legally **just** by Jesus. How plain and clear. The Letter of The Law with its legal requirements no longer applies to Christians, even when you sin, **as long as you repent.**

## Galatians

Paul clears up the legal claim of *The Old Covenant* requiring the keeping of The Letter of The Law as having any hold or requirement upon Christians. He was so disturbed about this problem of circumcision and The Letter of The Law that Paul personally wrote his **epistle** in his own hand (Galatians 6:11). Paul absolutely wanted Christians to know there are NO LEGAL REQUIREMENTS, whereby God expects Christians to keep The Letter of The Law, in order to be **saved** or to be **righteous.**

Galatians 3 spells out God's **requirements** very clearly for Christianity in regard to **salvation** and **righteousness** (being blameless). Paul said The Galatians were **fools** not to believe **the truth** concerning **salvation** (Verse 1). He said, "Did you Galatians receive God's Holy Spirit by faith or by keeping The Law" (Verse 2)? This is the whole point. Once you are begotten with God's **Holy Spirit**, you are **then** a **Son** and have **the inheritance.** God literally writes HIS Law in your heart and mind. You will see this

is the vital point about keeping or **not** keeping The Letter of **The Law**. You are now an **heir** and no longer need The Law. To fully comprehend this, read Galatians 4. Then, in Galatians 3:3 Paul said, “**Are you so foolish?**” You became a Son of God by “**the spirit.**” Do you, now, think you are going to become **perfect** or **blameless by the flesh**, trying by your own human effort, to be **righteous** or trying to be accounted **just**? “**He therefore that ministereth to you in the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doeth he it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith**” (Verse 5)? Paul, now, brings in Abraham. He reveals Abraham **believed God** and that is what **made Abraham righteous** or “legally **just**” and “**acceptable**” by God. It was Abraham’s **faith** that was **counted** as **righteousness** (Verse 6).

Abraham kept God’s **commandments, charges and statutes** (Genesis 26:5). None of which made Abraham **righteous** but he did have **faith**. The Apostle Paul said the same thing about himself in Philippians 3:6. He said he kept The Law blamelessly, just as Abraham did. Paul said all his **law keeping** was regarded as a loss (Verse 7). Keeping The Letter of The Law was **all for nothing** if by keeping The Law, you expect **salvation**. The Law only produced a good, decent human life. Once you are **spiritual**, with God’s Holy Spirit, you are no longer in the flesh and need no human laws.

Paul continued by saying of his **own righteousness** which is of The Law, did not give him God’s **righteousness** to be **just** or **acceptable** to Him. Only **faith** in Christ accomplishes this (Philippians 3:9). As long as Paul relied on becoming **righteous** by the works of his human effort to keep The Law, it did not please God. Paul said all human effort (in the flesh) never pleases God (Romans 8:8). Only by **faith**, in Christ, do you **become righteous**. That is exactly what made Abraham **righteous**. God must be **all**

**and in all** for you to become like God. The Law and all its works by human effort cannot do it for you, because, in The Letter, these works only apply to carnal human beings who are only starting to come to learn about Christ.

Now, to understand some very **misunderstood** scriptures. What are The Works of The Law? “Works” in Greek is “ergon” or “labor.” Therefore, erroneously, many believe “**the works**” Paul spoke of, were the sacrifices because it took “work” to sacrifice an animal. It is **true**; sacrifice does have to do with “**works**” of The Law, but there is much more to **Works of The Law**. You must let *The Bible* define The Works of The Law.

Scripturally, Galatians 3:10 reveals **The Works of The Law**. “**10For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the Book of The Law to do them.**” What are **the works**? **The works** are everything written in *The Book of The Law*. The works include the entire book or Letter of The Law. Paul clearly explains it. All human efforts to keep The Letter of The Law puts a person **under the curse** of **The Law**! It is vital you read Galatians 3. The Law never justifies or makes you legally acceptable to God (Verse 11). You can keep all The Laws in The Letter, perfectly, as Abraham and Paul, and you are still guilty of your sins.

Paul said no man is **justified** or **forgiven** of his sins because forgiveness of sins only comes by **faith in Christ**. Just as Abraham and Paul understood it (Verse 12). But, if a person wants to live by or keep The Law, it’s okay because it, definitely, will give you a good human existence, but it will never give you **salvation**. That is why keeping The Letter of The Law never pleases God. God only wants you to be in “**the spirit**.” However, keeping The



Whole Law will never give you **salvation**. It just is not required for Christians. The person keeping The Letter of The Law can only expect the blessings of a good human existence such as good health, safety, prosperity and a long human existence, but does not please God or give you **salvation**.

Paul relates that Jesus **redeemed** you from the curse of The Law and now the blessings you have, do not come from The Law, but through **the promise** given to Abraham through Christ (Verses 13 and 14). Not the blessings of The Law but only THE BLESSINGS OF SALVATION THROUGH CHRIST. In God's **court** or **temple** the judgment was based upon the blessings and cursings and on how completely you kept The Letter of The Law. In Christ, the cursings are gone and now the blessings come through Abraham and **the promise** of your **inheritance** of God's Holy Spirit. There you have it. Now, put the entire story together so you know how God becomes **ALL AND IN ALL** "in you" through and by His Son, Jesus, The Christ.

### **Israel – God's Witness**

Why did God change The Priesthood from Melchizedek, a Priesthood, which loved **righteousness** and was based totally upon **faith** to The Levitical Priesthood based on human works? It happened after Israel sinned. When they built the golden calf, God instituted The Priesthood of The Levites, under Aaron, as High Priest. In Exodus 32:9, when Israel built the golden calf, God said, "**And the Lord said unto Moses, I have seen this people, and, behold, it is a stiffnecked people**" [They were a carnal people]. "<sup>10</sup>**Now therefore let me alone, that my wrath may wax hot against them, and that I may consume them: and I will make of thee a great nation.**" Because of their sins, God was going to put all Israelites to death except The Tribe of Levi. Then Moses inter-

ceded as Israel's defense attorney and said The Egyptians, now will say that God brought Israel out of Egypt to put them to death rather than be God's **chosen people**. Moses brought up an excellent point.

God must keep His **promise** to deliver His people by creating a legal system that allowed them while still being a carnal people, with wrong hearts to still be His **witness** as His **chosen nation** to the world. A **new agreement** was entered into, between God and His people – *The Old Covenant* or *The Old Testament*. It was a system which recognized they were, indeed, **carnal** and **unconverted**.

It was legislated by a **court** or **the tabernacle**, which had a new defense attorney, The Levites, to intercede for them. Now, God's Law, also, included, **judgments**, the **curses** or a **sentence**. Israel could still be a **witness to the world** and still pay the penalty of death if and when **capital sin** was committed. For breaking The Ten Commandments, the guilty Israelite would be killed. This kept Israel sinless and still kept them a **righteous** nation to be His **witness**.

This was a perfect solution to the point Moses made. This *Old Covenant* was never made with Israel's fathers because they had a **right heart**. They were carnal or still not begotten with God's **spirit**. Therefore, their Priesthood under Melchizedek was based on **faith** with **no legal requirements** or judgments. This Old Covenant or *Old Testament* demanded a carnal priesthood, with carnal commandments for human life with only penalties or judgments (Hebrews 7:15).

Finally, this **legal court** system, based upon carnal people, would finally lead stiff-necked people to Christ. It was a "**just system**"

which **continued God's plan perfectly**.

## Old Covenant Ratified

Hebrews 9:16-22 gives the history of *The Covenant* or contract made with Israel at Sinai. Paul said, "a **testament**" ("a will" or legal contract), to be in force, **the testator or "will-giver"** has to have died. This *Covenant* or "**will**" becomes a legal contract in court. A "**will**" has conditions and to understand its benefits, one must keep the stated requirements. The "**will**" is in force when blood or death ratifies the contract. Moses covered all the conditions of The Letter of The Law, and then, took blood from the sacrifices of calves and goats and sprinkled both the book and all the people (Hebrews 9:19-22). Why?

Hebrews 7:15 states this "**commandment**" was a **carnal** one for **carnal** people (I Timothy 1:7-10). The animals signified people who were carnal (beast-like, **sarx**). These unconverted Israelites, with their wrong hearts and with the spilling of animal's blood, acknowledged (when guilty) they were, indeed, still sinners. That is why animal's blood was used. It proved The Israelites were still carnal or beast-like. Therefore, this **agreement** or **covenant**, never could forgive their sins. It only reminded them that they were still sinners. The Letter of The Law spelled out what conditions, of "**the will**," they broke. NO SALVATION OR FORGIVENESS OF SIN WAS EVER PART OF THIS *OLD COVENANT* WITH ISRAEL. This **testament** was administered by **Moses** as **Judge** and **The Levites** as **Priests** or **the defense attorneys** for the people. There is no remission of sins without blood. This remission was not forgiveness, only a reminder they were still sinners (Hebrews 7:22). One who believes they must keep The Letter of The Law to be forgiven of sin never qualifies for mercy by Christ's **blood**. They are faithless and still guilty.

Just before Moses died and Joshua replaced him as Judge, Moses had restated the conditions, benefits and the curses. These are known as the blessings and cursings of this *Old Covenant*. If they kept the full Letter of “**the commandments, statutes and judgments,**” they would be blessed in “**the promised land**” with prosperity, a long, healthy, safe life, but never **eternal life or salvation**. This agreement only promised a great, successful human existence. They, however, had to keep every detail of it (Deuteronomy 30:17-20). And, the people all agreed (Deuteronomy 5:32-33 and Deuteronomy 5:27-29). That is why one cannot keep only parts of The Law (James 2:10). One would then be unrighteous according to The Law. This *Old Covenant* or “**will**” was made only for carnal, unrighteous people who would seek forgiveness in God’s **court, the temple or tabernacle** (I Timothy 1:7-10). This type of agreement had never been made before with any other group of God’s people, such as Abraham or Adam and Eve. The Melchizedek Priesthood was different than The Levitical Priesthood. With Melchizedek, one could obtain God’s **blessing of righteousness** without The Law. Righteousness, with Melchizedek, came by **faith – no legal Law**. Christians cannot **offend anyone** – whether a neighbor, a co-worker or God.

God had instituted many **covenants** with mankind. With The Priesthood of Melchizedek, one could receive **righteousness by faith** without any Works of The Law (Galatians 3:6 and Hebrews 11:8-10). The Levitical Priesthood could only **point** to forgiveness and **salvation** (Galatians 3:24). The Levitical Priesthood could not forgive sin or give **salvation**. Animal sacrifices were made when they broke any of **the statutes**. The reason for the animal sacrifices was always a reminder to them they were still carnal or beast-like. The Holy Days, also, were **shadows** to be kept, to remind them they needed The Messiah, Christ, to fulfill God’s **plan of salvation**. These **shadows** only prophesied things to come,

which was The Christ (Colossians 2:16-17). WITHOUT GOD'S COURT, THE HOLY DAYS DO NOT HAVE TO BE KEPT. Holy Days have nothing to do with sin; they only represent a **shadow** of Christ. Once Jesus came and fulfilled **salvation** for Christians, they were **redeemed** and received their **inheritance** (Ephesians 1). All these legal "**works**" and "**deeds**" no longer were necessary because "**in Christ**," they are fulfilled. The Chapter on '*The Covenants*' in *God's Puzzle Solved* goes into further detail.

## Choice

Have you ever wondered why God did not put Cain to death for murdering Abel? Very simply, there was no **legal law** to condemn Cain. Nevertheless, he was banished from God's presence. Paul said sin is **not imputed** when there is **no Law** (Romans 5). The legal requirement of The Law did not happen until Israel made that **covenant** with God at Mount Sinai. The Greek word for "impute" is "ellogeo." Its full meaning refers to "put on account." Paul is telling you when there is **no written** or **Letter of The Law in force, you can sin, but not be held accountable for the crime**. Again, it is exactly what is done in **court** today, such as committing a crime, but there is no law against it. One may commit an **offense** (do injury) and they have **sinned** or **missed the mark** by **not doing righteousness**, but it is **not a transgression** because there is **no law**. Therefore, there is **no debt** to pay. That is why God did not kill Cain for murdering Abel. There was no **legal Law** in force. Adam and Eve knew God's **commandments** and **statutes**, but as yet, were not made into a legal Law. Adam and Eve had a **covenant of choice**, "**life**" or "**death**." There was no Law as a **legal requirement** to make it a transgression with a debt. The only **condition** for Adam and Eve to have **salvation** was to eat of The Tree of Life and not of The Tree of Knowledge. The Law, as yet, was not legally necessary. It is that simple.

## GENESIS 26:5

Now, you can deal with the reasons Abraham kept God's **commandments**, **charges** and **statutes**. You will clearly understand why Abraham tithed to Melchizedek and kept **the commandments** and **statutes**, which at this juncture, did **not** make Abraham **righteous** – only **faith** did. The question to ask is why Genesis 26:5 makes no mention of **judgments**.

Before The Levitical Priesthood, Abraham, who was **blessed** by Melchizedek – The King of Righteousness – considered Abraham **righteous** only because of his **faith** and not by keeping God's **commandments** or **statutes**. Remember, Moses taught The Israelites, before they came to Mount Sinai, to keep God's **statutes** but again **no judgments** were given. Why? Simply because **judgments** are only enforced when Laws are **legally required**. The **judgments** in Hebrew require **a sentence or penalty for breaking The Law**. Up to this point, in Abraham's time, in Adam and Eve's time or in Israel's time before they received *The Old Covenant* or *Old Testament*, there was **no Law legally required**; therefore, no judgments **or transgressions or debts**. Only after God imposed His **court-house** and **the tabernacle**, did **the commandments** and **statutes** become a **written** Law with legal demands. **No judgments** up to this point. Once The Covenant was enforced by blood sacrifices, it was in force with **all the judgments** or curses. Now, they had a choice of a good human existence in **the promised land** or they would be left with a curse. That was The New Law, The Letter or legal requirement of blessings and cursings (Deuteronomy 30). Why? Because they sinned and were carnal, with a **wrong heart**, He gave them over to Moloch and the pagan star, Remphan. They were carnal with carnal commandments and carnal ways (Hebrews 7:15) to come to Christ and eventually **REPENT**. Otherwise, there was **no mercy** or forgiveness.

## No Inheritance

Why did Abraham tithe to Melchizedek and keep **the commandments** and **statutes**? Because Abraham knew “**the promised seed**,” Christ, would come **in the future** and so, as yet, he had not received **the inheritance of God's Holy Spirit** (Hebrews 11). Abraham continued to offer **sacrifices**, because he knew he was still **carnal** and only received grace or **righteousness by faith**. Abraham had a right heart but no begetting of God's Holy Spirit. He was not, as yet, a Begotten Son of God. He gave tithes to Melchizedek because he had **no inheritance** and therefore, still had to offer animal sacrifices. He **knew he was carnal** and until Christ gave The Holy Spirit, Abraham was unconverted, although he had a right heart.

Now for a surprise. The Hebrew word for “statute” in Genesis 26:5 is different than the Hebrew word for “statute” under The *Old Covenant* made with Israel. The word for “statute” in Genesis 26:5 and Exodus 18 are the same, but not after God made **the covenant** with Israel.

In Genesis 26:5 and Exodus 18, the Hebrew word for “statute” is “chaq.” This word is in the **feminine** form, which means “customs,” “ordinances” or “statutes.” As a feminine derivation, it carries the meaning of “preservation” or “prosperity.” In the feminine gender, it is not mandatory, as laws in a court. They are **not a requirement** but it is a **free-will choice** – not a demand. They promised a good human existence guiding them towards a long life and prosperity. That is why Abraham tithed to Melchizedek and it was his choice to keep **the commandments** and **statutes**. It **proved** Abraham's **faith** that he trusted only God for his prosperity and a good human existence, without **salvation**. Abraham knew he was still **carnal** and hadn't received **the inheritance** of



God's Holy Spirit. That wouldn't happen until Christ came. That is what they "shadowed" or "prophesied." Abraham continued sacrificing because he knew he was still carnal. Abraham was **led** by **God's Spirit** as a **Prophet** but **not begotten** by God's **Spirit** as a Son.

This is why Jacob made a **proposition** with God. Jacob knew **the commandments** and **statutes** had no legal requirements as a Law. Jacob, like Abraham, knew he was carnal and hadn't received **the inheritance of God's Holy Spirit**. Therefore, since he was under The Melchizedek Priesthood based upon **righteousness by faith**, he promised God, that if He, God would protect and prosper him, Jacob would then tithe. Jacob had a choice, just as Abraham or Cain, as well as, Adam and Eve. They were totally under a different **covenant – no judgments or curses**.

## **Deuteronomy 5**

That is why God, when He uttered The Ten Commandments, He only wished Israel had a **right heart** to keep His **commandments** and **added nothing more** (Deuteronomy 5:29). Up to this point, God never required any of the fathers to keep the type of **covenant** He would, later, enter into with Israel (Deuteronomy 5:3). After receiving **The Ten Commandments**, they immediately sinned, by building the golden calf; so God instituted The Ten Commandments along with **the statutes** and **judgments**, which made this "**covenant**" a **point of Law in court**. Israel, as God's **witness** to The Nations had to be **righteous** even though they were carnal. He, also, built **the tabernacle** with a new Levitical Priesthood. Why? This Priesthood was a **carnal Priesthood** for **carnal people** with a carnal **commandment** (putting one to death), with **the judgments or curses**. This Priesthood couldn't offer blessings, as with Abraham, but only have a mistrial and settle for animal



sacrifices to remind them they were criminals and incorrigible. A capital offense brought death. National Israel was still **righteous**, by The Law, and therefore, God's **witness**.

The Hebrew for "statute" in this case was "choq," not "choqqah." "Choq" is in the masculine and not feminine. "Choq" conveys being "bound" or "necessary." It became a Law and not a choice, as with the fathers. This was totally different. *The Covenant* with Israel was only meant for unrighteous, carnal people who had a **wrong heart** and were unconverted. That was **the purpose** of The Letter or written Law (I Timothy 1:7-10). It was a legal document in God's **court** to either "bless," if you were innocent or "a curse to condemn you," if you were guilty. **No free choice** as with the **covenant** with The Fathers. Keeping The Letter of The Law requires one to become responsible for keeping it all just as *The Old Covenant* demanded. One must **continue sacrificing** even though Christ came. Why? Because one lacks **faith** and doesn't accept Christ's sacrifice as payment for your transgressions and debts. The curses of The Law are enforced. If one **repents** and believes Jesus fulfilled The Law by His **righteousness in faith**, you, then, are **inheritors of God's Holy Spirit and Christ** "in you," **makes you righteous**. **God's righteousness saves; your own righteousness can only bring death**. God's **purpose** is to be **all and in all** through Christ.

To be under The Letter of The Law is death. (II Corinthians 3:6). To be in The Spirit of The Law under The Priesthood of Melchizdec is LIFE. One is in direct opposition to the other. One gives **life**, while the other gives death.

## **The Presence Of God**

Here's a baffling question for you. Once The Apostles and Jewish

Christians were baptized and had God's Holy Spirit, why did they keep worshipping in **the temple** and keep The Letter of The Law along with The Holy Days? **The biblical answer** is so simple as Jesus answers this question. Remember, The Work of God is to believe on Him, Jesus, The Christ. When Christ spoke to The Samaritan woman, a Gentile, He told her the day would come when Christians would no longer worship God in this mountain or **the temple** in Jerusalem (John 4). He plainly said that Christians would only worship God in "**Spirit.**" From that point, to keep The Letter of The Law, was meaningless for **salvation**. Why? Because, God only wants to be **worshipped in "Spirit."** That leaves **all** human efforts of works or deeds unnecessary, if you want to be **saved**. It is quite clear. Christ said from that point, **only** worshipping God "**in the Spirit**" brings **salvation** or is acceptable to God. When was this to happen?

At the time of the writing of *The Book of Hebrews*, Paul said this *Old Covenant* was already decaying (out of use) and would be replaced totally by a *New Covenant*. When did this happen? In 70 A.D., Titus and his forces completely demolished **the temple** and by so doing, God's **court** was out of existence. Then, how could *The Old Covenant* exit? It couldn't. What was the use of worshipping God when no **temple** or **court house** was there to be able to give mercy? **The biblical answer is this.** As long as God's **presence** or the "**shekinah**" was there, one could worship with God's presence or "**glory**" and receive mercy. That is why *The Old Covenant* stayed **in force** as long as God was there. One knew where God was. The Apostles and Jewish Christians continued in *The Old Covenant* of The Letter of The Law with God still in **the temple**. When The Apostles kept The Holy Days, when God was in **the temple**, **His Name** (presence) was there, also. This will occur again in **the new temple** during The Millennium. With God's presence, the carnal Israelites and unconverted Gen-

tiles will all come to **the temple** in Jerusalem to keep The Feast.

It was decided in Acts 15, The Gentiles did not have to keep the legal burden of The Law because they already received The Holy Spirit and did not have to be circumcised. The Gentiles didn't go into **the temple**. They already worshipped God "**in Spirit**." In 67 A.D., God's "**Spirit**" or "**presence**" **started** to leave **the temple**, and finally, with the destruction in 70 A.D., ended *The Old Covenant* and all its demands. From this point on, God only wanted to be worshipped "**in Spirit**" just as Christ has explained to you.

### Keeping The Letter

Is it a sin to keep God's Laws in The Letter today? Of course not. To do good, humanly, is not wrong. Remember, in Galatians, Paul said those who live in God's **commandments** in The Letter **will** have a good life. What is important for Christians to know is The Letter of The Law **is not a requirement** in order to receive **salvation**. It is good not to commit murder, steal, covet, etc. It gives one a good life by eliminating all sorts of problems, such as being free of human worries and needing to pay penalties. However, keeping The Letter of The Law cannot make you **righteous** or **justified** (perfect or blameless). Only Christ can do that for each of you.

Most of The Works of The Law are impossible to do anyway. You can't keep The Holy Days or tithe lawfully without **the temple**. God made sure of that. To keep The Holy Days according to The Law, God's **presence** must be there. When **the temple** was destroyed, God's **presence** or "**shekinah**" wasn't there. One could no longer keep The Holy Days according to The Law because God's **presence** was gone. Some say, because Jesus said, "**where two or three are gathered in His name, He will be there,**" and

Christians think God is, also, there – but He isn't. Only His Son, Jesus, is there and you can hold a fine church service with two or three Christians in attendance. But, realize God's **presence** wouldn't be there. Jesus said to only worship God, The Father. Without **the temple** and without God's **presence**, you cannot legally obey The Law and keep The Holy Days.

Remember, it is not a sin to keep The Holy Days, but they are no longer binding (only as shadows) for Christians. Christ already fulfilled this part of The Law for Christians. Jesus is The Pass-over Lamb; Christ has made you **unleavened**. You, already, have God's Holy Spirit. Christ is your Atonement. Christians have been **redeemed** long before The White Throne Judgment of God, by Christ. These "days," for Christians, have already happened and are no longer, a shadow of things to come. Christians have already received their **inheritance** of The Holy Spirit.

Remember, God is The Judge. He has, however, given all **judgment** to Christ (I Peter 4:17). Christ, as Melchizedek, is your High Priest or defense attorney, interceding for your sins and God judges your innocence through Christ's **sacrifice** and His **righteousness**.

You are all legally **justified** and **held blameless** or **perfect** before Christ. THE ULTRA-CONSERVATIVES, WHO BELIEVE CHRISTIANS MUST KEEP THE LETTER OF THE LAW – SCRIPTURALLY, ARE WRONG. YOU ARE NO LONGER UNDER THE CURSE, AND THEREFORE, FREE FROM THE LETTER OF THE LAW, AS A POINT OF SALVATION.

Since **judgments** no longer apply to Christians – Christians are, therefore, sinless because there are no legal demands of The Law, which apply to them (Romans 5). Now, you have proven TRUE

CHRISTIANITY is neither to the left (the extreme liberal) nor to the ultra-right, which requires you to keep The Letter of The Law. What's necessary for Christians to be **saved**?

## The Covenants

From the time of Adam and Eve until Mount Sinai with Israel, *The Covenant* with humanity was a **covenant of free choice**. No legal requirements were demanded. As Paul said, when there is **no Law**, there is no sin. The Letter or written Law, as a legal document, did not occur until Israel sinned and Israel, from then on, had to keep every part of The Law or: legally – they were transgressors and guilty of sin. The Law demanded **death** for capital crimes. The **statutes** were **human-relationship ordinances** applying only to **human interrelations** for **God's physical creation**. Nothing in **the statutes** had anything to do with **salvation**. If they were kept, then one would be blessed with a healthy, safe, prosperous and long human existence but it never brought **salvation**. That is why The Pharisees and Sadducees disagreed about **a resurrection**. The Sadducees knew The Law had **no resurrection**. The only other requirement in **the statutes** was the **shadows** or prophecy about what Christ would do to bring everyone **salvation**. That is why Paul said no one was to judge a Christian about these **shadows** because Jesus already fulfilled this part of The Law for Christians (Colossians 2:16-18). Christ is your Passover Lamb. He has made you unleavened. Jesus has already given The Holy Spirit to you. Christ already atoned you to God and you no longer pray in a **temple** on earth but have a direct line to God, The Father's temple, in heaven. Christ has **redeemed** you, ahead of The Last Day Jubilee and therefore, these **shadows** or **types** in Colossians 2:16 (Sabbaths, Holy Days, New Moons, Meal Offerings and Sacrifices), have already been fulfilled in The Law by Jesus.

**The “covenant of choice,” The Tree of Life, God’s Holy Spirit by faith**, came through the administration of The Melchizedek Priesthood. This gave “**life**” – God’s Holy Spirit, by **faith** and not by **the works** of The Law (Galatians 4). When Abraham offered Isaac, the covenant of **promise**, there were no conditions or Law required; only **faith** was counted as **righteousness**. That is why Abraham tithed to Melchizedek because he hadn’t received **the promise** of God’s Holy Spirit. It was to be in the future, at the time of **the new heaven and new earth** or The Jubilee – The Wedding Feast (Hebrews 11).

Abraham kept The Commandments, **charges, statutes** and **laws** to have a good human existence with health, safety, prosperity and a long human life. Remember, no **salvation**, only a good human existence. Not keeping them wasn’t a sin, because there were **no legal** requirements of The Law in force. Only **faith** mattered for **righteousness**. The **third covenant** was a “**carnal covenant**” with **carnal commandments** by human effort (Hebrews 7:15); because the people, themselves, were carnal (I Timothy 1:7-10); and they had no **faith** (Hebrews 4). The **carnal commandments** were **all** the **legal** works and deeds, **the statutes** and **the judgments** demanded. This became the legal penalty in God’s **court** or **temple**, which would continue so, you, as a **true Christian** could be one of God’s people. The **fourth covenant** was the **enactment** of **all** that The Letter of The Law foreshadowed (Hebrews 10:1) along **with** the sacrifices (Malachi 4:4 and Colossians 2:16). This was *The New Covenant*, which was by promise and was given totally by grace (Matthew 5:14-16). The curse and judgments were abolished. No death or shadows for Christians. Blessings were not from The Law or the keeping of it, but from the **riches in Christ** in **heaven** who is on God’s **right hand** as your High Priest – Melchizedek. Once again, The Order of **Melchizedek** was **re-instated** which was a **Priesthood** of “**righteousness**” by “**faith**”

and “rest” in Christ known as **The Sabbatisme**. No law, no more legal requirements but once again, under Melchizedek, a **covenant of free choice based only on faith**. There’s nothing wrong for Christians to keep “**the statutes**” because as Paul said they allow you to have a good human life (Galatians 4). Under Melchizedek, however, **only faith** in God, The Father by His Son and living by every single Word of God as Jesus reveals, is required for **salvation**.

God’s **Ten Commandments, statutes and laws** were known from Adam and Eve’s day until they became a matter of **legal laws in God’s court or temple**. It is impossible for people to keep The Letter of The Law because there is no Levitical Priesthood or **temple court** to enforce them. When **the temple** was destroyed in 70 A.D., it was the end of The Letter of The Law, with no courthouse to enforce it. Now, The Letter merely tells carnal, unconverted people how to live a decent good life on earth. Many nations have copied some of these Laws for their own civil societies.

In *The Old Testament*, Pharaoh, himself, understood the penalties of adultery. Abimelech, also, knew about adultery. The Hammarabi code covered many of **the commandments**. The ancient Summerian civilization, The Akkadians, Babylonians and Egyptians knew **the commandments**. God’s Laws were known since Adam and Eve. Seth’s generations passed on God’s Laws. Even Cain spread God’s Laws, but they had a reprobate (carnal) mind (Romans 1). However, since Adam and Eve did not choose The Tree of Life (God’s Holy Spirit), these Laws could only show how to live a decent life. No sin was imputed (Romans 5). This is why Adam’s sin was called an offense and not a **transgression**. Until *The Covenant* with Israel, The Law was not a legal requirement (Romans 5). Remember, “**an offense**” in Greek means “**an injury**” or “**harm to God or His creation**” (which includes man-



kind), but it was not imputed as sin until The Law became a legal Law at Mount Sinai.

## Christian Jews And Apostles

After The Day of Pentecost when Christians received God's Holy Spirit, what was the first thing The Apostles did? The next day after Christianity began (Pentecost), The Apostles Peter and John went into **the temple to pray**. God's **presence** was there. It was nine o'clock in the morning, the hour for prayer. That is the reason The Apostles went into **the temple** – to pray. But Jesus said when you pray, you should say, "**Our Father, who art in Heaven.**" Prayer in **the temple** to Christians really wasn't necessary or was it?

## Christ Answers

Jesus was talking to a Gentile woman, a Samaritan. He told her the day would come when Christians would neither **pray** by The Mount in Samaria or in **Jerusalem** (John 4). He said, **at that time**, God would only want His people to seek or please Him **spiritually**. It would be a time when **the temple** was no longer there. That happened in 70 A.D. when Titus and The Roman Army destroyed **the temple** or God's **courthouse**. Seeking God's forgiveness by The Letter of The Law in **the temple** was over. This will be true until **the temple** is restored in Jerusalem by The Messiah, The Christ and The Letter of The Law will again be in force, when God's **courthouse** will be restored. This will include the entire Letter of The Law **with the sacrifices** to bring those still **carnal** Israelites and the still carnal Gentile's world to Christ. The Apostle Paul said the same thing in Hebrews 8:13, when he revealed *The Old Covenant (the old wine)* was decaying and would vanish. Exactly what Jesus told the Samaritan woman. The **legal letter** of



The Law was finished. Why did Apostles continue to pray in **the temple**? They knew the time for *The Old Covenant* to be annulled, hadn't, as yet, taken place (Hebrews 7:18). Paul said this carnal (legal letter) Commandment lasted only until Melchizedek was restored as High Priest (Christ). The "**Old**" would be annulled. That annulment, however, did not transpire until God stopped the worshipping of Him in **the temple** and that did not happen until 70 A.D. **That is why The Apostles**, who were **Jewish** and all **Jewish Christians** kept praying for forgiveness and kept The Letter of The Law including The Holy Days and Sabbaths. Jesus hadn't ended *The Old Covenant* with Israel. He said until the time would come when **only by spiritually worshipping God** would be the only way, which would be acceptable and please God (John 4). Then, *The Old Covenant* – The Letter of The Law, with all its "legal works" (judgments) **CEASED**.

How did The Apostles know the time to stop worshipping God in **the temple** had not yet occurred? Simply because **God's presence** or the "**shekinah**" or **God's "glory"** was still there. God was still in **the temple**. An Israelite could still pray to God because God was **still there**. Josephus, The Jewish historian recorded God's **presence** or **spirit** did not leave **the temple** until 67 to 70 A.D. That is why Jewish Christians, as Israelites, with The Apostles kept The Letter of The Law and The Holy Days and Sabbaths as a **shadow**. God was still there and He could be worshipped. That is why Paul in Ephesus said, "**I must, by all means, make The Feast in Jerusalem.**" God was still there! God still could be prayed to and Paul could receive forgiveness for his sins.

This was the entire debate over Christian Gentiles. The Jewish Christians and converted Pharisees believed The Gentiles needed to be circumcised and must keep The Law of Moses to be able to go into **the temple** and worship God. The Church with The Apos-

tles and Elders decided they did not have to go and be circumcised or keep The Letter of The Law **because** they already had received God's Holy Spirit. Remember, "**the covenant**" God made with Israel **did not** include The Gentiles. The Gentiles became "**spiritual** Israelites" without being circumcised or keeping The Letter of The Law (Romans 2). The Gentiles, with God's Holy Spirit, had God write The Ten Commandments in their hearts (Romans 2). That was all God required of The Gentiles. They could worship God, **spiritually**, as God had initially wanted The Israelites to do from the beginning (Deuteronomy 5:29). Once **the temple** was destroyed, The Law could no longer be wholly or completely kept. If one keeps The Law, it must be kept in its entirety according to *The Old Covenant* (Matthew 23:23 and James 2:10). Without **the temple**, one **cannot** keep **The Sabbaths** and **Holy Days** according to The Law as Christ had already **fulfilled** these **shadows** for Christians.

## God's Presence

The only way you could keep The Law in reference to The Holy Days is by **the temple** existing. Why? Because The Law demands it, but also, God's **presence** would be there. Some Christians believe they can keep God's Holy Days by Christ being in their midst. They, by their **human thinking**, stretch The Law in their imaginations. They say by Jesus claiming "**where two or three are gathered, in [my name], I will be in their midst**" or CHRIST WOULD BE THERE IN SPIRIT. That is true. That would constitute **the church** assembling together for a "**church service**," but that is not **the purpose** of The Holy Days. The Holy Days, according to **The Law**, **demand** the assembly of **God** to be there where He, **God**, **puts His** "**name**" and not merely Christ being in their midst. God's very presence, the "**shekinah**," God's "**glory**," The Father, must be there. By Jesus being in the midst

only constitutes a Church service, not the keeping of God's Holy Days.

During The Millennium, Jesus and His Bride, **the church**, will be in **the temple**, and God, The Holy Father's **presence** as the "**shekinah**" will dwell there, too. Remember, **the temple** is God's **throne** with **the mercy seat** to give you forgiveness for your sins or trespasses. The only place that could happen after **the temple** was destroyed is in **the temple** in **heaven** not on earth. If you wanted to keep God's Holy Days today, you would have to go to **heaven** where **God's mercy seat exists**. No one can keep The Holy Days on earth today, with no **temple** and with no **presence** of God, Almighty. That is why Christ told Christians to pray, "**Our Father who art in Heaven.**" This is the reason, **no humans**, including The Jews, who are responsible, are able to know **which days** are **God's Holy Days**. Debates and arguments continue. Even The Jews keep two days for each Holy Day because they do not know which are **the true** Holy Days. When Christ **returns**, this **truth** will be made known and the worship in **the temple** will be reinstated.

## Jesus Answers

Biblically you have proven that "**the extreme liberals**" are not **entirely** correct nor are "**the extreme conservatives**" **entirely** correct.

Salvation cannot happen without the subsequent steps. First, The Levitical Priesthood does not exist since there is no **temple**. Presently, Christians are administrated under a new Priesthood, The **Order** or lineage of Melchizedek. The Christ or Melchizedek is Jesus who shares God's **throne** of **mercy** or **judgment**. This *New Covenant* is different from The Old. *The New Covenant* is

**spiritual** because God is a “**Spirit**” and only wants Christians to worship Him in “**Spirit**” (John 4). Praying for mercy is through Christ, who is The High Priest or Intermediary (an attorney) to God. Since God desires you to worship or please Him in “**the Spirit**,” He only wants His Laws written in your hearts, **spiritually**. And, that is all God wanted from the beginning with Israel (Deuteronomy 5:29). These only included The Ten Commandments written in your hearts.

The Ten Commandments are all that is in **the ark of the covenant**. Once your heart repents, the stone is removed from The Ten Commandments and God gives Christians access to **the mercy seat**. The Letter of The Law was only placed in the **side of the ark**. Keeping The Law could never give you mercy or forgiveness. All The Letter of The Law could do is remind you of sin (Romans 5:20), but never gave mercy for **salvation**. The Letter only provides a person with a wonderfully good, human existence. Since Jesus is God’s “**work**” and if you believe in His “**words**,” which are The Father’s “**words**,” you will be **saved**. Christ’s answer in Matthew 19:16-25 is very clear. The rich man asks Jesus, “What must I do to **inherit eternal life or be saved**?” What did Christ reply? “**Keep the Commandments**” – period! Nothing else. Please, no human imaginations, like, what He may have meant. Then, the rich man said, “**I have kept them from my youth up. What do I lack**?” The rich man was very clear. He even asked Jesus which “**commandments**” and Christ gave the example of only referring to The Ten Commandments. But, what did he lack? The Greek is “**hustereo**,” or “**to fall short**.” What **ingredient** was he **missing**? He only fell short in **one area**. Jesus said, “**If you be perfect [or without blame] sell and give all to the poor**.” He lacked a **right heart**. He was spiritually covetous. He didn’t keep The Ten Commandments in his heart. He kept **The Letter** or **requirements** of The Ten Commandments but not in his “**na-**

**ture**" or "**heart**" (Romans 2). That is **all** your **Savior** (by His very "**words**") said is necessary to be **saved**. Nothing else!

That is what God from Mount Sinai said to Israel, as well (Deuteronomy 5:29). The Ten Commandments is all that is required to get into New Jerusalem when God, The Father, is there but with no **temple** because The White Throne Judgment is over.

In **the new heaven** and **new earth**, the only requirement, for you to step into the city of New Jerusalem and have the right to eat of The Tree of Life, is to keep God's Ten Commandments (Revelation 22:14). What does God require for Christian **salvation**? Only to keep His Ten Commandments **spiritually, in your heart**.

## What Is Sin

What is the definition of sin? "**Sin is the transgression of The Law**" (I John 3:4). But, as usual, people read the verse and not the context. In I John 3:3, The Apostle John said, "**And every man that hath this hope, in him [Jesus] purifieth himself, even as he is pure.**" Why? Because the transgression of The Law is sin. **The purpose** of The Letter of The Law is to make those who have repented know they had sinned (Romans 5:20). The Letter of The Law only brings you to Christ (Galatians 3:24) and in Christ, you are sinless. What The Apostle was saying, is God, by His Son, Jesus, takes away sin and **not by The Letter of The Law**.

The Letter only tells you **the need for Christ**, and you are a sinner according to The Law. This **legal Letter of The Law** only brings you to Christ. The Letter only kills or condemns you (II Corinthians 3:6). Keeping or knowing what the legal Letter of The Law and how it discloses what sin is, will not give Christians **salvation**.

## **Christian's Definition Of Sin**

Now for a secret surprise. Christ said Christian **righteousness** (legally made right) must **exceed the righteousness** of The Pharisees (Matthew 5:20). What was **the righteousness** of The Pharisees? In Matthew 23, Jesus said The Pharisees sit in Moses' **seat of authority**. Whatever they say He said, "The Jews must do." What was their "**righteousness**?" To be circumcised and keep The Letter of The Law of Moses. That was what The Pharisees demanded in Acts 15, which caused The Great Church **debate**. The Christian Jews had to keep The Letter of The Law but Jesus said Christians must **exceed the righteousness of The Letter of The Law**. Then Christ spent the rest of Matthew 5, 6 and 7 explaining how to **exceed the righteousness** of The Pharisees. Jesus, The Savior, is stating The Letter of The Law is just **not good enough for Christian salvation**. Does that mean one is not permitted to keep The Letter of The Law? NO! If one decides to keep The Law to be able to live a good human existence, that is okay, but it does not **make a person a Christian, let alone please God** or guarantee **salvation**. The flesh can never please God (Romans 8:8). Keeping The Letter of The Law for **salvation** only ends up in **death**. It is not **good enough** for Christians. A **Christian must be perfect** (blameless) before God. That can only happen by **Christ "In You"** (Colossians 1:27). God must be "**all and in all**" for you to be Holy like Him. That is **God's requirement for Christian salvation**. Christians cannot commit any offense (injury) to God or humanity. **Sin** for Christians means one rejects God to be **all and in all** in you.

## **A Christian Definition**

Since a Christian must exceed the righteousness of The Law, is there a biblical definition of what sin is for a Christian? I John

5:17 states, “**All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not unto death.**” What is a sin unto death? Those who keep The Letter of The Law only (by the flesh) leads to death (II Corinthians 3:6). A Christian must exceed the righteousness of The Law because that righteousness can only produce death. That is the sin unto death.

A Christian can sin and **break** The Letter of The Law (I John 3:4) and, as long as they repent, they are **still saved**. That is what Paul told you in Romans 6:23, “**The wages of sin is death.**” Since **no one can keep all The Letter of The Law**, “**the wages of sin is death.**” Paul does tell you how you can keep The Law, **spiritually** and receive **life (commit no unrighteousness)**. In Romans 7:21-25, Paul revealed that he, as a human, had two laws reigning in him. In **his flesh** (human effort), he obeyed The Law of sin. As long as Paul tried to keep The Letter of The Law, he sinned and the wages of that sin was death (II Corinthians 3:6). However, with his **mind** or **heart**, he obeyed The Law of God, which was the keeping of The Law, **spiritually** and not in The Letter or written legal works.

In Verse 4, Paul gives the answer how to **exceed the righteousness** of The **Letter** of The Law and keep the Christian definition of sin in I John 5:17. Paul thanked God, that through Jesus Christ, in his flesh (human effort), he served The Law of sin, but in his **mind** or “**pneuma**,” he served The Law of God. Human **righteousness** by humans keeping The Letter of The Law doesn't please God (Romans 8:8). Only by having a **right heart or mind** can you keep The Ten Commandments, “**spiritually**” and be **guaranteed** to be **saved**. God is not concerned about your human efforts by The Law or any other human efforts as monks running off to be alone and attempting to be pious. This is all a form of “**will**” worship. Humanly, it seems right and good. But, it doesn't fly. Only with



Christ living “**in you**,” literally, with God’s Holy Spirit, which will make you have **the mind of Christ**. God knows your flesh profits nothing.

In John 6:63, Jesus said, “**the Spirit [or mind] that quickeneth or gives life.**” The flesh or what humans do to please God, profits nothing. All of your human attempts to please God are meaningless. Only God’s “**words**,” “**Christ In You**,” can change your mind to only think like God or Christ. Only God’s “**words**” can give **life** or change your mind with “**the Spirit in man**” and God’s Holy Spirit. Your human body is nothing. You must lose it.

## **What God Requires**

By God writing His Law (Ten Commandments) in your hearts and minds, He will forgive all your unrighteousness and sins and remember them no more (Hebrews 8:8-12).

Christians must understand God is not interested in how you keep The Letter of The Law. That has to do with your flesh, which will be gone when this corruptible (flesh) puts on **incorruption** (I Corinthians 15).

If the flesh no longer exists, then sin is gone because you worship God only in “**Spirit**.” It is only “**the Spirit in man**” (the mind and heart) with God’s Holy Spirit (truth) that is in your heart and mind. You will then, have a **spiritual** body (John 3). ALL GOD WANTS IS TO HAVE CHRISTIANS HAVE HIS TEN COMMANDMENTS WRITTEN IN THEIR HEARTS. THEN, GOD WILL BE **ALL AND IN ALL** (I CORINTHIANS 15:28)!



## CHAPTER 11

### CHRIST'S WILL

*The Book of Revelation* uncovers important **BIB-LICAL** knowledge! *The Book of Revelation* reveals Christ, Himself, reading His “will.” His “will” went into force after His “death” and “resurrection” (Hebrews 8-9). It is time Jesus reads His “will” to you by His angel through writings of The Apostle John.

There are two parts to His “will.” Part 1 covers the first ten chapters of *The Book of Revelation* (Christ’s will) and Part 2, ‘The Little Book’ covers the last 12 chapters of *The Book of Revelation*. This chapter on Christ’s “will” concentrates on Chapters 1 to 10 of *The Book of Revelation*.

Christ has a “will” and He, Himself, is the **executor** of His own “will.” In order to put this “testament” or “will” in force, He had to die (Hebrews 9:14-20). Once He died He went to share His Father’s **throne** as your High Priest, Melchizedek. **Everyone** will be **SAVED**, according to what is written in the “will,” and each will receive a different **personal reward**.

Some will be The Bride; others **witnesses** or **ushers** at The Wedding. The rest are Guests who will either live inside New Jerusalem or outside The City of New Jerusalem.

Those who live outside **the city** will be close enough to partake of

The Glory of God, which lights up the new earth. Those who go through The Lake of Fire are outside the **city** and without God's "**glory.**" They will be in "**spiritual darkness.**"

## The Children

When Adam and Eve were in The Garden of Eden or The Garden of Pleasantness, Adam was a type of Christ while Eve represented **the church** as **the mother of all living** (or **saved**). Since they did not obey and were put outside of **the garden**, but still in Eden – Land of Pleasantness, they will represent those Guests who receive God's "**glory,**" the "**shekinah.**"

These are The Guests who will **not** live in The City of Jerusalem, just as Adam and Eve, as well as, Cain and Abel could not live in The Garden of Eden.

Once Cain murdered or martyred Abel, he was sent out of Eden into The Land of Nod or Land of Wandering – **the wilderness**. The **saved nations** will walk in **the light** (Glory of God) from New Jerusalem (Revelation 21:24). Those who remain do not walk in **the light** (the children of Cain) will basically, **live in darkness**. The Guests from the nations are the children of Abel who were persecuted or martyred. Where do Cain's children live in God's "**kingdom?**" Remember, The Law is **a shadow of the type** of God's "**kingdom.**" *Genesis* is a part of The Law.

## Cain's Children

In the account of The Wedding Feast, there are **Guests** who are dressed in the wrong garments. They are **not righteous**. These Guests with the wrong clothes are cast out of The Wedding Feast into **outer darkness** where they will weep and gnash their teeth

(Matthew 22:11-14). Who are they; where are they and why are they crying?

Only those who keep **the commandments** will be able to come into the **city** (Revelation 22:14-15). Why? These will be those who will be thrown into The Lake of Fire (Verse 15). Jesus tells you why they will not enter New Jerusalem.

Christ said those who keep God's "**commandments**" **in their hearts** will be **the greatest** in God's "**kingdom**" (Matthew 5:19). Those in God's "**kingdom**" who teach "**the commandments**" do **not** have to be kept; **will be called the least in God's "kingdom."** There you have it. Those who don't follow or teach The Commandments **will eventually be** in God's "**kingdom**," **BUT MUST FIRST GO INTO THE LAKE OF FIRE.** They will not be invited to attend The Wedding Feast by not being written in *The Marriage Registry – The Book of Life* (Revelation 20:15).

Now, you know why those not allowed in The Wedding Feast are **crying** and **weeping** in the **land of darkness**. No light is coming from God's "**glory**." These are **Cain's children** (who will be in the **darkness** or the **wilderness**). They will be on their own without God until they take of **the waters** and **the leaves** from **The Tree of Life**. **Spiritual growth** will always continue in God's "**kingdom**" for those in darkness and also those in "**the light**" from God's "**glory**" (Revelation 22:2).

Everyone has now been covered as to how they will be **saved**, although everyone's reward is different. The parable of the ten talents tells you this aspect. Those who only have one talent, with no continual **spiritual growth**, are thrown into The Lake of Fire. Notice, their reward is exactly as those who can't enter The Wedding Feast. In both cases, they end up in The Land of Nod, wan-

dering without God's "**light**" or "**glory**." They are in **spiritual darkness** and need the healing leaves from The Tree of Life.

They will have no access to The Tree of Life, but only its healing leaves. This group followed Cain and need to go through The Lake of Fire (I Corinthians 3). Now to read Christ's "**will**" or "**testimony**" of those who will be written in *The Book of Life* who can attend The Wedding Feast. Cain's children will burst out, the billions who must **grow spiritually** (Ephesians 5:26-27). Their growth from babes "**in Christ**" to **spiritual maturity** will take place in God's "**kingdom**."

## A Prophecy

In reading Christ's "**will**," you will see this "**testament**" reveals how those who are in *The Book of Life* can inherit **salvation** and get the **reward** of attending The Wedding Feast. Christ's "**will**" or "**testimony**" is The Spirit of Prophecy (Revelation 19:10). This *Book of Revelation*, in the Greek is "**the apocalypse**," meaning "**the uncovering**." Now, you can uncover Christ's "**will**," which shows you a prophecy of how God's people inherit their **salvation** and **reward**!

## His Servants

Jesus states *The Book of Revelation* is His "**testimony**" or "**will**" written to His **servants** (Revelation 1:1). Who are His servants? Revelation 1:11 reveals this "**book**" or "**will**" is for the benefit of **the seven candlesticks** who are The Seven Churches in Revelation 2 and 3 (Revelation 1:20). But, The Seven Churches are only part of the benefactors of Christ's "**will**."

Jesus has **two witnesses** who represent the heirs of Christ (Revela-

tion 11). One **witness** comprises The Seven Churches. Chapter 2 ‘*Who Is The Church,*’ proves the other **witness** is Israel (Revelation 7). These are **the two witnesses** who **grow spiritually** from the **two olive trees** – The Church in The Wilderness (Israel) and The Church of God, composed mostly of Gentiles (Revelation 2, 3 and 14). These are Christ’s **servants** who receive a **reward** in addition to **eternal life** in God’s “**kingdom**” (Revelation 21 and 22). His servants, Israel and The Church of God must come out of Babylon to be able to **inherit** their **reward** (Revelation 18:4).

## Revelation 1

The following is **the “will”** of Christ, **His “testimony,”** to His servants. Jesus starts by revealing He is making **Kings** and **Priests** of all His servants (Israel and Church of God) (Revelation 1:6). Then **the angel** states Christ is coming in the clouds and ultimately, everyone will **see** Jesus even those who actually pierced Him. John found himself on The Isle of Patmos for this prophecy. Everyone who reads, hears and **keeps** this **prophecy** will be blessed and rewarded (Revelation 1:3). Those who keep this prophecy are Christ’s **two witnesses**, which *The Book of Revelation* reveals.

John was in “**Spirit**” (vision or mind) on The Lord’s Day (Revelation 1:10). What is The Lord’s Day? *The Book of Joel* prophesies The Lord’s Day is **the seventh trump** or **The Return of Christ**. That is why John, “**in spirit**” on The Lord’s Day, heard a great voice or a **trumpet**. This is **the theme** of the “**will**” of Christ (Joel 1). Go over Chapter 1, ‘*The Schoolmaster.*’ Jesus looks just as God, The Father does (Revelation 1:13-15). He has **seven stars** – **the angels** over **the seven candlesticks** who are The Seven Churches listed in Revelation 2 and 3. Out of His mouth comes a sharp two-edged sword – God’s “**word**” (Hebrews 4:12). This

is the **prophecy** to His **servants**, Israel and The Church of God (Revelation 1:20).

## Revelation 2 And 3

The first of God's two **witnesses** are "**the seven churches**" which compose The Church of God beginning with the destruction of **the temple** in 70 A.D. until Christ **returns**. This is when *The Old Covenant* and The Letter of The Law ceased and only *The New Covenant* is legally in force. Now, **salvation** is of **grace** and **not** of human works.

*The Book of Revelation* is written explicitly to **the seven churches** who are to be Christ's **witness** until He **returns**. Understand, they all have different problems and doctrines or beliefs. Analyze each of these **seven churches** to see what Jesus wants each to do. They can receive a specific reward based upon them coming out of Babylon in regard to their specific problem:

- 1 **The Ephesian Church** has lost their first love. They stopped worshipping The One True God and His Real Son, Jesus (Revelation 2:4). Christ warns them to get back to **the true** God and His Son, Jesus. If not, when He **returns**, He will remove their **candlestick** (Revelation 2:5).
- 2 **The Smyrna Church** must remain **faithful** to the works they are doing so they can receive a **crown of life – salvation**, so they don't go into The Lake of Fire (Revelation 2:9-11).
- 3 **Pergamos** has a different problem. They, as a Church of God, are making a business out of "**the**

**church.**” They are doing just what Balaam and Balak did. They caused Christians in Pergamos to follow idolatry or fornication. When Christ **returns**, they will be His enemy and He will fight against them if they don’t **repent**. Those who overcome will be at The Marriage Feast of God as Guests – a new stone (Revelation 2:14-17). Some will be as Bridesmaids as “a stone” or “the wall” in New Jerusalem.

- 4 **Thyatira**, as one of God’s “church” is following Jezebel and her worship of Baal. They are steeped in pagan holidays and worshipping idols. This Church of God will go through The Great Tribulation just before The Return of Jesus. The ones in this church will be martyred especially her children – the future generation of this church during The Great Tribulation (Revelation 2:20-25).
- 5 **Sardis** is a “church” “at ease.” They believe they have the truth and all they want to do is to spend their time doing human works. They believe going to church, being busy keeping Holy Days, giving money and praying is all that is necessary. Changing their human nature is not what they think they should or need to do. To them, Christianity is keeping themselves busy with so-called church work. Jesus states they are dead. They will be shocked when Christ returns. They are not growing in God’s Holy Spirit. Only a few are going to make it to attend The Marriage Feast. Most go into The Lake of Fire (Revelation 3:2-6).
- 6 **Philadelphians** have a little strength or truth but do

witness Christ. They will not go into the tribulation, but will be in a place of safety while they witness in the wilderness. When Jesus comes, they will be a pillar (Boaz) in God's "kingdom." They will be part of The Bride (Revelation 3:7-12).

- 7 **The Laodiceans** are the most deceived in Babylon. They believe they are the only true church. Satan does not even have to make them follow pagan teaching. They are so sure of having the truth they cannot grow spiritually. They are lukewarm with only the first talent and cannot see the need to grow beyond the one truth they have. They are blind and naked, but think they are rich and have God's truth (Revelation 3:14-21). Elijah had the same problem. God had to tell him there were seven thousand others who followed the true God and, not Baal, besides Elijah (Romans 11:2-4). Besides the seven churches, there is more than one group with the truth.

What does Jesus tell this Church of His? "**I counsel you to buy of me Gold.**" Where? In The Lake of Fire. Those who overcome and start to **spiritually grow** in God's **spirit** will reign with Christ on His **throne**. They can be The Bride of Christ! (Revelation 3:14-22).

They are one of **the two witnesses** of Christ. **The seven churches** are all of Christ's or The True Churches of God – Catholic, Orthodox, all Protestants, Evangelicals and Independents. They are all God's **churches**, but with different creeds, doctrines, faith and **truth**. They are all **the called-out ones** or "**ecclesia**," but they must continue to **grow spiritually** for their rewards. They must



come out of Babylon (Revelation 18:4).

## Christ's Will

After Jesus finishes listing His **requirements** to the **seven churches**, there is a pause in reading His "**testimony.**" Suddenly, a door was opened in **heaven** and a loud voice, as a trumpet, shouted, "**I will show you things which must be hereafter.**" John is told from that point on (that is, John's time when on The Isle of Patmos), he was to receive the future events in prophecy. God, The Father, is revealed in all His **glorious splendor**, just as a rainbow in its brightest glory. God is sitting on His **throne** and in His **right hand** is a **sealed book**. No one is worthy to open *The Book*. This book is Christ's "**will**" or "**revelation.**"

A lamb is slain by a beast having **seven horns** and **seven eyes**. Why does Jesus have **seven horns** (Revelation 5:6)? Biblically, **horns** are **governments**. What governments? This is the beast with seven heads in Revelation 13. This is "**the fourth beast**" of Daniel 7, The Roman **government**. This Roman **government** crucified Jesus under Pontius Pilate. How plain! The **seven eyes** roaming the earth are from God's **throne** (Romans 4:5). These **seven eyes** are the **seven angels** or **stars** who watch over the **seven churches**. There, you have it. CHRIST IS WORTHY TO OPEN THE BOOK, WHICH IS IN GOD'S RIGHT HAND WITH THE SEVEN SEALS. Obviously, this book with the **seven seals** is *The Book of Revelation* and only Christ, by His death, was worthy to reveal or **uncover** (Apocalypse), His "**will.**" He is The Redeemer of Israel, The Church in The Wilderness (Acts 7:38) and The Church of God, **the seven churches** or **candlesticks**. The voice spoke to John, as the book is opened and shows the future "**in prophecy**" of what will happen to His **two witnesses** – **Israel** and **The Christians**. They **both** must come out of **Babylon** (Rev-

elation 18:4).

The stage is set. Now, begins the **uncovering of world prophecy** until God's "**kingdom**" comes with **the new heaven and the new earth**. Just before the opening of the **first seal**, the four beasts around God's **throne** with the twenty-four **elders**, fall down before The Lamb and they had **vials of odours**, which are **the prayers of saints or the righteous** (hassidim) – **chosen ones**. They were praising Christ that He has **redeemed** His **saints** as they prayed to help them come out of Babylon. The Lamb will have **redeemed** them to be Priests and Kings when He **returns** (Revelation 5:1-10). Their number was ten thousand times ten thousand and thousands of thousands. This is The Bride of Christ! If the analysis is correct, that puts the number about 100,000,000 people. Thousands of thousands. (Very few out of the billions who have been born). Not many will be The Bride (Daniel 7:10). However, there are The Guests, which are invited to The Wedding Feast. Then there are those who come out of The Lake of Fire. **ULTIMATELY, EVERYONE IS SAVED!** (Revelation 5:13)

## **The Seven Seals**

**The seven seals** represents all the events from The Roman Empire until The Kingdom of God begins to reign on the earth. **The seven seals** cover the entire time period from The Fourth Beast, The Roman Empire until **the last days** are completed in **the end of days or the end-time!**

The **first seal** is opened, and you find a person sitting on a white horse, who appeared like Christ. He had a crown, and took control by a war. Who is this? Emperor Constantine claimed to be a Christian and in history; he viewed himself as the thirteenth Apostle. Constantine claimed The Roman Empire was God's

“kingdom on earth” and he took over The Christian Church which was divided into two geographical areas, The Western Empire under Rome and The Eastern Empire under Constantinople. The two churches, or two lamb’s horns, in Revelation 13:11 was The Roman Christian Church in Rome which became The Catholics and The Eastern Orthodox churches in Greece or Constantinople. They had no choice. Constantine took over the two churches of God at The Council of Nicea in 325 A.D. **The second seal** continues the time frame. Christ said Herod’s **temple** would be totally destroyed, which occurred in 70 A.D. (Matthew 24:1-2). The Christian Churches were taken over by deceit and led by and controlled by Constantine (Matthew 24:4-5). What will be the next event? Little wars and **world wars** are prophesied, which are the **beginning of sorrows**. Then what is **the second seal**? **The red horse** or wars and **world wars** are **the second seal** (Matthew 24:6-8). Now, **the third seal**. A **black horse** follows which depicts **famine** and **pestilences** (Matthew 24:7). This roughly begins **the dark ages** to **the time of reformation**. **The fourth seal** of The Four Horseman of The Apocalypse or “**uncovering**” is a **pale horse**. This pale horse depicts war and famine (Revelation 6:8). Jesus said this was the beginning of sorrows and continues until 1947 – a very significant date (Matthew 24). Now a **vital seal** is about to open: Each of **the sorrows** continue with wars, famines and plagues all over the world. The Four Horsemen are only the **beginning** of sorrows. All these sorrows continue in the world until Christ comes and brings **true peace**.

### **The Fifth Seal**

This fifth seal concerns the martyrdom of those who began to grow as Christians. These are those coming out of Babylon and are martyred. Jesus referred to this event in Matthew 24:9-13. God symbolically speaks of **those being martyred** as **under the**

**altar** denoting a time of **trial** or **sacrifice** (Revelation 6:9-11). An example might be when The Levites sacrificed clean animals (God's people) on the **sacrificial altar**. Those sacrificed are symbolically crying out in prayer (incense or odors), "**How long O Lord do you not judge and avenge your people.**" This denotes a long-time period of thousands of years (II Peter 3:8-10).

They were allotted white robes and told to wait and rest for a season (thousands of years) until their brothers are also martyred (Verse 11). Who are these future ones who must, also, be sacrificed? This time period starts with all martyrs of Christ from The Day of Pentecost in *The New Testament* until 1947. Why 1947? This includes all Christian martyrs whether by Genghis Kahn, Catholics against Protestants or Protestants against Catholics, all the way through World War II. Everyone knew about the Jews, but millions of Gentiles were killed also. Their sacrifices are all inclusive until the very important date of the year **1947**. Why? At this specific time (1948), Israel legally became a Nation. From this point on, **the two witnesses**, Israel and Christians, could be martyred in The Great Tribulation. **The fifth seal of tribulation** ceases and then **the sixth seal** could commence the martyrdom of **the two witnesses**.

From this point on, began **our very day** – why? The next seal is **the sixth seal** when a great earthquake occurs (Revelation 6:12). This earthquake is so large it turns the sun black and the moon looks as blood. When is this? This is the prophecy in *The Book of Joel*. Read all of it. Notice, Joel 2:10 reveals these events usher in Christ's return and a great **earthquake** causes the sun and moon to be darkened. This is **the sixth seal** (Revelation 6:12).

Where are you, in today's time period, with these seals? Remember, **the fifth seal** ends with Israel being established as a nation.

Then the time of **the two witnesses** begins – The Nation of Israel and The Seven Churches – God’s “**churches.**” Before Israel became a nation, you would not have had these **two witnesses**. **The sixth seal**, therefore, initiates the time of this future martyrdom, which may very well be the beginning of the present day with **the terrorists**, who not only hate Israel, but all Christians. When do **the end-days** or **time of the end** begin? Will you be able to tell? Yes! **The end-days** begin with **the sixth seal**. When this great earthquake occurs, changing the color of the sun and moon, you will know **the end-days** have begun. BY READING ALL OF *THE BOOK OF JOEL*, YOU WILL UNDERSTAND. This is the start of **The Day of The Lord** – which is **the very purpose** for **the writing** of *The Book of Revelation*. When this **sixth seal** is opened, the kings, great men, rich men along with everyone on earth are frightened, and start to believe it is all happening because of God and **the day** of God’s **wrath** must be near (Revelation 6:17). An earthquake so large there hasn’t been one like it since humanity existed. Wow! The entire world feels this earthquake (Revelation 16:18).

## **Babylon’s Churches**

God’s **church** has called many, but with **seven different types of doctrines and beliefs of faith**. This is why The Apostle Paul said Christians do not need a **legal letter** to tell they are a part of God’s **church**. They are not to be **incorporated**. God’s **church** is a **spiritual entity** based upon **spiritual growth** in one’s **heart**. The physical church you attend does not qualify you as a **called-out one** who can attend The Wedding Feast! **Every Christian is in Babylon** and must **spiritually grow** out of it!

Now, for the seventh seal, when Christ opens its meaning – **the end of days** begins. Just before the seventh seal is opened, Jesus

reveals who is going to have to go into the great tribulation to receive their inheritance or reward at The Wedding Feast. These are those of Israel and the seven churches who have NOT been growing spiritually. They have been too complacent in their Jewish faith or in their Christian faith.

The 144,000 Israelites and an innumerable number from the seven churches (Revelation 7:1-17) have to be sealed or protected by Christ because they have to go through the great tribulation, and come to the place they will have grown spiritually (Revelation 7:14). Then, they are guaranteed to be in God's "kingdom" (Revelation 7:14-17).

## Seventh Seal

**The seventh seal** begins the sounding of **the seven trumpets**. You will see this is God, through Christ, starting to bring His **two witnesses** into **God's rest** (Hebrews 4). The **two witnesses** will have grown in **faith** to enter God's **rest** or The Millennium as His Engaged Bride. When **the seventh seal** is opened, there was silence in **heaven** for half an hour. **Seven angels** stood with **seven trumpets**. Then another **angel** stood at **the altar of sacrifice**, with incense – **the prayers of saints**. A very prophetic event for God's people.

These **prayers of saints** caused the angel to take the **incense** (prayers) with **fire** and toss it to the earth. Then **the seventh angel** began to sound **the first trumpet**. This is **the beginning of the great tribulation**.

**The first four trumpets** and the war to follow are **the prayers** of God's **two witnesses** as they witness during the three and a half years of **The Great Tribulation**. That is how long **the seven-**

**trumpet time-period** lasts (Revelation 8:1-6).

## **Jericho**

Just as Joshua took The Israelites into “**the promised land**” they had to first confront **Jericho**. God had Israel blow **trumpets for seven days**. On **the seventh day**, Israel all shouted with **the seventh trump** and the walls of Jericho **fell**. Then Israel entered **the promised land**. Jesus does exactly the same thing.

**The seven trumpets** blow when Christ intervenes in **world affairs** to deliver **His servants**, Israel and The Churches of God, out of **The Great Tribulation** at His **return** at **the seventh trump**, and they are able to **enter the promised land** on Mount Zion as His Engaged Bride. This is **the Barley Spring Harvest** or **first resurrection** (Joshua 6).

## **The First Four Trumpets**

During **the first four trumpets**, God directly causes world catastrophes to help His **two witnesses** in **tribulation**. These **trumpets** affect, the earth, the sea, the rivers and the sun and the moon. To more perfectly understand this read all of Revelation 8.

With the conclusion of **the four trumpets**, **the angel** states there are **three woes** (world trouble) or **three more trumpets**, which God causes to come to pass. **Three woes!**

## **The Three Woes**

The first woe (fifth angel) causes smoke as from a furnace to come over the earth. From this smoke will come locusts. What do these locusts do? They have the ability to torment humans, but

they will not cause death. This is the **beginning of Armageddon** and its **battle**. Read all of Revelation 9. “**Blow the trumpet in Zion.**” This is **the fifth trumpet** (Joel 2:1). These locusts are as military horsemen and so shall they run (Revelation 9:9). This is “**The Day of The Lord**” (Joel 2:11), and Jesus directly intervenes on behalf of His people. Pleading “**Come out of her my people**” (Revelation 18:4). Who is God sending against His people (Psalm 83:1-18)? In Psalm 83:4 there are people who want to keep Israel from **being a nation** because they hate all forms of Christianity. These are **THE TERRORISTS OF TODAY!** THESE ARE TODAY’S TERRORISTS FROM THE ARAB NATIONS (Psalm 83:6-8). Assur, or present day Iraq, will be part of those coming against Jerusalem. These Arab Nations will want to destroy every vestige of *The Bible* with The Jewish **faith** (Psalm 95:12).

**The second woe is the sixth trumpet.** The **Euphrates River** will be made passable for the armies of The East. Be ready for the nations of the world to come against The King of The North mentioned in Daniel 11:29-45. When the nations of the world see The King of The North, listed in Psalm 83, they realize the **world oil supplies** are at stake. Babylon, The Great Jerusalem, has been a **lie**, the **anti-Christ** sitting there as The “**Messiah**” is a lie. The nations of the world turn against Babylon (Jerusalem), **the whore** and will come with an army of 200,000,000 (Revelation 9:16) to secure the oil for the prosperity of their world. They meet in conflict in The Valley of Decision or Armageddon (Joel 3:3-16). Now, there is **one more woe**. This is **the seventh trump** or The Return of Christ.

## **The Seventh Trump**

As the nations of the world assemble to stop The King of The North (The Arabs, destroying Israel as a nation), they all assemble



for the **last woe**, **the seventh trump**, to **secure** the prosperity of the world. They also are furious for being deceived by The Great Whore, Babylon or **end-time** Jerusalem (Revelation 17:16-18). Suddenly, **the revelation** STOPS the prophecy of the blowing of **the seventh trump**. A mighty angel, with a loud voice, roars like a lion and seven thunders uttered their voices. At its conclusion, John was ready to write what **the seven utterances stated**. The angel stopped John saying, “**Seal what those seven voices uttered**” (Revelation 10:1-4). Then, the angel stood on the sea and the earth and said, “The God who created everything is ready to reveal the final prophecy.” In the days of **the seventh angel** or **seventh trump**, **the mystery of God** will be **revealed**. No longer will God keep **the truth only** for His **servants**, but now the entire world will know the real God and His Son, Jesus, The Christ. Just before the sounding of the **seventh trump**, John is stopped from writing. Why?

The voice from **heaven** told John to take a little book from the angel’s hand. Why? The angel continued and said, “**Take it** [the little book] **and eat it up; and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shall be in thy mouth sweet as honey.**” Whatever is in this book you reveal something that is sweet (**good**), but when it settles in his stomach, it becomes bitter or evil and gut-wrenching. Why is John told not to write what is in the book? *The Book of Revelation* finally tells you this book will tell a prophecy, by John of the future from Revelation 10 to Revelation 22. **THIS PROPHECY WILL NOW BE REVEALED WHEN GOD MAKES ALL HIS TRUTH KNOWN TO THE WORLD!**

## CHAPTER 12

### THE LITTLE BOOK

*The Little Book* which The Apostle John is told to eat is both bitter and sweet. The sweet part of *The Little Book* covers The Return of Christ and the establishment of God’s “kingdom,” revealing the final mystery of God being opened to everyone’s understanding. The bitter part will be for those who carry The Mark of The Beast with its penalties. They will have to go through some very painful experiences of God’s “wrath” (His “winepress”). The end result is for everyone to be saved – every man in his order (I Corinthians 15) and each receiving their own personal reward. Christ’s “will” is a prophecy and therefore, ends with a warning to everyone who does not heed the words written in *This Little Book*.

John is told he must “prophecy” to the world what is sealed in *The Little Book* (Revelation 10). How can John, as an elderly man, prophecy to the world? John died not too long after *The Book of Revelation* was finally completed. Who would do the prophesying? Revelation 11 tells you who is to prophecy to the world and when.

#### The Two Witnesses

An **angel** gave John a rod and told him to measure **the temple** (Revelation 11:1-2). This is very significant – prophetically

speaking. John is told to measure **the whole temple**, along with **the court** of Israel. However, **the court** of The Gentiles is not to be measured. Why not? During this time, John is told a great power will be given to God's **two witnesses** to prophesy for three and a half years, clothed in sackcloth (be **repentant**). This is **the biblical answer** of how John will prophesy to the world after he died. How? The **two witnesses** will reveal what was in *The Little Book* John **ate** and then **sealed**. Now, **the two witnesses will continue** John's prophecy. The sweetness in John's mouth is **the witness** of Christ's **return** with **the seventh trump**. This *Little Book* becomes bitter in his stomach because Christ with **the saints** and **angels** will be pouring out **the seven last plagues of God's wrath** (winepress). Christ's **return** will "**not**" be in secret.

## Two Olive Trees And Candlesticks

Suddenly, **two olive trees** and **two candlesticks** appear. God is describing His **two witnesses**. These **two witnesses** are The 144,000 of The Tribes of Israel and the innumerable multitude of The Gentiles (Revelation 7:1-15). How do you know? These are those who came out of **the great tribulation** as **God's witnesses** (Verse 14). That is what Revelation 11:3 states they **will do**. The **two witnesses are not two prophets** or two individuals, but are The 144,000 from Israel and an innumerable multitude from The Church of God. The **two prophets** are **two churches** – Israel and Christians. That is why God did not have **the court** of The Gentiles measured. This is the **innumerable multitude** of Christians. There it is. The **two witnesses are two churches**. **Candlesticks**, according to Christ, are **churches** (Revelation 1:20). The entire prophecy of *Revelation* is written to God's **two churches** – The Church in The Wilderness (Israel) and The Church of God. Now, who are the olive trees? These two olive trees standing before God's **throne** are **Judah** and **Israel** (Zechariah 4). The Apostle

Paul, The Apostle to The Gentiles, writes God had rejected them and that only a remnant of Israel (144,000) will be **saved** at this time. The **wild** olive tree is grafted into the **natural** olive tree and will become God's **witness** also. So, **the two witnesses** are The 144,000 Israelites (a remnant) and **the innumerable** Gentiles – the wild olive tree. These two olive trees, The Church in The Wilderness, are The 144,000 and The Church of God – **the seven candlesticks** (Acts 7:38). Now, you have **the biblical** answer. **The two witnesses**, Israel and Christianity cover Christ's "**will**" or "**revelation.**" These **two witnesses** have power to plague the earth and bring down "**fire**" (Revelation 11:5-6). How? The **first four trumpets** are depicting world catastrophes. Remember, Revelation 8:3-5 states from these **two witnesses**, before God's **altar**, are their prayers and God then sends "**the fire**" from the altar and casts it to the earth.

These are **the seven trumpets**, which God releases to protect His **two witnesses**. Therefore, these **seven trumpets** last three and a half years during The Tribulation. You will see **some** of these **two witnesses** go into a **place of safety** while a remnant is martyred. Finally, after these **two witnesses** have prophesied for three and a half years (not in a physical place), they are martyred in Jerusalem and are dead in the streets while the world "**rejoices.**" Why? Because of the catastrophes of **the seven trumps**. Then, after three days, they are **resurrected** and rise to the clouds. Why? This is **the seventh trump**, Christ **returns** and they meet Him in the clouds. Now, John **shifts the story flow** to catch up with **the history** of God's Church.

## Revelation 12

Suddenly, just before Christ's **return** on Mount Zion in Revelation 14 with The 144,000 Israelites, John relates the account of **church**

**history from the birth of Christ** to the time Satan is pursuing the remnant of God's people who keep His **commandments**. This includes Israelites and The Church of God. Most of Christianity goes into safety and God seals them (Revelation 7:3 and Revelation 12:1-17).

The place of safety is **not a location** since **the entire** Church of God and Israel are in **the wilderness** (the world). Those sealed by God's Holy Spirit are protected by **the seven trumpets** with Christ as their **rock** of protection. Deuteronomy 32 reveals **the rock** protects The Church on The Wings of The Eagle (Jesus). Christ is "**the rock**" (I Corinthians 10:4). Jesus protects you, even though chaos is all around you – **He is your refuge** (Psalm 91:1-9).

## **The Beast**

Who does Satan, as the dragon, use to persecute the woman (church) in Revelation 12? This hideous beast arises out of the sea with seven heads and ten horns (Revelation 13:1). Who is this beast? This beast was like a **leopard**, a **bear** and a **lion** (Revelation 13:2). This is the same beast in Daniel 7:3-7. These three beasts were, also, like a leopard, bear and lion. In Daniel 8 and 9, three beasts "**fall**" leaving **the fourth beast**, which is Rome with **seven heads** and **ten horns**. These seven heads are seven Caesars in The Roman Empire (with an eighth coming). Reread Chapter 4, "*Who is The Beast?*"

Another "**beast with two horns**" who is Christian, speaking as a lamb, but is preaching everyone should worship the **image of the fourth beast** or The Roman **government** (Revelation 13:11-18). The Roman **government** lasted only about six hundred years, but the image of **the fourth beast** has lasted until our **present day**. Chapter 5, '*The Mark of The Beast*' explains globalization with

democracy but without **the true** God and His Son, Jesus. The whole world is in Babylon, with numerous religions centered in Jerusalem as their place of origin. That is why God tells all true Christians to come out of Babylon (Revelation 18:4). This Babylon is Jerusalem **in the end-time** (Revelation 11:8). This is where and when **the two witnesses** (144,000 and Church of God) are martyred.

The **two little horns** carry on the **two legs of Daniel 2**, which are The Western and Eastern part of The Roman **government**. Their **image** continues in The Catholic and Orthodox Churches, which are the **candlesticks** as Christ walks in their midst (Revelation 2:18-22). They go through **the great tribulation**.

All those worshipping this **image** of The Roman **government** have a “**mark**” and that “**mark**” is 666. The number “six” connotes being human and number three, making three sixes – 666 is **completion**. Therefore, 666 denotes the completion of human imagination or origin. These **churches** are ritualistic with human works. Their doctrines are of human origin and not from God or His Son. This religion is filled with “**many ways**” to worship God or Babylon. That is why there are so many Christian and Jewish denominations. You can pick “**the church**” of your choice. At this point in Revelation, all the inheritors and the enemies of God’s “**kingdom**” are manifested. Now, to a critical time in world history. The **last days**, which are “**the days of the fourth beast**” in Daniel 7, before Christ **returns** and smashes the **ten toes** (ten kings) of the great image in Daniel 2. Then Jesus **returns** and sets up The Kingdom of God upon Mount Zion. This brings you to **the seventh trumpet** or **The Return of Christ**. This is the **beginning of the end-time** or **the end of time**. The time of the Gentile’s rule is about to end and be **fulfilled** and God’s “**kingdom**” will take over.

## The Winepress

After **the sixth angel**, **the seven trumpets** sound, an angel cries out and **one woe** is past with **two more woes** to come. **The sixth angel** sounds, which is **the second woe** and The Euphrates River releases **four angels** to make way for the 200,000,000-man army to descend upon The Valley of Jehoshaphat or Armageddon. Notice, this **sixth angel**, comes from **the four horns** of The Altar, which is **the fourth beast** with ten toes of Daniel 2. “Horns” are “governments” and “**the altar**” signifies “sacrifice” or “shedding of blood” (Revelation 9:13-21). Even with the plagues of **the six trumpets** and The Battle of Armageddon, not one person who worships the beast’s image **ever repents** (Revelation 13:21). Christ, The Lamb and 144,000 stand with Him on Mount Zion (Revelation 14:1). This is **the seventh trump** – Christ **returns** (Revelation 14:14).

Along with Jesus in the clouds are **the angels**, along with “**the saints**” of The Barley Harvest and they are **ready to rule** with **Christ**. They are Christ’s Bride. These **saints** with The 144,000 are **the redeemed firstfruits** (Revelation 14:4). This is **the first resurrection** – **the barley harvest**. **Two more** “woes” to go. Revelation 14:14-20 states there are **two more harvests**. The angel thrusts in the sickle for the **wheat harvest** and the third, **a grape harvest** is **the winepress** of God’s **wrath** (Revelation 14:19). **The seven last plagues** are about to be released as Christ with **the angels** and **saints** venting out God’s **wrath** upon those with The Mark of The Beast. Reread Chapter 7, ‘*The Mystery Harvest*’ to better understand these events. This is the bitterness in John’s stomach. This is the distasteful winepress before God’s “**kingdom rules.**”

The **first vial** is poured out and a grievous **sore** befalls those with

the beast's **mark**. It is very similar to what occurred to Job. **The second angel** made the **sea blood**; **the third angel** made the **rivers** become **bitter**; then, **the fourth angel** caused the **sun** to **scorch humanity**. **The fifth angel** produced **total blackness**, which caused much pain. Instead of repenting, those with the **mark** of the beast will **not repent** (Revelation 16:11). Then **the sixth angel released those armies** from The East and Armageddon "commences" (Revelation 16:12). As these vials are unleashed, within a very short period of time, the armies of Armageddon clash. This is in harmony with **the seventh trump** and at the time of this last trump, **many voices** sounded (like Jericho), "**The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of His Christ; and He shall reign forever and ever**" (Revelation 11:15).

"**The seventh trump**" and "**the seven last plagues**" occur almost simultaneously. The whole world, **all nations** from the ten world rulers descend (World War III) upon The King of The North (Arabs) and the **whore**, Babylon or end-time Jerusalem with its host of the world's religions (Revelation 16:14). Truly, a Babylon of confusion. Then a voice states, "**Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments lest he walk naked and they see his shame**" (Revelation 16:15). This is no secret. The world is fully warned! You would have thought with **the seven trumpets**, which brings world catastrophes along with the seven last plagues, should have caused a lot of repenting. Instead, Satan, the beast and the false prophet have demons coming out of them to cause the whole world (**ten kings**) to gather together for the battle (Armageddon – Zechariah 14) of that Great Day of God Almighty (Revelation 16:13-14). Then, Jerusalem **fell** when a great earthquake hit. The city (Jerusalem – Zechariah 14) is divided into three parts as God pours out His **cup of wine** of His **wrath**. (Reread Chapter 6 '*Babylon and The Two Grails*').



Finally, **the seventh vial contains one hundred pound hail balls** and still humanity **fails to repent** (Revelation 16:21).

Notice – it states **all nations**, not merely ten nations, as some erroneously believe. This battle at **Armageddon** is **World War III** and includes **all nations** of the **entire world** with their ten leaders (Zechariah 14:1-3). The King of The North listed in Psalm 83 composed of The Arab Nations coming against Jerusalem – the **end-time** Babylon. The terrorists finally decide to attack Israel. These Arab countries take crafty counsel against God’s people, Israel (Psalm 83:3-4). They say, “**Come, and let us cut them off from being a nation, that the name of Israel may be no more in remembrance**” (Verse 4). This is what The Jihadists have been saying all along. Notice these nations listed in Psalm 83:5-18, are all Arab nations mentioned as Assur (Verse 8). Assur is present day Iraq. Don’t be surprised if they change their name. When tidings come out of the north (Daniel 11), the rest of the world, The Arabs prepare to battle in Armageddon against Israel. **All the nations** (Zechariah 14) come against Jerusalem so The Arabs will not be able to take world control of their oil. World War III is about to occur as **the fifth angel** sounds and the army of locusts (military weapons) torments men for five months. These weapons do not kill but do paralyze the enemy causing excruciating pain (Revelation 9:1-13).

Then **the sixth angel** “sounds” to open up the armies from The North and East. This is the 200,000,000-man army coming for the final battle of World War III at **Armageddon**. Then **the seventh trumpet** sounds and **two woes** are past with the **third woe** about to come, which is the beginning of God’s **wrath, the grape harvest** or **God’s winepress** (Revelation 14:15-16). Christ **returns at the seventh trump**. Revelation 10:7 states in the days of **the seventh angel, the mystery of God** is completed as He had

declared to His servants, Israel and Christianity. The **witnesses** have finished their **witnessing**.

## **Babylon, The Great Whore**

Revelation 15:1-8 continues after the seventh trump and The Return of Christ with the saints and His angels to unleash “the seven last plagues.” This is God’s “winepress.”

As Christ meets His **saints** – The Bride of Christ, in the clouds, they release **the seven last plagues** (Revelation 16:1). There cannot be a “secret” **Return of Jesus**. The **entire world will know** they were duped by Satan, the false religious prophet and the beast or **the fourth beast** in Daniel 7 and Revelation 13. Then **the seven angels** release **the seven plagues**. The **first plague** pours sores out upon those with The Mark of The Beast or those who followed this worldly system of government and religion. These were all devised by humans who were deceived by Satan, the dragon. **The second vial** made the sea turn to blood and killed those in the sea.

**The third** contaminated the rivers with blood. **The fourth** made the sun “**scorch**” mankind. **The fifth** poured darkness upon Babylon or **end-time** Jerusalem and **the sixth** brought the northern armies. Satan, being demon-possessed, as is **the fourth beast** and **the false prophet**, deceiving all nations and bringing them together to Armageddon.

Then **the seventh angel** sounded and a great voice out of **the temple** said, “**It is done!**” A great earthquake strikes, which divides Jerusalem in half (Zechariah 14). This was the largest earthquake since humans had occupied the earth (Revelation 16:18). Then Great Babylon (Jerusalem), **the great city** breaks up into three

parts. God is venting out His final wrath as a winepress squeezing its **grapes** – The Battle of Armageddon. A great hail came out of **heaven, each hail weighing 100 pounds.**

Then Revelation 17 and 18 reveal The Fall of Babylon, **the great whore.** This is end-time Jerusalem who accepted **all the religions of the world.** A true Babylon or “**confusion**” just as in the time of The Tower of Babel. Everyone had their choice of worship. This city was its very center or point of origin of all major religions in the world. “**Her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine, and she shall be utterly burned with fire,**” shall come upon her and the world will mourn (Revelation 18:8).

All the world’s **prosperity,** its **riches** and its **power** are coming to an end. Satan is finished. **The beast** (Daniel 7) and **the false prophet** are thrown into a Lake of Fire (Revelation 19:20). Satan is **taken** and **bound** in prison (hell–tartaroo) for **one thousand years** (Revelation 20:1-3).

## **The Bride And Christ**

“**Salvation,**” “**glory**” and “**honor**” to **God** (Revelation 19:1). The whore, Babylon (false human religions) has been avenged from all the blood of **The Prophets,** “**saints**” and **His “servants.”** The final Battle of Armageddon will have so much blood spilled it will reach the bridles of horses (Revelation 14:20). Then all the rest of those with The Mark of The Beast in the battle will be slain by Christ and His armies (Revelation 14:21).

A great number of fowl will devour the dead – so the fowl will have a great feast for themselves. The **Lamb’s Bride** gathered from all of human history and **the two witnesses** – Israel and Christians who were martyred and had witnessed Christ even at

the expense of their own lives. The Bride has truly made herself ready for the engagement period with her husband, Jesus, The Christ (Revelation 19:7).

## Father Of The Bride

In most weddings, The Father of The Bride gives The Bride away. At the Wedding Feast between Jesus and His Bride there is no father-in-law to give away The Bride. Why not?

## Rachel And Jacob

The answer to this bewildering question, “Who is **the father** of The Bride at The Wedding Feast in God’s “**kingdom**” is a startling one (Read all of Genesis 28 to 32). Jacob, who became Israel after his dream (Jacob’s ladder), continued his journey to his father’s kinsman’s abode in Haran. When he arrives at a well, near his relative’s home, he meets Rachel. He tells her he is looking for his relatives. She tells him her father is Laban, Jacob’s mother’s brother. She takes Jacob or Israel to her home and Laban welcomes Jacob to the family.

After a period of time, he states Jacob shouldn’t be working for nothing. Jacob tells Laban he loves Rachel and wants to marry her. So, Laban said, “Work seven years for her and she is yours.” Jacob agrees. After seven years, he asks for Laban’s daughter, Rachel in marriage. Laban agrees but fools Jacob and gives Leah, the elder sister instead. He said “it is not our custom to marry off the younger first.” Laban then said, “Work another seven years and Rachel is yours.” Jacob agrees. After one week, Jacob marries Rachel and then works seven years for her. Jacob **bought** or **redeemed** both Leah and Rachel as his wives. Remember, after Eve sinned in **the garden**, she became Satan’s property. From

then on, marriage meant the woman was to be a sex object for reproduction as any livestock. She was now the man's property after the god, Baal or Satan. That is why in The Law "**marriage**" allows divorce (Deuteronomy 24:1-3). The word for "marriage" in The Law is "**Baal.**" Eve and all women are now daughters of Satan until Christ **redeems** them by giving His **life**. Laban and Jacob (Israel) are a good example.

When Israel, the nation, sinned under Moses, she had played the harlot and the engagement with God was broken. After which, Christ gave His **life** and bought Israel and The Church of God back to be His Wife. These are **the two witnesses** or **two candlesticks**, The Church in The Wilderness and The Church of God.

## **The Jews**

Read all of John 8. When Jesus said to His Jewish followers or Disciples, "**If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed**" (John 8:31). The Disciples said they were **not** in bondage to anyone since they are the children of Abraham. Jesus said to them, if they were Abraham's children, they would do the works of Abraham. Then John 8:42-44 reveals the reason they don't hear Christ's "**word,**" it is because they are the **children of their father, Satan** and not **God, The Father**. Why doesn't Christ's Bride have a father to give her away? Simply, Satan was her father (or Baal) and Christ **redeemed** her or bought her back just as Laban wouldn't give up his daughters to Jacob or Israel (Genesis 31).

In Genesis 31:29-42, Laban chased after Jacob when he was leaving with his wives Leah and Rachel. Satan does the same to his **two witnesses**. When Laban catches up with Jacob, he said, "You wanted to do me harm but God stopped you." Then Laban accused

Jacob of stealing his “**gods**” or “**icons**.” Rachel still believed in paganism and took Laban’s images. Then Laban searched and couldn’t find them because Rachel claimed to have had her **period** and couldn’t rise. Laban left when he couldn’t catch Jacob taking his “gods.” Laban lost just as Satan, who was Israel’s Father and The Church of God’s “Father.” Christ redeemed His Bride and bought her by giving His very **life** (Ephesians 5). Satan, at this point, is taken out of The Wedding Party and cast into prison for a thousand years (Revelation 20:1-3).

Why didn’t The Father of The Bride, or Satan, give away his daughter, Israel and The Church of God? Because The 144,000 Israelites and The Church of God **came out of Babylon** (Revelation 18:4) and made herself ready (The Bride) for the marriage (Revelation 19:7)! Satan no longer was the father. Now, God, The Father, is The Bride’s Father and God will be at The Wedding Feast.

## The Millennium

Satan is bound for a thousand years and then God, The Father, is The Bride’s Father as well as The Father of The Groom (Revelation 20). Revelation 20:4-6 explains The Groom and The Bride’s engagement period. They reign together during the millennium or one thousand years as Kings and Priests (Revelation 5:10).

This is **the first resurrection of the barley harvest** and are God’s **firstfruits**. They have **eternal life** but also their **reward will be as Christ’s Bride** at The Wedding Feast to come. The second death, The Lake of Fire, has no power over them. During the one thousand years, Israel is **saved** (Romans 11:25-26). Read all of Ezekiel 37-48. In Ezekiel 37, “**the valley of dry bones**” prophesied a physical resurrection of all Israelites who had ever

lived and they live for one hundred years both the young and the old (Isaiah 65). They are all converted by keeping **The Letter of The Law with Christ's new temple on earth**. Israel, as a nation, finally becomes God's witness to The Gentile Nations. Gentiles begin to keep The Letter of The Law and The Holy Days of God. Finally, millions are converted or **repent** and receive God's Holy Spirit and become His **sons and daughters**.

Those Gentile Nations farthest away from Jerusalem do not respond in keeping The Letter of The Law so they remain unrepentant. All they can see is the abundant riches and prosperity of Israel – especially Jerusalem. Satan, after the one thousand years, is released from his prison or place of restraint (hell) and sets about to deceive these very nations who have **not repented** (Revelation 20:7-9). Gog and Magog, those Gentiles of the most northern parts of the earth, form huge armies, and descend upon the very wealthy Jerusalem. God sends fire to the earth and consumes them.

The devil is cast into The Lake of Fire where **the beast and the false prophet** are. Now, everyone knows **the true** God, The Father and His Son, Jesus, The Christ, with His Bride (Revelation 20:7-10).

## **White Throne Judgment**

The Great White Throne Judgment is the time of **the second resurrection** but includes **the two harvests** to come – the **wheat harvest** and **the grape harvest** (Revelation 14). Christ explains these **resurrections** in John 5:28. Jesus said **all** who are **in their graves** will be **resurrected**. Then, those who have done **well**, but are not in **the first resurrection**, receive **life**. Those who have done evil, receive **damnation**.

The word “**damnation**,” in The English language, is a gross mis-translation in the Greek language. The Greek for “damnation,” is “krisis” or “**crises**.” It does not mean to be “damned” but literally means “a point of crisis” or “judgment.” Jesus defines some are **sheep** (repentant) and some are **goats** (unrepentant) (Matthew 25:31-41).

Some believe **The White Throne Judgment** has **two resurrections about one hundred years apart**. This is a big error as Jesus had stated, at the time of **this judgment, the division** is determined **all at the same time** (Matthew 25:32-33). Sheep and goats are all separated and rewarded or sentenced. **The sheep** enter God’s “**kingdom**” as Guests while **the goats** are to be thrown into The Lake of Fire (Matthew 25:34, 41). Prophecy shows you there were so many people at the time of this **judgment** that no place was found for them (Revelation 20:11-15).

God uses His *Book of Remembrance* (Malachi 3:16) to judge the people (Revelation 20:12). **Separation** between the **sheep** and **goats** is **determined** not by who **sinned the most**, but who **sought “the true” God and grew to “true repentance.”** It is very clear how God will judge (Malachi 3:16)!

Those not in *The Book of Life* or on an invitational list to *The Marriage Feast* are thrown into The Lake of Fire. To understand the process of what happens to those in The Lake of Fire, read the book, *God’s Work* and learn how they repent and become “**babes in Christ**.” Remember, God makes no mistakes. **God aborts no one** (Isaiah 66:8-9). But, only the **few are chosen** to be in or invited to The Wedding Feast (Matthew 22). Most of humanity must go through The Lake of Fire to be “**saved**.” Also, Jesus said, “**Many are called to The Wedding Feast** [the church – the **called-out** ones] **but are deceived** [because they have not quali-



fied].” All Christians and Israel **must spiritually grow** or come out of Babylon (Revelation 18:4).

The **first** to be thrown into The Lake of Fire is “**death**” and “**hell**” or “**the grave**” (Revelation 20:14). Before the **incorrigibly wicked** are thrown into the fire – death and the grave end. Death no longer exists when the wicked are thrown into The Lake of Fire. Those not written into *The Book of Life*, to be in The Wedding Feast are thrown into The Lake of Fire, but they will not die (Revelation 20:15).

## New Heaven And New Earth

God creates a **new heaven** and a **new earth** (Revelation 21:1-8). This new paradise is so beautiful and wonderful no thought will remain of the former. This **new earth** doesn’t contain oceans – only lakes, rivers and creeks. The earth will be vast. It is so large – New Jerusalem is 1500 miles in each direction or four square just as **the temple** in **heaven** and **earth**. This is truly **paradise** with **no death**, no pain, sorrow or stress. Everyone will have complete liberty. Everyone can do whatever they choose or have total free will (Romans 8). Why?

As Christ said in Matthew 5 “**Not one jot or tittle of The Law will pass until heaven and earth pass away.**” You are now in God’s “**kingdom.**” There is no **temple** or **court** because God, The Father and His Son, Jesus, are **the temple**. Their **glory** is so brilliant, the very sun and moon are not necessary. Now, everyone who is invited to The Wedding will be filled with God’s “**glory**” or “**the shekinah.**” No one sins because there is no longer any Letter of The Law to keep. Why? Because God is **writing His Law** in everyone’s hearts and minds. Your nature is God’s Holy nature and God is **all and in all** (I Corinthians 15:28). This ful-

fills **God's real purpose** for you and everyone else. Everyone is at complete liberty or freedom to do whatever they wish because they are **now Holy as God** and will always do what is good to God and His Creation. Everyone will be creators, as **sons and daughters** of God – **eternally**. God will keep creating and growing but now, only through His Son, Jesus. You will have God's strength and continue to create, four, five, ten and even more dimensions than can ever be imagined. Since everyone is **saved**, what are the rewards?

## The Wedding Feast

One of **the angels** who had **the seven vials** said, "**Look and see The Bride, The Lamb's Wife**" (Revelation 21:9). Then you read about New Jerusalem, The Lamb's Wife with all of mankind's **rewards** (Revelation 21). Everyone is saved, but there are different groups with **varied rewards** (Revelation 22). **All but one group** are invited to The Wedding. The left-out group is banned from entering The New Jerusalem and cannot have access to The Tree of Life.

The **One God, The Father**, only has **life** and is in the midst of New Jerusalem. God will make access to The Tree of Life exactly as it was in The Garden of Eden. God sits upon His **throne** and He will make **all things new**. This is a **totally spiritual dimension**. Nothing is corruptible or can be destroyed (Revelation 21:5-7). Then, **the city** is described. God will make available to everyone **the fountain of the waters of life** freely, even those who were in The Lake of Fire (Revelation 21:6). This is **the true fountain of youth**. No one has to be called. It is freely accessible to everyone – even those who came out of The Lake of Fire (Revelation 22:17). Israel as The Twelve Tribes are **the gatekeepers** or **ushers** to The Wedding Feast (Revelation 21:12). The foundation of the city

walls are The Twelve Apostles; and therefore, **the walls** are **the seven churches** who came out of Babylon and did not have The Mark of The Beast on them. They are The Bridesmaids. Forever a Bridesmaid, but never a Bride. The Guests are those who live outside The City of New Jerusalem, but will be The Guests at The Wedding and are in *The Book of Life* (Revelation 21:24). They continue to **spiritually grow** in God's "**kingdom**" because they must bring their growth to New Jerusalem to show God's "**glory**" from **the light** of The Lamb and The Father.

These will all have God's name, YHVH, in their foreheads or minds. They are The Sons of God and have the same name as The Father, YHVH (Revelation 22:4). The **Bride** consists of those who are the **righteous ones** or **saints** who dwell with Christ, their husband in The Holy Place with "**The Menorah**" and the table with the shewbread. The Bride lived by every Word of God and was in **the barley harvest – the firstfruits**. The **witnesses** (Israel and Judah) and The Guests are **the wheat harvest – the sheep**. Who is left?

## The Grape Harvest

Then God's "**wrath**" – His "**winepress**" or "**grape harvest**" will be unleashed on those **not invited to The Wedding**. **This winepress ended in The Lake of Fire** (Revelation 14 and 15). These are the ones who will come out of The Lake of Fire as "**spirit beings**," but still only **babes** and are carnal (I Corinthians 3:1-2). They did **repent** and their bodies are completely gone – only ashes remain. Only "**the spirit in man**" is left and now they receive a "**spiritual body**" – all are **saved** (I Corinthians 3).

Remember, only those who keep God's "**commandments**" in their "**hearts**" can enter The City of New Jerusalem (Revelation

22:14). Those who will be able to enter New Jerusalem will continue The Wedding Feast **eternally** by continually partaking of The Tree of Life. All those who went through The Lake of Fire cannot enter New Jerusalem until they eventually have God's Law in their hearts (Revelation 22:15). Until then, they will have **no access to The Tree of Life**. The "**abominable ones**" and "**the faithless**" must **spiritually mature** until they come to the stature of Christ!

These are those who are **the least in "the kingdom"** (Matthew 5:19). How will they **grow spiritually**? A great river will fill the earth with The Tree of Life on each side of this river. As **the leaves** from **the tree** fall off, these leaves along with the waters are for **the healing** or for continual **spiritual growth** of the nations who are **saved** and, also, those **without the city** (Matthew 22:1-2).

What is the **reward** of those who will then be **saved**, but still only "**babes in Christ**?" They will be crying in darkness and they are in grief over their stupidity for not coming to Christ (Matthew 22:13). They are the farthest from New Jerusalem and God's "**glory**." Without the sun and moon, they live so far away from God; they are in darkness. You could compare it to those at the two poles, getting six months of night with only some light during the day. They will have to continue living at this distance until they become **spiritually mature** and as they grow eventually they will be able to enter New Jerusalem with The Tree of Life and God's "**glory**."

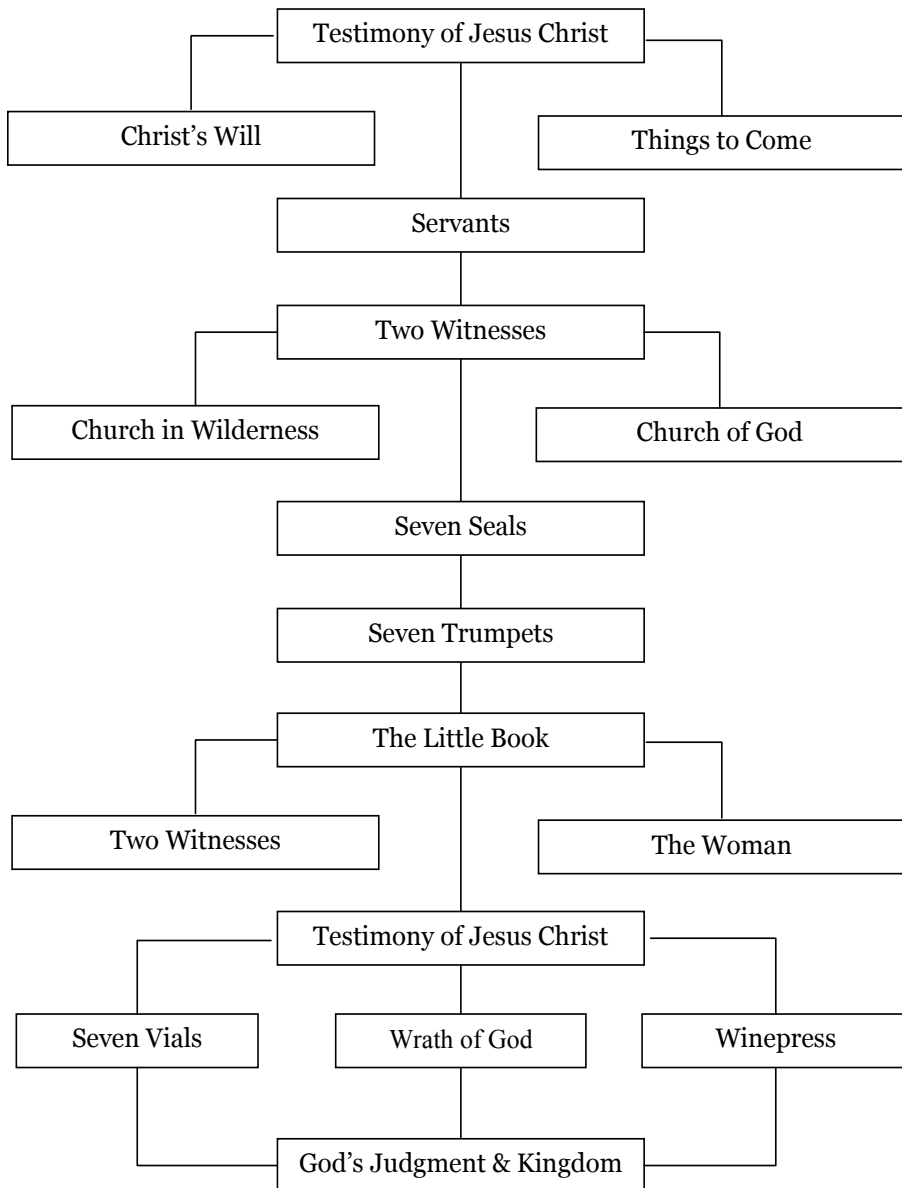
That is why **Revelation** concludes with only The Bride and The Holy Spirit inviting everyone to come and drink the **waters of life** freely! No Father or Christ calling, but The **Bride**, The Mother of **all** – New Jerusalem who will be nurturing everyone (Galatians 4).

## **Closing Of The Will**

This concludes the reading of Christ's "**will**" – *The Book of Revelation*! Notice the concluding warning: Anyone reading or hearing this "**will**," better not tamper with it (Revelation 22:18-21). If you tamper with it, you will have your name taken **out** of *The Book of Life* and will have to go through **the seven last plagues**. Christ warns His **servants** – "**Israel**" and "**the seven churches**" (all Christianity) to come out of Babylon! (Revelation 18:4)

**The Grace of Our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all! Amen!**

# Revelation Summary



# **THE GREAT APOSTASY**

**PROPHECY – VOL. IX**

**PART 2**

**BY**

**ART MOKAROW**

**And**

**CLYDE BROWN**

## Copyright Pending – *Book*

### Puzzles – Vol. I

God's Puzzle Solved

God's Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God's Mystery Fulfilled

### Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ's Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

### Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

### Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God's Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God's Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

### Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God's Law

The True Churches Of God

Paul's Religion

### Temple– Vol. VI

History Of God's Law

The Christian Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

### Deception – Vol. VII

God's Old And New Covenant

What's It All About?

Morality And Economics

The Times Of The Gentiles

Satan's Deception

### Worship – Vol. VIII

God's Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God's Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

### Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God's Story

History Of Revelation

### Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God's School

God's Science Vs. Human Science

### Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don't Bury Your Talents

God's Work Vs. Man's Work

### End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon's Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God's Gift Of Inheritance

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

### Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God's Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God's House

Bible Study God's Way

Biblical World History

### Basic Truth – Vol. XIV

Simplicity In Christ

Beginner's Bible Study

Christ In You

Competition

Visions, Dreams And Friends

Seeking God

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.



# **THE GREAT APOSTASY**

## **CONTENTS**

<b>PREFACE</b>	<b>v</b>
<b>A HISTORICAL PERSPECTIVE</b>	<b>1</b>
<b>HISTORICAL BASIS FOR THE APOSTASY</b>	<b>5</b>
<b>WHO WERE THESE FALSE APOSTLES?</b>	<b>9</b>
<b>GAIUS, THE FAITHFUL SAINT</b>	<b>15</b>
<b>THE BELOVED DISCIPLE</b>	<b>23</b>
<b>THE FOURTH BEAST OF DANIEL FRAGMENTS</b>	<b>33</b>
<b>ONE VOICE SPEAKS OUT</b>	<b>37</b>
<b>JESUS WAS NO STUDENT OF PLATONISM</b>	<b>45</b>
<b>WHEN GOD’S WORD CAME IN THE FLESH</b>	<b>51</b>
<b>THE FOURTH KINGDOM OF DANIEL NEVER CEASED TO EXIST</b>	<b>59</b>
<b>THE BEAST OF REVELATION 13</b>	<b>65</b>
<b>FROM THE PAST TO THE FUTURE</b>	<b>71</b>

# THE GREAT APOSTASY

## PREFACE

Many Christians who know The Truth of God and His Son, Jesus have been taught that “a great falling away” must happen just before Christ’s return. What may not be realized is the great falling away from the truth occurred thousands of years ago. Just forty years after the birth of Christ, Paul reveals the anti-Christ and the falling away from The Truth was already in play (II Thessalonians 2). In fact, there were many false preachers or anti-Christ’s about 50 a.d. according to Paul.

By the end of the first century, Christianity was already corrupted with false teachings against The Real True Jesus. In this book, you will read the outstanding account of this falling away as proved biblically and historically documented. In fact, Jesus prophesied after His death and resurrection, that many would come in His Name, by His authority, and deceive many (Matthew 24). Most of this book was written by Clyde Brown. He has a special gift for Bible history. My contribution is the biblical content.

When you see this eye-opening account of the early church history, you, too, will have proven that the first century churches were already riddled with the corruption of false teachings. No monies can ever be accepted, but feel free to offer any comments or criticisms. Ask for your free CD containing eleven books which you can read on your computer. Also, feel free to ask biblical questions by mail or e-mail [art@mokarow.com](mailto:art@mokarow.com). You may download books 1 through 11 plus new ones as they are completed from the Web site [www.godspuzzlesolved.com](http://www.godspuzzlesolved.com).

Clyde Brown  
Box 721471  
Pinon Hills, CA 92372

Art Mokarow  
Box 1197  
Montgomery, TX 77356

Art Mocarow  
Box 1197  
Montgomery, TX 77356

E-mail: [art@mocarow.com](mailto:art@mocarow.com)  
Web site: [www.godspuzzlesolved.com](http://www.godspuzzlesolved.com)

Download all books free of charge

<i>God's Puzzle Solved</i>	<i>Discovering God</i>	<i>God's Sabbath And Holy Days</i>
<i>God's Work</i>	<i>God's Original Bible</i>	
<i>Revelation Uncovered</i>	<i>Faith With Works</i>	<b><i>Children's Books</i></b>
<i>Christ In You</i>	<i>God's Story</i>	<i>God's Two Trees</i>
<i>The Great Apostasy</i>	<i>Bible Study Made Easy</i>	<i>God's Magical Ten Words</i>
<i>The White Throne Judgment</i>	<i>God's Will</i>	<i>God's Three Houses</i>

## CHAPTER 1

### A HISTORICAL PERSPECTIVE

**A historical perspective on the text of II Thessalonians 2:3 is given clarity through history. As shocking as it might sound, “the falling away” (Greek: “apostasia”) was and is a historical event. It is not just limited to some theoretical futuristic fulfillment. What is meant by the words: “falling away?” Is it possible that The Gentile Holy Roman Empire could have departed from the faith and then apostatized *The New Testament Gospel*? It should be every person’s desire to properly discern the historical evidence that is available – and now awaiting disclosure.**

A falling away through heretical teaching had already begun when The Apostle Paul wrote II Thessalonians. By the time of The Apostle John, The Apostasy had deepened. By the middle of The 2nd Century A.D., an even greater descent had begun. In 325 A.D., The Roman Emperor Constantine made **the apostasy** official. Darkness had descended. The Apostasy was a gradual development that began in The First Century A.D., as early as 50 A.D. There were those teaching The Day of The Lord had already come. This was the beginning of a different gospel that eventually led to The Holy Roman Empire.

#### **Satan’s Deception**

As *The New Testament* reveals, The Apostles realized that the

beginning of the falling away from **the true** teachings of Christ made it necessary for *The New Testament* to be assembled into book form. With the writing of *The Book of Revelation*, some of The Seven Churches in Asia Minor were being corrupted by pagan doctrines (*Revelation Uncovered*). Satan was instituting a superb marketing plan in his attempt to deceive The Christian Church. His marketing plan was to influence priests, ministers, elders, many scribes, books, newspapers, magazines, radio, TV and computers to drive Christians away from Christ and God, The Father.

### **Satan's Ploy**

Christ said, "**Man shall live by every Word of God**" (Matthew 4:4). What did Satan do? He used *The Scriptures* to attempt to deceive Christ at His "**temptation**" but it didn't work. Satan's system is to use half-truths to influence God's people. This is Satan's plan to keep God's children from becoming His sons and daughters. Satan employed his full effort in using half-truths against Christians to make you believe you actually have the full truth of God. That is, exactly, what happened to The First Century Church of God which started on Pentecost. To prove it for yourself you must examine the history of The New Testament Church.

### **God's Law**

At the birth of The Church on Pentecost, you find The Apostles continuing to worship in **the temple** in Jerusalem (Acts 3:1). They were, at that time, Christians with God's Holy Spirit, so why did The Apostles continue to pray in **the temple**? **The temple** was still God's house, as long as the **second temple** stood. The conversion of Cornelius (the first Gentile God-fearer) received God's Holy Spirit without being circumcised. Although he was

a Christian, he was not allowed to enter **the sacred courts of the temple**.

No Gentile (even one who had accepted The God of Israel) could enter **the sacred courts** without being circumcised. This was Satan's golden opportunity to divide Christians between The Jewish Christians and The Gentile believers. Satan used God's Law to divide and conquer Christianity right from its inception. Jews and the circumcised Gentiles could continue to worship in **the temple**. But, all the new uncircumcised Christians were not permitted into **the sacred courts of the temple**. Some Pharisees, who believed in Jesus, started to complain to the elders and Apostles in Jerusalem that The Gentiles must be circumcised. Satan had his opening.

Paul, James and Peter along with the other Apostles and elders and finally the entire Jerusalem Church, agreed it was not necessary for the uncircumcised Gentiles with God's Holy Spirit, to keep The Law or be circumcised. Barnabas and Saul were sent to **the mother church** in Jerusalem as a result of an incident that happened in Antioch. Peter and Barnabas were eating at **the table of fellowship** with the uncircumcised Gentiles and immediately removed themselves when they saw their brethren from Jerusalem (Acts 15).

The **Judaizers** claimed The Gentile God-fearer had to be circumcised and keep The Law of Moses in order to be **saved**. After much counsel a decree was sent to Antioch and it was agreed that The Gentiles did not need to be circumcised or keep The Law of Moses (Acts 15). The decree included refraining from idolatry, fornication and from the eating of blood. The decree was probably some version of The Levitical **commandments of cleanliness**. This decree was based on The Noahite Commandment given by

God at the time of the flood. The decree allowed table-fellowship and the sharing of meals between The Messianic Jews and The Gentiles who had already turned to **The One True God** and now accepted Jesus as The Messiah. The issue in **the church** over The Gentiles having to be circumcised was resolved and was no longer a problem in Antioch or any of the other **churches**.

Up to this point, no falling away from the truth had occurred. After the Acts 15 decree there is no scriptural evidence the “so-called” Judaizers continued to persuade The Gentiles to become Jews.

Paul warned the **mystery of iniquity** was already creeping into The Christian Church (II Thessalonians 2:7). This was a deception or ploy by Satan to introduce pagan doctrine into Christianity, which eventually would deceive the whole world.

The history of The Ministry of Jesus Christ is first presented in The Gospels of Matthew, Mark and Luke. After Jesus’ death, resurrection and exaltation to the right hand of God **in heaven**, **the church** began on the memorial day of Pentecost (Acts 2). **The Holy Spirit of God was poured out and the sign of the new beginning of repentance, baptism and the receiving of The Holy Spirit of God.** God never took away the human right to choose, so Satan stood ready to take advantage. **The history of choice** is what the story in this booklet is all about.

## CHAPTER 2

# HISTORICAL BASIS FOR THE APOSTASY

**Paul's first and second letter to The Thessalonians has been dated from 49 – 52 A.D. Let's begin with the profound statements by The Apostle Paul (II Thessalonians 2:3-7). Paul predicts a falling away will occur before The Return of Jesus Christ. Paul states, "The mystery of iniquity is already working and you must withdraw yourselves from every brother that walks disorderly" (Verses 5, 7). False teachings were creeping into The Church about The Kingdom to the point of denying The Resurrection. The book *Revelation Uncovered* states John wrote about this in Revelation 18:4.**

Paul was having trouble with false brethren teaching "a gospel" which was not another gospel, but a deceptive scheme of perverting the only true Gospel. God had cleansed and accepted The Gentiles, so salvation was not only for The Children of Israel but The Gentiles, also. Through Christ, the restoration of God had been accomplished. God was not only The God of Israel, but also The God of The God-fearing Gentiles.

Many Pharisees had, also, joined themselves to The Nazarene **movement** and had come to accept Jesus as The Messiah. But they claimed The Gentiles had to be circumcised and had to keep The Law of Moses to be **saved**. In the eyes of these Judaizers, it meant The Gentile Christian had to become "a Jew" – "religiously speaking."



Although The Jerusalem Apostles verbally ruled this was not the case, The Judaizers continued to insist The Gentiles be circumcised (Acts 11). When Paul wrote to The Galatians he marveled that they were so soon removed from the teaching of The One who had called them into **the grace** of Christ. Paul states it is not another **gospel** rather a perversion of **the true** Gospel they have been taught (Galatians 1:7). In The Mosaic Covenant The Gentile had to be circumcised and keep all The Law to be an inheritor of The Commonwealth of Israel (Exodus 12:48-49).

God pronounced uncircumcised Gentiles who have accepted The One True God of Israel were to be accepted in **the household** of **faith** without being required to keep the customs of The Jews. Although The Judaizers were overlooking the fact that God had pronounced The Gentiles clean, they misunderstood this aspect of The True Gospel. It was still not another gospel, as yet (Acts 10). Are you becoming aware of Satan's devices?

Satan's first deceit began in The Garden of Eden, as a serpent, with his ability to appear as "**an angel of light.**" What Satan is and what he appears to be, is quite different. He used God's words of truth and twisted them into a lie which is very characteristic of Satan as when he used "partial truths" in The Garden of Eden. So, it is not surprising that a lie was being foisted upon The Thessalonians. There were false teachers saying The Day of The Lord had already come (II Thessalonians 2:4). Who would have been teaching The Day of The Lord had already come? If The Day of The Lord already came, then God's "**kingdom**" had to, also, appear on this earth.

## **Steps Toward The Holy Empire**

The mystery of **iniquity** and **lawlessness** was already invading

The Thessalonians Church. *The Scriptures* are very clear. Jesus would **return** and establish The Kingdom of God on the earth. The Disciples had questioned Jesus, “**Will you at this time restore again The Kingdom to Israel?**” Jesus answered that it was not for them to know the times or the seasons, as it was in the hands of God (Acts 1: 6-7). It is important to realize Jesus **did not** deny The Restoration of The Kingdom of God. It was only the timing of The Restoration The Disciples were not to know. **Satan** would eventually **mask The Holy Roman Empire itself as The Kingdom of God**. This is The Fourth Kingdom of Daniel, which The Messiah (Christ) destroys when He **returns**.

No Jew taught from *The Hebrew Scriptures*, who had accepted Jesus as The Messiah, would have ever made a statement such as The Day of The Lord had already come.

The Kingdom of God restored to the whole House of Israel was a theme recorded in almost all of The Prophets of God in *The Hebrew Scriptures*. If this teaching did not come from The Jewish Disciples of Jesus that means, only The Gentiles were teaching The Day of The Lord had already come. As amazing as it may sound, Satan was using his own servants for his purpose and it was to Satan’s advantage. The Holy Roman Empire would become, “the servant of Satan” and as early as 49 – 52 A.D. It was then the foundation of Satan’s plan was laid. Since Jesus had already come in The Spirit, Satan’s plan would be that **The Kingdom of God** would be **The Holy Roman Empire**.

You do not need to judge the hearts of those, in what became The Holy Roman Empire, but be aware, less you, yourself, find yourselves in Satan’s religious system. In any case, to teach “The Day of The Lord had already come” **was false** and without any “**scriptural**” support. Messianic Jews who had accepted Jesus as

The Messiah, The Anointed of God knew for a certainty that The Return of Jesus had **not** occurred. The Gospel of The Kingdom of God was being perverted without any “**scriptural**” support. **The servants of Satan** were already at work in The Thessalonians’ Church.

## CHAPTER 3

### WHO WERE THESE FALSE APOSTLES?

**The Church at Corinth had many problems and Paul addressed them in his first letter. In the second letter, he reported false apostles and servants of Satan were making inroads into The Corinthian Church. You must fully understand these false apostles and direct your attention to them. Satan, as a predator, attacks the weakest link. The Corinthian Church, perhaps of all the congregations, was the most carnal. Paul's first letter to The Corinthians is admonishing them for starting divisions.**

Some were saying some are of Paul, others of Apollos and still others of Cephas (Peter). Still others were claiming to be of Christ but Paul found many in the groups were “false apostles” and were “the servants” of Satan. The opponents of Paul were: **False apostles, deceitful workmen and those who masquerade as Apostles of Christ.**

You can identify these false “apostles” as the very ones who claimed they were of Christ, but actually served Satan and his evil plan. Notice what these false apostles were claiming: **“<sup>21</sup>What anyone else dares to boast about [speaking foolishly], I dare also to boast about the same thing. <sup>22</sup>Are they Hebrews? So am I. Are they Israelites? So am I. Are they descendants of Abraham? So am I. <sup>23</sup>Are they servants of Christ? [talking like I am out of my mind] I am even more so”** (II Corinthians

11:21-23).

These are false apostles who are not servants of Christ. These false apostles were claiming to be of Christ and if they are lying about that, would they not be lying about most everything else? Masquerading as **apostles** of Christ implies **everything** they were claiming to be was a masquerade, as well.

The “notes” in *The NIV Study Bible* may make II Corinthians 11:22, more clear. **“Hebrews...Israelites...Abraham’s descendants. The claims implied here on the part of the false apostles indicate they were Jews who felt superior to Gentile Christians. From this there follows the probability that they were Judaizers, i.e., they wished to impose distinctive Jewish practices and observances as required for Gentile converts.”**

The scholars who produced the NIV “notes” have completely missed the point of what “a masquerade” is. What they were claiming to be was nothing but a lie. These false apostles were deceiving The Corinthians, with their masquerade. In the NIV notes, it appears the scholars, themselves, have believed a lie. Paul is confronting their lies, by saying that, he, in a greater way, is a true Apostle compared to them.

Paul is boasting as “a fool,” to confront the lies of these false apostles. Are they of Christ? How does Paul answer that question? **“<sup>3</sup>But I am afraid that just as the serpent deceived Eve by his treachery, your minds may be lead astray from a sincere and pure devotion to Christ. <sup>4</sup>For if someone comes and proclaims another Jesus different than the one we proclaimed, or if you receive another spirit than the one you received, or a different gospel than the one you accepted, you put up with it well enough”** (NIV) (II Corinthians 11:3-4).

They are not servants of Jesus Christ which Paul used as a parity. If they have convinced you they are what they claim to be, then Paul said, he, himself is more than what these **false super apostles** claim to be, who are actually servants of Satan. The whole masquerade is the fact they are not what they claim to be and The Corinthians seem to have fallen for their lies. **These false apostles were not Jews, not Hebrews, not Israelites; they were Greek false apostles who had crept in, and were, the servants of Satan.** Although, they claimed to be of The Jewish Apostles.

Paul calls these Gentile false apostles what they are, which is the opposite of what they have claimed. Paul puts it like this in II Corinthians 11:13-15. **“<sup>13</sup>For such people are false apostles, deceitful workers, disguising themselves as apostles of Christ. <sup>14</sup>And no wonder, for even Satan disguises himself as an angel of light. <sup>15</sup>Therefore it is not surprising his servants also disguise themselves as servants of righteousness, whose end will correspond to their actions.”**

The so-called Judaizers, themselves, never claimed to be apostles. Their argument was The Gentiles had to be circumcised and had to keep all of *The Torah* to be saved. Paul calls their message **false** but continues to call them **brethren** (Galatians 2:4-5).

Paul is referring to an incident that occurred in Antioch, which was before The Jerusalem Conference (Act 15). The Antioch incident was after the famine relief visit to Jerusalem (Acts 11:27-30). (Once The Acts 15 Conference was held and the decree was sent to the churches, there is no evidence, that those from The Jerusalem Church continued to attempt to “Judaize” The Gentiles).

The second visit to Jerusalem to which Paul is referring in The Galatians Letter is not The Acts 15 – Jerusalem Conference.

Note, this is still debated in scholarly circles. But, the chronology of Luke's Acts of The Apostles is to be preferred over the contention that Luke has incorrectly made the famine relief of Acts 11:27-30 the second visit. In other words, many scholars claim the visit in Acts 11:27-30, is actually the same visit as Acts 15. But this would mean that James, Peter, John and the entire Jerusalem Churches had reneged on the official decree of Acts 15 and that is impossible and is irresponsible to teach or try to expound.

This is decidedly unfair to the integrity of The Jerusalem Church and especially The Jerusalem Apostles who had been with Jesus during His entire historical ministry. The chronology of Luke in The Acts of The Apostles should be taken as valid and credible. Once you do, you understand the Jerusalem decree regarding the uncircumcised Gentiles was sent to the churches. There is not the slightest evidence the uncircumcised Gentile believers were ever again being forced into Judaism, nor forced to do The Letter of The Law.

The false teaching that The Day of The Lord “**had already come**” in The II Thessalonians Letter, came from The Gentiles – teaching an entirely different gospel. The Jews, including The Pharisees and Priests, who had accepted Jesus as The Anointed Messiah, have been wrongly accused of causing trouble in The Gentile Churches. When Luke's chronology in *The Book of Acts* is given validity, as it should be, the false apostles, those servants of Satan, are in most cases **Gentiles** masquerading as Apostles of Christ. As you will observe, the servants of Satan made inroads into **the churches**, the first time, in Corinth and then, it was spread to the other churches. It may be those teaching The Thessalonians had come from Corinth.

The second letter to The Corinthian Church is the clearest exam-

ple that the false apostles – the servants of Satan, were most likely Gentiles who had never truly accepted The One True God of Israel or *The Gospel* of The True Christ, The Anointed of God.

These false apostles were not Jews or Israelites, but rather Gentiles who had never accepted *The Gospel* teaching of The True Apostles in the first place (II Corinthians 11). Instead, they were servants of Satan attempting to counter **the purpose** and **plan** of God. At first glance it may seem circumstantial but when you have the correct time-line of all the events, you, too, will come to the same conclusions. The beginning of the apostasy began much earlier than has been previously recognized. The **scholarly focus** has been directed toward the so-called Judaizers and therefore, missing all the devices of Satan.

The servants of Satan, as the false apostles, invaded **the churches** and Paul calls them what they were, which is directly opposite to what they claimed to be. With this focus on Corinth, direct your attention to a companion of Paul named Gaius. Gaius is mentioned five times – four times in relation to The Apostle Paul and once in *III John*. This means Gaius has played a great part in the history of **the church**. Later in *III John*, Gaius upholds the true teachings from Jerusalem, while there is a “named character” who opposes The Jerusalem Missionaries.



## CHAPTER 4

### GAIUS, THE FAITHFUL SAINT

**Paul mentions he baptized Crispus and Gaius (I Corinthians 1:14). In Romans 16:24 Gaius of The Corinth Church hosts Paul and it is from Corinth he writes the letter to “the church” in Rome. The implication is Gaius is in a key leadership position in The Corinth Church. Gaius is also mentioned in Acts 19:29 and Acts 20:24 when a riot broke out in Ephesus because many throughout Asia Minor were turning to *The Gospel*.**

Demetrius was a silversmith, who along with other craftsmen made their livelihood making various crafts relating to the goddess Diana. Again those confronting Paul were not Jews but rather Gentiles who made their living selling idols and trinkets of the pagan goddess “Diana.” Gaius was with Paul along with other Disciples who fled Ephesus. You meet Gaius again in *III John*. Could the same Gaius in *III John* be the same Gaius who along with Paul and the other Disciples were run out of Ephesus? Scholars admit there is no sure way (historically) to tell if Gaius who was the companion of Paul and his host in Corinth, was the same person in *III John*.

Most consider the three letters of John were written from Ephesus. But this depends more on the unproven assumption that The Elder is The Apostle John who is thought to have written *The Book of Revelation*. Since it is an assumption in either case, you must take the position that The Elder who wrote **the three letters**

which has been assigned to John is **not** the same author, John, of *The Book of Revelation*. Some scholars point to the literary differences between *The Book of Revelation* and **the three letters** from The Elder.

The Apostle John was given the revelations before the **destruction** of **the second temple** which was even more compelling (Revelation 11:1-2). The implications are **the second temple** was still standing when John is instructed in vision to measure **the temple**. Remember, *The Book of Revelation* was only given to The Seven Churches in Asia Minor.

After John was released from the prison, he wrote **the introduction** to The Seven Churches in Asia Minor. In Revelation 1:9-10, John remarks these are the revelations he received while he was on The Isle of Patmos. The most likely time for John and others to have been exiled to The Isle of Patmos is when Nero was using The Christians as scapegoats; blaming them for the fire, which he, himself, had set in the burning of Rome.

Not only is the style of The Elder so different between *The Book of Revelation* and **the three letters**; you may consider **the three letters** as written by an unnamed **elder**. In reality, the scribe or writer is not what is important, but that it is *scripture*, which God “**inspired.**”

This, then, leaves The Apostle John as the author of *The Book of Revelation*. Most scholars contend Paul wrote the letter to The Romans from Corinth and was hosted by Gaius who resided in Corinth.

It is best to take **the third letter** from The Elder, who for the sake of clarity will be called John, even though the letters could **not** be

The Apostle John who wrote *The Book of Revelation*.

In III John, you meet a leader of **the church** or **churches** named Diotrephes. In his leadership over a church or group of churches he has the power to excommunicate any member who receives the missionaries from The Jerusalem Church.

### **Diotrephes, The Apostate In III John**

*III John* is addressed in this manner: “**The Elder unto the well beloved Gaius, who I love in the truth**” (III John 1:1). “**5Dear friend, you demonstrate faithfulness by whatever you do for the brothers. 6They have testified to your love for the church. You do well to send them on their way in a manner worthy of God**” (II John 1:5-6).

The Elder is commending Gaius for his receiving the brothers from The Jerusalem Church. It was customary to send missionaries out from The Mother Church in Jerusalem. Gaius began a **home church** in Corinth (Romans 16:3). The Fourth Gospel, as well as **the three letters**, we’re penned by the same individual; therefore, Jerusalem is the likely location from which the missionaries were sent.

It is most likely Gaius is the same person in *III John* as in: Acts 19:29 and 20:4; Romans 16:23; and I Corinthians 1:14. Paul was imprisoned in Caesarea in 56-57 A.D. The Corinthian Churches were comprised of Messianic Jews, Gentiles and Missionaries from The Mother Church in Jerusalem and is the context of *III John*. It doesn’t matter who The Elder was who was writing **these three letters**; irregardless, James, The Lord’s brother, was the leader of The Jerusalem Church until he was murdered in the spring of 62 A.D.

The Elder speaks not as an Apostle, as James, The Lord's brother, but as an Elder who was taught by James and other Jerusalem Apostles. While Paul was imprisoned in 56-57 A.D., The Sanhedrin Jewish court murdered James in 62 A.D. You may place **the third letter** of The Elder sometime after 62 A.D. and before the destruction of The Jerusalem Temple, which occurred in the fall of 70 A.D.

When The Apostle Paul was completely out of the picture with his imprisonment, the care of **the churches** in Corinth and Asia Minor would naturally become the responsibility of The Jerusalem Church. Gaius welcomed the brothers from The Jerusalem Church. On the other hand, Diotrefes, who was in a lead position of another **church** in Corinth, would **not** receive the brothers (Verse 9). Yet, when any of the members in **the church** did receive them, they, **themselves**, were put out of **the church**.

In *III John*, there is a break away from the leadership of The Jerusalem Church. As demonstrated in II Corinthian 11, false apostles, deceitful workers and servants of Satan had already made inroads into The Corinthian Churches.

Scholars date Paul's **two letters** to The Corinthian Churches sometime around 55 A.D. If **the third letter** of The Elder is sent after Paul's imprisonment in 56-57, and after the death of James, The Lord's brother, in 62 A.D., the evidence is strong for this **third letter** being written sometime between 62 and before 67 A.D. This date would naturally lend evidence that Gaius, Paul's companion, was the same Gaius in *III John*.

When **the second letter** of Paul to The Thessalonians is placed in 51-52 A.D., lawlessness was already affecting **the church**. The II Corinthians letter in 55 A.D. allows compelling evidence to be

strung together and shows a continuous chain of events where **the servants** of Satan were making inroads into The Churches of God.

Thus far, the historical evidence points not to the so-called Judaizers who were saying to The Thessalonians – “**The day of The Lord has already come.**” The evidence is much stronger than those falsely teaching The Thessalonians, were the same false apostles who were the servants of Satan, in I Corinthians, Chapters 10 and 11. For clarity’s sake, regard **the second letter** to The Thessalonians and **the third letter** from The Elder as written by John. Also, **the second letter** to The Corinthians, when **set into a correct chronology** and **time-line events** along with the **other letters**, suggests a compelling case that unconverted Greeks, the so-called patriarchs (not Judaizers) were perverting *The Gospel of God*.

The **new addition** of *The Anchor Bible Dictionary* under the heading of “*Diotrephes*” describes what is historically known of him. In *III John*, several scholars attempt an explanation with the problem The Elder was having with Diotrephes. The explanation begins with III John 9-10. “**9An early churchman who asserted authority over all in his local church, rejected the authority of the elder who wrote III John, <sup>10</sup>attacked the elder in public, forbade anyone to receive the Elder’s emissaries and excluded all who did.**”

The Anchor Bible Dictionary describes Diotrephes: The name “Diotrephes” means “nourished by Zeus” and occurs in *The New Testament* only in this one passage.

What is obvious from the context is that Diotrephes, indeed, had the power in **the church** to put anyone out who did not follow Him

(The Missionaries from The Jerusalem Church). It seems clear when Diotrefes rejected those sent from **the mother church**, he also rejected *The Gospel*. Satan could bring his own servants into **the true church** when you observe where Paul's mission field to The Gentiles originated. Paul's mission fields were The Synagogues and The Gentiles. Those attending The Synagogues were called "God-fearers." They had looked to The One True God of Israel but had not received circumcision.

These new Christians had now accepted Jesus, as The Messiah. The mission for Jews and Gentiles were to go out and make Disciples. It appears **the unconverted Gentiles** had **never** received the same instruction as The Gentiles who attended The Synagogues. Without the full instruction from *The Hebrew Scriptures* – the only *Bible* Jesus and The Apostles had, it was natural for "*The Torah-illiterate*" Gentiles to view many doctrines and instruction mainly from their own cultural Greek background.

So, it was inevitable these Gentiles incorporated into their background of Greek culture, along with paganism into *The Gospel* of God delivered by Jesus and The Apostles. These Gentiles interpreted all they were taught from The Greek's worldview and mindset. Without having *The Torah* teachings from a Hebraic view they began to pervert *The Gospel* in ways unimaginable by Paul and those teaching *The True Gospel*. *The Torah* or The Written Law was a **shadow** or a type of God's and Christ's **true kingdom**. *The Torah* reveals The True Messiah.

This was an opening for Satan to bring both **truth** and **error** into **the churches** being established and deceiving The Gentiles as he had deceived Eve in The Garden of Eden. The Gentiles who came later were brought into **the church** by those who originally had been trained in Hebraic views, decided on their own to **include**

**many pagan ideas** and incorporate them into The True Church of God. Remember God never hampers anyone's decision of **choice**. Disagreements between those who understood *The True Gospel* with these **false apostles** with Greek pagan baggage was bound to eventually split **the true churches**. It was the mixture of good and evil, which set the course, and in time led to the mixing of "**church**" and "**state**" in The Holy Roman Empire. This was truly what God warned Adam and Eve about The Tree of **Good** and **Evil** forever mixing **the truth** of *The Gospel* with falsehood.

But there is more – much more. In *The New Testament*, the servants of Satan were indeed these new Gentiles attempting to further establish the false apostles. When you read *III John* by The Elder, there is little doubt that Diotrephes is teaching a different gospel – a gospel of Zeus. If *The Fourth Gospel* was written after the martyrdom of James, The Lord's brother and before the destruction of **the second temple**, it is likely **the three letters** were written before **the temple's** desolation. Can it be proved **historically** and **biblically** that *The Fourth Gospel* and the **three letters** were written not long after 62 A.D.?

## CHAPTER 5

### THE BELOVED DISCIPLE

**There are several *Scriptures* in *The Fourth Gospel*, which implies it is quite likely The Beloved Disciple is James, the brother of Jesus, the second born to Joseph and Mary. When you read *The Fourth Gospel* in the Jewish historical context, Jesus gave the care of His mother to the second born when He was about to die on the cross.**

When Jesus was upon the cross, He saw His mother and The Disciple standing by (whom He loved) and said to His mother, “**Woman, behold your son.**” [Then He said to The Disciple in John 19:26-27] “**Behold your mother.**”

When there is a death of the father in the family, the responsibility falls to the firstborn son. With the death of the firstborn the responsibility passes to the second born and James, The Just, was the second born. In the Jewish culture and society, the Jewish family ties were very strong and the likelihood of Jesus passing the care of His mother to a Disciple other than James, His brother, would not make sense.

James, the brother of Jesus, was **the overseer** of the movement Jesus had begun. He was the first named by The Apostle Paul along with Peter and John as the pillars in **the mother church** in Jerusalem (Galatians 2:9). There would be no reason for Jesus to pass the responsibility of their mother to another when James, a Disciple and the second born son, was given the earthly care of The



Jerusalem Church and its outreach. Jesus and His brother, James, were the only ones sent to preach The Gospel to Israel. Paul was The Apostle, out of season, sent to preach to The Gentiles.

## **Crisis In The Church**

Why would the author of *The Fourth Gospel* not clearly name “James, called The Just”, as The Beloved Disciple, which would then leave no question as to the identity of The Disciple whom Jesus loved? The answer is found in John 21:21-23. A crisis was developing in **the church**. It was rumored The Disciple whom Jesus loved would remain until The Return of Jesus.

The author of *The Fourth Gospel* had to correct a misunderstanding. The believers in The Nazarene Movement thought Jesus had said “The Beloved Disciple would remain until He actually returned.” This misunderstanding had to be cleared up. Examine carefully the full context. **“<sup>21</sup>So the saying circulated among the brothers and sisters that this disciple was not going to die. <sup>22</sup>But Jesus did not say to him [Peter] that he was not going to die, <sup>23</sup>but rather if I want him to live until I come back what concern is that of yours?”** (John 21:21-23).

The crisis would not have occurred as long as The Beloved Disciple was living. The crisis was created when The Beloved Disciple died. James, the second born son of Mary and Joseph, was martyred in 62 A.D. by The Sanhedrin Court.

To correct the misunderstanding of the crisis, realize that *The Fourth Gospel* could not have been written later than just after the martyrdom of James, The Lord’s brother. James was martyred at The Passover in the spring of 62 A.D., and therefore, shortly after *The Fourth Gospel* was written. The same author of *The Fourth*

*Gospel* likely wrote *The Three Letters – I, II, III John*. The literary style is the same.

*The Book of Revelation* identifies John in Revelation 1:1-2. “**1The revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to shew unto his servants things which must shortly come to pass; and he signified it by his angel unto his servant John: Who bare record of the word of God, and of the testimony of Jesus Christ, and of all things that he saw.**”

Is there a connection to the **mystery of iniquity** that was invading The Thessalonians’ Church and **the churches** in Corinth, which led in the direction of what, later, became The Holy Roman Empire? The road to The Holy Roman Empire is in II Corinthians 10 and 11, as well as the break and separation from The Jerusalem Church teachings in III John. In The Letter to The Seven Churches in Asia Minor you find false apostles, claiming they are teaching the same *Gospel* which was given from The Jerusalem Church in Judea.

With the witness of Paul and the witness of The Elder in *III John*, **an apostasy** was creeping slowly into **the churches**. It should not be surprising to find a third witness in *The New Testament* texts. You will find the third witness in *The Book of Revelation* (The Apostle John may have been the author).

## **Letter To The Seven Churches In Asia Minor**

Out of The Seven Churches, The Church of Philadelphia receives the highest mark of approval. Notice the first instructions given to The Church in Philadelphia in Revelation 3:9: “**I am going to make those people from the synagogue of Satan – who say they are Jews [Judeans] yet are not, but are lying – look, I will make**

**them come and bow down at your feet and acknowledge that I have loved you.”**

It is important to note that Jesus says **those who say they are Jews** [or Judeans as the Greek can be translated either way] **YET ARE NOT.**

To The Church in Ephesus in Revelation 2:2: **“I know your works as well as your labor and steadfast endurance, that you cannot stand evil. You have put to the test those who refer to themselves as apostles [but are not] and have discovered they are false.”**

The Church in Ephesus is complimented on the one hand, but on the other hand, is told they **“lost their first love.”** They are admonished to return to their first love especially when they found the so-claimed apostles **were false.**

The Church in Smyrna has the second highest marks of approval. **“I know your works, and tribulation and poverty, [but you are rich] and I know the blasphemy of them, which say they are Jews and are not, but are of the synagogue of Satan”** (Revelation 2:9).

The Greek word for “Jews” can also be translated “Judeans,” which is used in a geographical sense to identify “The Jews in The Land of Judah” when The Jews were scattered into the other nations. When you place the geographical term Judeans in the Verse 9 context, it must be questioned when *New Testament* scholars claim The Synagogue of Satan are the same as The Jewish Synagogues.

While they claim they are Judeans or Jews teaching *The Gospel*

from The Jerusalem Apostles, in Judea, they are **not**; they are of **the synagogue of Satan**. The same castigation against those who say they are Judeans but are not, but are of the **synagogue of Satan**. Jesus uses the same definition in The Philadelphia Church (Revelation 3:9).

Although The Seven Churches of Asia Minor had problems which needed to be corrected, **the churches** that had broken away from The Jerusalem teachings, had gone their own way and were of the **synagogue of Satan**. *Expositors Bible Commentary*, Volume 12. Page 438, v. 10, synagogue of Satan reads: “*The ‘Synagogue of Satan’ refers then, to certain Jews in ancient Smyrna who, motivated by Satan, slandering the church there. The term should never be used indiscriminately applied to all Jewish synagogues.*”

Jesus Christ dictated The Letter to The Seven Churches to John. No intention is meant to discredit this excellent scholar who in most cases supplies valuable historical information. But in this case “**his**” comments require scrutiny. Surely Jesus, who was born a Jew, grew up in The Jewish culture of synagogue teachings and certainly knew the difference between a Jew and a Gentile.

Jesus says those claiming to be Jews, **ARE NOT JEWS**. The Greek word for “**Jews**” can also be translated “**Judeans**” which would then mean “The Synagogue of Satan are claiming to be teaching the same *Gospel* as The Judean Church.” How could any dedicated scholar, in all sincerity, say these were “**certain**” Jews?

Although it is not always realized how these **scriptures** are read, it all depends on what presumptions you bring to the text. More often than not, you will find carry-overs from The Greek and Latin

Church Fathers who were anti-Jewish or anti-Judaism.

In recent history, scholars writing about The Hitler Holocaust brought shame to The Christian Church. It may have put away the anti-Jewish rhetoric, but still unknowingly pointed fingers at The Jews. They continue perverting *The Gospel* of The Gentiles. It is The Gentile-**illiterate** in the Hebraic **worldview**, bringing The Greek **worldview** with them into **the church**. As early as 49-50 A.D., **the mystery of iniquity** had begun to take root in The Thessalonica Church.

Are those of **the synagogue of Satan**, his servants (II Corinthians 11), who appear to be **the super apostles**, teaching The Day of The Lord had already come in The Thessalonica Church? Did they receive revelation from **the wrong spirit** (from Satan) **that The Day of The Lord had already come**? These are questions you should consider very carefully.

You should explore *The Letter* to The Sardis and Laodicea Churches. In each letter, there is little commendation; and instead, teaching repentance and admonition. Direct your attention to **the churches** in Pergamos and Thyatira. *The Book of Revelation*, given to The Apostle John, was when he was on The Isle of Patmos. These revelations came before the destruction of **the second temple**, which occurred in 70 A.D.

The Letter to The Church in Pergamos is the location where Satan's throne resides (Revelation 2:13). Jesus had many things against The Church in Pergamos.

- 1 Some people are following The Teachings of Balaam, which, puts a stumbling block before The People of Israel so they would eat food sacrificed to idols and

commit sexual immorality (Revelation 2:14).

- 2 Some of you, today, follow the same teachings of The Nicolaitans. The Nicolaitans had mixed their paganism into *The True Gospel* as taught by Jesus and The Apostles (Revelation 2:15).

The Church of Thyatira was allowing a prophetess in **the spirit** of Jezebel to teach and secretly lead away the servants of Jesus to commit fornication. The call for “**repentance**” speaks loudly when you open your heart and mind to God’s “**word.**”

Many **scholars** recognize that paganism was recast by The Holy Roman Empire and those same **symbolisms** were applied to their form of Christianity. The City of Pergamos was **the seat of Satan** and Thyatira was the nearest church to Pergamos, which explains why evil was more prevalent in these two churches than any of the others.

Is it possible that Satan moved **his seat and throne** from Pergamos to The Holy Roman Empire when it was established by The Emperor Constantine? It was Constantine who established The Holy Roman Empire, by combining “**church**” and “**state.**” The Fourth Beast of Daniel 2 literally took over “**the church.**”

The Kingdom of God that would literally be established upon earth, as spoken by The Prophets in *The Hebrew Scriptures*, **was changed to The Holy Roman Empire as The Kingdom of God.** The Kingdom of God established on the earth was supposed to be The Roman Empire and they promised their reward would be a place in **heaven.** Satan had been cast out of heaven, the very place he wished to return and place his throne next to God. Read *God’s Puzzle Solved* – Chapter 12. “The falling away from the

true gospel Paul predicted in *II Thessalonians* may be the beginning of a different gospel which finally became the established Orthodox in The Holy Roman Empire – when Jesus, The Son of God, became officially Jesus, **God The Son**, in 325 A.D., a date of considerable significance – then it spread to the whole world. It became Constantinian Christianity rather than **biblical truth**.”

Once The Orthodox view was established, it was followed by the efforts of The Roman Empire **to crush all other competing beliefs**, either A FACSIMILE OF PAGANISM OR A FACSIMILE OF THE TRUTH. The sword and power of The Roman Empire under The Emperor Constantine stamped out and defeated the other competing interpretations of *The New Testament* Writings. A date of significance – 325 A.D., the spread of Constantine dogmatism was established.

The Gentile Christianity accepted by Constantine was a mixture of truth and error. Could Satan have used the same deception to deceive Eve and also, to deceive The Greek – Constantine along with The Bishops he had gathered to his side? In any case you should now take up the subject of The Holy Roman Empire. Is it possible to observe Constantine in the role of **a false prophet**?

Constantine’s opposing visions and dreams were completely contradictory to what Jesus taught. It was **not total error** – but it was the mixture of good and evil that was so dangerous. This was The Tree of **Good** and **Evil** all over again!

Through paganism, they made Jesus another “**god**” and it became an essential doctrine in Orthodoxy. A **false Christ** which was created in sculptures and paintings began to spread to the four corners of the earth. It was fashionable by Roman and Greek artists to create busts and depictions of heroes who were deified. This

is a valid explanation as to why it was so easy to break **the commandment** against making images.

Images were so prominent in that day that it was a simple step to make images of the most important entity of all – God, The Son, which included Mary, **The Mother of Jesus**, as a title she was given. This started the idea of praying through Mary along with many other saints. They have been given some sort of immortal sainthood, crediting them with miracles and believing they can answer prayers. These types of false miracles were akin to calling up the dead, a pagan custom known throughout the world for thousands of years. They completely ignore what Christ said on how you should pray, **“Our Father who art in Heaven.”** Not anyone else. Not any made up **mini-gods** or to anyone else.



## CHAPTER 6

# THE FOURTH BEAST OF DANIEL FRAGMENTS

The unity of the historical Roman Empire began to split The East from The West. The Emperor Constantine named his capital city Constantinople. Known today as Istanbul, Turkey, he named the capital after himself. The Roman Empire, at this time, was in complete disarray. In biblical terms the fragmentation was as a deadly wound to its unity. The old religions were losing their appeal and through an image in the sky and subsequent dreams, a new religion began taking shape. It was a state religion based upon some good [Christ] and a great deal of evil [paganism].

The Emperor in The East saw an image of a **cross** in the sky, with the Latin inscription, “use this and conquer.” From The Emperor Constantine there is “the healing of the deadly wound” and the final descent into darkness. The **falling away** from *The True Gospel* (God and Jesus, The Christ) became twisted and perverted with the inclusion of paganism. In 325 A.D., as the **false prophet** and The Emperor, Constantine, opened the door to perpetrating **the image** to be Jesus. From there it began to be spread to the four corners of the earth.

While the majority of Christians are expectantly waiting a future time when the image of the beast shows itself, they fail to realize **the beast is already here**. The surprising fact is that it has been

prominently displayed in public places for a very long time. The image is on display in believer's homes – over the mantle and around women's necks. The identity of this image will not only shock the masses – but will enrage the majority – because they just will **not believe** that an item that has been used so freely and seen so often as **holy** – is in fact, this dreaded image of Satan, who can appear as an angel of light, complete with long hair, but representing Zeus.

There has been a historical **falling away** from The True Gospel; a process that did not occur **all at once** and the reasons are manifold. The principle of learning from **history** is so the same mistakes will not be repeated. But humanity has yet to learn this lesson.

## **Great False Image**

Could a great visionary phenomena of a projected image be seen in **the end of days**, which suggests it will be none other than Satan? This image will be believed by many to be **The Return of The True Christ**. “**Another Jesus...for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light...**” II Corinthians 11:4, 14).

Angels, themselves, have appeared in the form of a man. Despite how Satan might appear on the outside, his character underneath is that of a serpent – just as in The Garden of Eden. An appearance of a serpent could never have deceived Eve. The serpent is a description of the fallen nature of **the angel of light**. The Apostle Paul told you Satan **can** appear as **an angel of light**. So, it is only a small step to say an angel can appear as a man.

In the book *God's Puzzle Solved*, read Chapter 12 entitled ‘*Satan – God's Helper*’ (pages 340-341), for the true appearance of Satan.

Satan had used half-truths and half-lies which made Eve fall for the deception. Satan is not above using “**the very word**” of God and twisting the truth with a little deception for his own purpose. The following night Constantine had a dream in which he thought Jesus appeared and gave him **the sign of the cross** and He was told “to pick up the sword, to go and conquer.”

### **The Image Of The Cross In The Sky**

The story is told that The Emperor Constantine and his soldiers saw a flaming cross in the sky, accompanied by the words “*Touto nika*” which is interpreted: “By this conquer.”

The Apostle Peter drew a sword and cut off the ear of **the servant** of The High Priest (Matthew 26:50-51). He was told by Jesus to: “...**Put up the sword**...[Jesus then said to Peter]...**for all who draw the sword will die by the sword**...”

There is a stark contrast between the teachings of Jesus and teachings of The Emperor Constantine. Which one had the truth? Many false prophets would come who claimed to have the teachings of Jesus. Even at the end, some will say Jesus has been spotted over here or over there or in various other places (Matthew 24:23).

Eventually, Jesus said, that **the false Christ** masquerading as The True Christ would even be seen in the secret chambers (Matthew 24:26). When you proceed to plumb the depths of the prophetic words in Revelation 13 about the beast and the image of the beast, an interpretation will be offered how this **false image of Jesus** has been spread to the four corners of the earth. But for now, you need to understand how this **Unholy** Nicene Council came to be.

When did this darkness begin to descend over the so-called Greek

**church fathers?** There are hints of the encroaching darkness when **the church historian**, Eusebius, describes letters from the early Gentile patriarchs – such as Hegesippus, Irenaeus and Clement. Of course, Eusebius, not being a Disciple of *The True Gospel*, saw these patriarchs as **heroes of the faith**. You must discern the difference between **the faith of The Greek Patriarchs** and **the faith of Jesus and His first-century Disciples**. Do not assume that both forms of **faith** were the same.

Eusebius was **the first church historian** who recorded the events, of the developing Gentile Christianity after the death of all of The Apostles. The earliest patriarchs such as those previously named began to develop beliefs almost opposite to *The New Testament* “**writings**.” The closer you come to the last quarter of the second century the further away The Greek **church fathers** moved from The One True God of Israel (Deuteronomy 6:4). The Hebrew opinion of The Jewish Apostles, which underlies the Greek language of *The New Testament*, was REPLACED with Greek “**philosophical**” thinking. The Apostles continued the mission by taking The Gospel to the nations after Jesus ascended to heaven. They taught from *The Greek Bible*, which was translated from the Hebrew. The danger in any translation from one language to another is the loss of the cultural misunderstanding of the words of the original language.

Without the Hebraic **foundation** underlying the Greek language, the philosophy of The Greeks inevitably lead to false presumptions. The culture of **the many gods**, is polytheism, so it is not that difficult to reduce **the many gods** to two or three gods disguised as The One True God.

## CHAPTER 7

### ONE VOICE SPEAKS OUT

A prominent scholar and writer, James A. Sanders, is Professor Emeritus of Biblical Studies. In his book, *The Bible at Qumran*, his chapter entitled ‘*Canon as Dialogue*’ page 24, has the following comment:

**“...Whereas the Trinitarian formula was designed to be a safeguard against polytheizing with its emphasis on The True God, it has consciously or unconsciously been understood with a polytheizing hermeneutic...”** (The art or science of the interpretation of literature).

Professor Sanders has stated clearly that it is impossible to explain the notion about the triune God on a basis of logic without using terms that are polytheistic in nature. Sanders continues: “It ought to have prevented what gradually came to be the way the churches read the second Testament, namely, by a Christocentric hermeneutic. Yet, it did not, in and of itself, because Christians began to fail to heed the first three commandments, which prohibit polytheism, idolatry and co-opting God’s name for one point of view (whether in court or life).”

Professor Sanders has for decades been a leading proponent of honest dialogue with an open mind to understand the differences in views between Jewish and Christian scholars. From the dialogue between both sides on many issues, some **progress** has been

made. Obviously there is, yet, a long way to go toward a full restoration of **the original gospel**. Take careful note of what The First Three Commandments to which the Christian scholar Sanders refers:

**1<sup>st</sup> Commandment: You shall have no other Gods before me.**

**2<sup>nd</sup> Commandment: You shall not make unto you any graven image or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth.**

**3<sup>rd</sup> Commandment: You shall not take the name of the Lord your God in vain.**

Even if the believing masses from 325 A.D., to this very day, claim Christian icons and images do not break The Three Commandments – their thinking must be questioned. Ask yourself the following question: “Can you imagine God granting permission to The Children of Israel to keep the golden calf, as long as they did not bow down to worship it?”

Deception occurs when you believe a lie or a partial lie, which you think to be **the truth**. Eve believed a lie which was presented to her by **the evil one**. In like manner, The Gentile Church believed the lie that was instigated by **the evil one** in that day. The great lie (apostasy) was presented as **the truth**. You and every Christian must prove this to be so, through much prayer and studying *The Scriptures*.

You will have no excuse proving one way or the other if these **three commandments** are being broken today. James makes this

most clear in James 2:10. **“For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.”**

All The Ten Commandments form **one indivisible unit**. To break one or remove one, divides The Ten, which God gave as indivisible. This is the point James is making. If there are icons or images of artist’s conceptions about **how** Jesus was presumed to have appeared in human form, then **the first three commandments** of God are being broken. Christianity goes to extremes reproducing **images** of their **little gods** while fooling themselves into believing they worship **The One True God**. At face value alone, it stands to reason this is the breaking of **the commandments**.

In general, people do not check what they have not been taught. But, if you now understand – and go on to **prove all things** – you come to know this truth – you will, then be held **accountable**. This is a serious matter. **“Prove all things and hold fast to that which is good”** (1 Thessalonians 5:21).

## **How Did The Apostasy Occur?**

In order to understand how **the apostasy** occurred, you can examine the confessions made by an early church father, Saint Augustine. **The apostasy** occurred as the result of The Law – **The Torah**, Prophets and **“writings”** being allegorized by the Greek and Latin **church fathers**. *The Old Testament* should have continued as the background for interpreting *The New Testament* **“writings.”**

Evidence for this claim is provided by *The New Testament* itself in Luke 24:44-45. **“<sup>44</sup>All things must be fulfilled, which were written in the Law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms, concerning me. <sup>45</sup>Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures.”**

*The New Testament* clearly defines these three great overall categories of *The Old Testament* and calls them **The Scriptures**. This attitude and practice should have continued as a basis for all *Bible* doctrine. Instead they were replaced by elements of Greek philosophy. Consequently, it became the underlying basis for the emerging apostasy after Jesus, The Christ ascended to be with His Father.

All of the proofs given by The Apostles that proclaimed Jesus as The Messiah – came from *The Old Testament*. It was the only *Testament* in existence at that time. *The Old Testament* was called **The Scriptures** as well as *The Holy Scriptures* (II Timothy 3:15). How could something that was “...**Holy**...” change to eventually becoming “unholy?” What happened is this body of knowledge given by God, Himself, was determined to be **lesser** when compared to the philosophical knowledge that was emerging from The Greek and Roman Empires. Then, The Holy Roman Empire through Constantine became the sole interpreter of Christianity – putting aside *The Holy Scriptures*.

Without *The New Testament* “writings,” Christian believers, down through the ages, would have become hopelessly lost. So, a record had to be created in order to demonstrate that Jesus fulfilled those things spoken about Him in The Law and The Prophets. In short, *The New Testament* “**writings**” can only be understood from the background of *The Old Testament*. This is the reason *The New Testament* became **scripture**. Since *The Old Testament* was rejected – *The New Testament* became the only **scripture** revealing The Messiah.

True believers could never have received their understanding from Athens, Rome or Egypt. That is the underlying lesson you must focus upon. Out of Jerusalem, **the truth** shall come forth from Zion.



## Bad Choices

When The Greek and Latin **church fathers** looked to the pagan philosophers, they were not looking to *The Hebrew Scriptures – The Holy Scriptures* as a foundation for understanding *The New Testament*, “**The foundation the builders have rejected**” (Matthew 21:42).

Only through much prayer and study will you begin to understand **the truth**. By proving if **these things** are so, as The Bereans did, will you know God’s “**truth**.” Be aware of what James warned, “...**Therefore to him that knows to do good, and does it not, to him it is sin**” (James 4:17).

**Accountability** is based upon adequate **knowledge**. If you examine the evidence – and then prove the statements made – your accountability is called for at that time – not before. Jesus made that quite clear when he said in John 9:41, “...**If ye were blind, you should have no sin: but now you say, ‘We see’ therefore your sin remains.**”

This information is presented not to scare you – only to set forth the evidence from **the biblical evidence** and the consequences that result. In conscience and allegiance to God and to The Lord Jesus Christ, **you must prove this information**. “**It is for you to prove these things and hold fast to what is good and true**” (I Thessalonians 5:21).

The way of Greek and Latin “so-called” **church fathers** may have seemed right in their own eyes, but they were meddling with **the truth**. Do not forget that these men were viewing the overall situation at that time through the lens of Greek philosophy – and not through the lens of *The Hebrew Scriptures – The Law, Prophets*

and “**writings.**”

Who has ever considered that the notorious **falling away** mentioned in II Thessalonians 2:3 is a matter of historical fulfillment? Nearly everyone makes a basic assumption. They are looking to the future for the fulfillment of this famous prophecy. Consequently, the best means to begin this road to discovery – is by presenting you with a searching question. That question reveals how this story should be told. “Do you currently possess enough historical information that allows you to understand how The Greek and Latin **church father** interpreted *The New Testament writings*?”

Amazingly, you can possess this vital information. It has existed in the ancient records – but no one seems to have paid any attention to it. This is incredible to behold. History tells about one specific **church father** who has been accorded the highest reputation of all. Prominent scholars have defined him as the **greatest theologian after The Apostle Paul**. Just think of that designation. Who could this man be?

This famous man is Saint Augustine. His full name is Saint Augustine of Hippo (born Nov 13, 354 and died Aug 28, 430). He is considered to be, “...the dominant personality of The Western Church of his time, generally recognized as the greatest thinker of Christian antiquity.” Are you surprised? You should take an incisive look at what Augustine recorded during this vital period of **early church history**.

You must do this because Augustine is perceived as an **ultimate authority** in these matters. Augustine believed what he had read in the writings of Plato, which **only** appeared to be the **same concepts** espoused in the prologue of *The Fourth Gospel* in John

1:1-14. The keynote here is to discern that it was through **the teachings of the pagan philosophers** that the prologue of *The Fourth Gospel* was interpreted.

What would have been the worst case scenario of blasphemy to Jesus and The Disciples became a natural conclusion when **the writings of the Greek pagan philosophers** became the criteria for discerning the prologue of John 1:1-14. Since these were the proof texts for those **church fathers**, a restoration is in order.

The prologue of John should at once be placed back into The Hebrew **context** of the true meaning that was originally placed by The Jewish Disciple who wrote it down for all to see. To begin this analysis, you must examine the primary confession which is of major significance uttered by Augustine. This confession is quoted in the scholarly work compiled by James G.D. Dunn. “He fused the religion of The *New Testament* with the Platonic tradition of Greek philosophy...” (*Encyclopedia Britannica*, Vol. I, p. 650 [15<sup>th</sup> Ed.]). In his authoritative book, *Christology in The Making*, the following is the statement made by Augustine: “...In them (some of the books of Platonists) I read not, of course, word for word, though the sense was the same and it was supported by all kinds of different arguments – that “at the beginning of time “The Word” already was; and God had “The Word” abiding in Him, and “The Word” was God. And the light shines in darkness, a darkness which was not able to master it. I read too that the soul of man, although it “bears witness of the light, is not the light.” But “The Word,” who is Himself, God, “is the true light which enlightens every soul born into the world. He, through whom the world was made, was in the world, and the world treated him as a stranger.”

But I did not find it written in those books that “He came to His

own, and they who were His own gave Him no welcome. But all those that did welcome Him He empowered to become **the children** of God, all who believe in His name.” In the same books I also read of The Word, God, that His “birth came not from human stock, not from nature’s will of man’s, but from God.” But I did not read in them that “The Word” was made flesh and came to dwell among us...” “*Confessions*” V.11.9 (following the translation by R. S. Pine-Coffin in *Penguin Classics* 1961) p. 339.2.

You can easily perceive the underlying significance in the shocking quotation. Obviously, *The Book of John* was not used to interpret Plato, but rather, Plato was being used to interpret John’s *Gospel*. Can you fathom this? Were you aware that this basis for interpretation was being propounded by **the false early church fathers**? It should be shocking to everyone.

Can you begin to realize what Augustine has implied here by his confession? He is implying that the **pagan polytheistic philosophers** had the truth about The One True God. Augustine observed and reported that the pagan Platonists possessed “**their truth.**” These statements recorded from Augustine should trouble any serious Christian seeking **the truth**. In the introduction, it was stated: When darkness descended (**on the truth**) it led to vast changes in the believing community.

When was Jesus ever a student of pagan Greek philosophy? Honestly, how would you answer this question? Frankly, this very idea is preposterous.

## CHAPTER 8

# JESUS WAS NO STUDENT OF PLATONISM

It is almost unbelievable that *The New Testament* scholars can credit Augustine with being the greatest theologian after Paul. Should you follow the teaching of Jesus in *The Gospels* – or look to the philosophers of Greece? Where did the teaching of Jesus actually originate? How that question is answered – may demonstrate the degree you have for “the truth” of God. For those Greek and Latin “church fathers” to find their truth in pagan philosophers is truly absurd and almost laughable, if it were not for the seriousness of it for all – especially for Christians who are looking for “the truth.”

You should consider this is an indication of accurately defining the word “**apostasy**” – “**falling away**” in **II Thessalonians 2:3**. Now, how did all this happen? When did this “falling away” into apostasy begin? Hang on to your hat. The story begins with The Ministry of Jesus and the original source of His teachings.

Simply stated, Augustine claimed, “...**The truth was to be found in the teaching of pagan Greek philosophers.**”

But most important of all – and here is the crux – it is from these pagan philosophers all the teachings of the early Greek **church**

**fathers** were derived. Furthermore, it was from these philosophers that *The New Testament* “**writings**” were interpreted. **That alone should shock you.** But there is more – much more.

**Jesus had a message.** He called it “*The Gospel* or good news of The Kingdom of God.” Many clear *New Testament* texts support this. Where did Jesus obtain the information He began to preach and teach after being baptized by John – and anointed for His historical ministry? It came from God (John 7:16). It came from *The Scriptures* (John 5:38-39). Jesus said to His Disciples, “**Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill**” ( Matthew 5:17).

The meaning is obvious. Jesus stated that He came to **correctly** fulfill The Law and The Prophets in perfect and Holy **righteousness**. Jesus was a Jew from Galilee and certainly not a Greek from Athens. There was not a single thought in His mind about the teaching material that had been produced by the pagan Greek philosophers. It would have been totally preposterous. Jesus, The Christ was a Holy Man sent by God. He was born and reared in The Land of Israel.

How could things have gotten so totally mixed up? Yet no one seems to **see or fully understand**. It is because so much time has elapsed, that everyone just assumes and just accepts what has been offered all these centuries on the plate of the traditional teaching – **thinking it is probably “right” and probably “good.”** So, it is important for you to realize that Saint Augustine reveals the prevalent method, in his day, for interpreting *The New Testament*.

Understand this is **not** what Jesus preached. Christ’s teachings concerned fulfilling *The Sacred Scriptures*. These are the texts that came to be erroneously labeled as *The Old Testament*. In

most minds today, the notion is that “**The New**” has totally replaced “**The Old.**” No “**true**” Christian would or could acknowledge this after they take the time to check. **Jesus did not teach Greek philosophy.**

The misunderstanding is the belief, that *The Old Testament* or *Old Covenant* meant *The Scriptures*. *The Old Testament* or *Old Covenant* **only** included The Covenant made with Israel based upon The Letter of The Law. *The Scriptures* included *The Torah*, The Prophets and *Psalms*, as Jesus said. *The Old Covenant* and *Old Testament* were only a small part of *the scriptures*. For further research read the book *God’s Work*.

This detour from reality was gradual, but it developed into a great deception. The descent into darkness was subtle and well calculated. A misreading of *The Genesis Creation* story began by interpreting the **Greek term “LOGOS” as understood by the Greek Platonist as** “an entirely separate being from the **ONE** God” rather than as “The Word from The **One** God.” If “**the word**” (logos) is God’s very “**word**” then, **The One God is The Word.**

## **The Genesis Creation Story**

*The Genesis creation story* is the key to understanding the prologue to *The Gospel of John*. This is because of the similarity of theme, content and style. But there is much more. It is, also, because of the remarkable similarity in the first words of both *Genesis* and John’s *Gospel*.

When a Jewish writer confesses Jesus as The Messiah, it is striking that He begins His *Gospel* with the expression, “**In the beginning...**” (John 1:1). This is a clear indication of a comparison being made with the first words in *The Book of Genesis*, which

are: “**In the beginning...**” (Genesis 1:1).

The intent seems to be that the words “In the beginning...” led to the confession of Jesus as The Messiah. Genesis 1:6, “**In the beginning it is written...God said...**”

Seven times you read in *The Book of Genesis*, “...**and God said...**” In those seven times “**God said, all things on earth were created.**” These things were created by God’s “**word.**” Not one thing was created that God, Himself, did not literally “**speak**” into “**creation.**” If you allow this **creation story** to be your background, then you can read the prologue as God Almighty states it should be read. “**In the beginning was The Word...**” (John 1:1)

There is a marvelous light at the end of the tunnel. By comparing the teaching of Jesus and His Disciples with the teaching of the so-called Greek and Latin **church fathers**, it will be demonstrated by **documented evidence** that the slide into apostasy – was like unto the proverbial Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. This is the time to think outside the confines of the **boxed-in teachings** that have pervaded the professing Christian **churches** for nearly 1700 years. Whose “**word**” was spoken seven times in the beginning that brought “**all things**” into created existence? Of course, it was God’s “**word.**” This is because of the words, “...**God said...**” (i.e., The Word). So the utterance was the same as The Word (of God). “...**and The Word was with The God, and God was The Word...**” (John 1:1).

Anyone who has the proper research tools can check the original Greek for the phrase cited above – and determine whether that quotation is fact. Yet all translations **reverse the Greek** to read, “...**the Word was God.**” Why would they do this? It is based upon a presupposition. There is a motive – a literal smoking



gun. Why would these Trinitarian translators reverse the original Greek? Could it be that they needed to make their “**polytheistic**” case that God’s “**word**” was “**a second being** – as though God had no “word” of His own?

It is here you must understand the definite “articles” in the John 1:1 prologue. The definite article identifies in the case of John 1:1 that “**The Word**” was that of “**The God.**” The article “**the**” identifies that it is God as the main subject in Verse 1. The article in “**the**” word is specific in that it is “**The**” Word of “**The**” God. In other words, **The God is the ruling subject; therefore The “word” is The Word of The God.**

Once The Trinitarian Doctrine was adopted in Gentile Christianity, the translators reversed the original Greek, which reads God was **The Word**. Because in the last expression in John 1:1, it reads God (without the article) “**The**” while “**the word**” retains the article “**The**” scholars reverse the original Greek, from **God was The Word – to The Word was God.**

Just as in Genesis 1:1, it is The Word of God and the same applies when you read John 1:1. The main subject is The God, and therefore, God is “The Word” is **the correct translation** just as the original Greek language has it. **The truth** is that it was The Word of The One True God. If you wish to know whose “**word**” it was in the beginning, then **God was The Word**. Isn’t that utterly simple and logical? In the beginning, God was The Word and by His Word He spoke all things into existence. God’s Word was with God “in the beginning.” The Word was in God and emanated from within God. “**...In God’s Word was life and the life was the light of men. And the light of God shines in the darkness and the darkness could not master the light...**” (John 1:4).

## CHAPTER 9

# WHEN GOD'S WORD CAME IN THE FLESH

**John 1:1-5 is all about God, who in the beginning created all things that were created by “His Word.” Then in John 1:5-9, God sends John, The Baptist to bear witness of what is coming into the world. The correct understanding from John 1:10-14, concerns what will happen in the world when, at age 30, Jesus was baptized and anointed for “His historical ministry.” This is the time The Disciples beheld His Glory (John 1:14).**

When did The Disciples behold The Glory of Jesus, The Anointed One? Of course, it was after He was baptized and anointed at the age of 30, a time of maturity. At the age of 30, Jesus had grown in The Grace and Knowledge of **The Word** of God so that God's Word had become Him “**in the flesh.**” The first time since the beginning of creation, all of The Word of God, in The Law (*Torah*), Prophets and “**writings**” were fulfilled perfectly by Jesus, The Son of David in the flesh, stated by Paul, “...**Jesus...was made of the seed of David according to the flesh...**” (Romans 1:3).

Jesus told His Disciples in Matthew 5:17, He came to fulfill The Word of God. From a baby to age 12 and then on into maturity at His baptism, Jesus had grown into **the perfect** visible image of **the righteousness** and Holiness of The Invisible God. God's Holy “Word” came into the world when He began His ministry,

at the age of 30, when God's Word was in the flesh – the flesh of Jesus Christ, The Anointed One.

Notice how simple everything becomes when you are permitted to let *Scripture* be interpreted from The Word of God, *The Torah*, The Prophets and all “**the writings**.” Jesus was The Word of God in the complete fulfillment of all that The Word of God declared. He was The Word of God personified. At 30 years of age, Jesus became **the perfect** “Holiness” and “**Righteousness**” of everything in God's Word. It is not as Augustine observed from reading the pagan philosophers – but rather it was as The Written Word of God that spoke about Him in The Law and The Prophets.

### **Plato's Word Vs. God's Word**

Comparing God's **Word** with the Platonist's word – the words of the Platonists are trumped and made void. It is a matter of God's Holy Word, against the unholy pagan philosopher's word. In 325 A.D., with sword bearers encircling the bishops, **the pagan** Roman Emperor Constantine declared Jesus is God. Only in The Fourth Century was God's Holy Spirit declared to be **a third God**.

Are you able to put **the truth** in The Word of The One True God and to demonstrate the lie of the “**Gentile**” so-called **church fathers**? It was “**The Word of God**” in Jesus who became the perfect fulfillment when He came into the world to begin **His historical ministry**. The Word, that is The Word of God, was embedded in the flesh of Jesus, The Firstborn Son of God. What did Jesus, Himself, say about God, His Father? “**Now this is eternal life: that they may know you, the only true God**” (John 17:3).

But what about Paul? Maybe Jesus was just being modest, not admitting to being a second God. What did The Apostle Paul say?

Notice in 1 Corinthians 8:4, where Paul states that, "...**there is no other God but one...**" There you have it in the mouth of two witnesses. Jesus said it and Paul said it. There is but One True God. Polytheism is rendered null and void.

This is where the rub comes in. Augustine stated that "The Word of God" was **a second God**. Jesus and Paul said there is but **One** True God. Who are you to believe? Are you to believe Jesus and Paul or Augustine and the Greek and Latin so-called **church fathers**? Are you a truth seeker, who **will believe** "The Word of God" over those Greek and Latin **church fathers**?

When you compare The Word of God with the sayings of the Platonists, God will win in every case. In 325 A.D., Constantine, along with over 250 Bishops at The Council of Nicaea, made history. It is reported, at that council, Constantine had instructed his soldiers to draw their swords when the vote was taken. This was clearly intimidation. In this way, he could insure that everyone would vote in the manner that was chosen. At that gathering, they turned *The Gospel* upside down and returned to polytheism. They perverted *The Gospel* beyond repair.

It has remained that way ever since. In other words, they **apostatized** *The Gospel*, so that in 325 A.D., you have the official **falling away**. "**Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition...**" (II Thessalonians 2:3).

In 325 A.D., **the apostasy** was given the authority of The Roman Empire, and it is that date from which there was the great **falling away** from *The Gospel of God* given through Jesus Christ and The Apostles.

## When Jesus Became “God”

Jesus only spoke The Word of God and only did what God, His Father, told Him. Notice select excerpts from a book entitled: *When Jesus Became God*, by Richard E. Rubenstein. On the back cover of Rubenstein’s book, it states, “An exciting book! Richard Rubenstein has taken the ancient conflict in Christian history between Arius and Athanasius and given it the brilliance of modern journal coverage.

In the process he enlightens us about the nature and destructiveness, to say nothing of the roots, of those dark places in our contemporary history where far too often religious convictions are expressed in terms of hate, murder, ethnic cleansing and even warfare” (Comments by The Most Reverend John Shelby Spong, Bishop of Newark).

Rubenstein has searched deep into church history to expose the brutality of the wars perpetrated by the followers of Arian and Athanasius. They were bitter enemies. Each of their views caused bloody conflict when the feud was taken from the pulpits into the streets. The sword of The Word of *The Gospel* was argued with metal swords – as the shed blood from both sides demonstrated that something went terribly wrong.

What turned sour was the slide into darkness. This thick darkness covered the light of *The True Gospel* of God through Jesus Christ. In 325 A.D., the slide into darkness can best be described by Paul as “**the apostasy**” – or the **falling away** from **the truth** described in II Thessalonians 2:3.

Do not draw a final conclusion until you study *The Holy Scriptures* – and the evidence proved by historical facts. The Apostles

of God and The Disciples of Jesus, The Messiah must be the criteria from which **the truth** must be derived. *The New Testament*, so named, in correlation with *The Torah*, The Prophets and all the “**writings**” in *The Hebrew Scriptures* are **the truth, the whole truth** and nothing but **the truth**. To these things you must hold fast – lest the darkness imposed by the Greek and Latin **fathers** overcome you, also.

### **Arius And Athanasius**

What was the basis for this argument between Arius and Athanasius? From Arius and his followers was an overall statement that was made famous. “There was a time when Jesus was not.” From Athanasius and his followers came this retort, “There was **never** a time when Jesus was not.”

Between these two confessions, the streets became filled with hate, murder, ethnic cleansing and warfare. The vision of Constantine “to take the cross of Christ and go and conquer” caused the streets to run red with blood. The Gentile Church believed they had replaced **the promises** of God to Israel and The Jews became the enemy with millions upon millions of them being slain for being Christ killers. The love of God, who gave His Only Begotten Son, was turned towards evil and any who did not accept the Constantine **form** of Christianity died by the sword.

The words of Paul fell on deaf ears. Paul stated when the full numbers of The Gentiles are brought in, **all Israel will be “saved”** (Romans 11:26). How could The Gospel of The Kingdom of God, The Message of Jesus, John, The Baptist, The Apostles and Disciples of The Nazarene (Branchites) end up becoming a combination of good and evil? It was as though the deceiver had used Constantine to take of The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and

Evil just as Eve was deceived in The Garden of Eden.

Even The Messianic Jews, who had accepted Jesus as The Messiah, could no longer accept the teaching of The Gentile Church. Some scholars recognize many of the doctrines of pagans found their way into Constantine's "**Christianity.**" It must be remembered, Constantine continued to embrace elements of both paganism along with Christianity. Only when dying was he baptized and became a Christian.

### **The Doctrine Of Constantine**

What occurred from *The Gospel* of God as taught by Jesus and The Apostles – to the doctrines of Constantine in 325 A.D., which appears to be an entirely **different gospel**. Greek and Latin so-called Christian literature developed until it was finally crystallized into what can be termed The Holy Roman Empire. What began as *The Gospel* taught by Jesus and later The Apostles within a Jewish culture and society was so altered as to be accepted in Greek and Latin culture to become the **doctrines** of The Roman Emperor.

The late Professor David Flusser in his monumental book – *Judaism And The Origins Of Christianity* – has a chapter titled – ‘*An Early Jewish-Christian Document In The Tiburtine Sibyl.*’ The interpretation presented should not be taken in all cases as the same as the views of Professor Flusser. The Sibyl has had redactions but even so a Jewish Christian origin is detectable taken up by a Gentile Christian writer.

The Tiburtine Sibyl is a final medieval composition, pointing back to much earlier sources. What is important is the historical parts and the differences detectable from Jewish Christianity

into Gentile Christianity?

As Professor Flusser states on page 364, “**the savior**” in the early “Sibyl” is designated by the capital letter “C” (Constantine); however, in the Greek “Sibyl” “he” goes by the name “Olibos.” The passage about Constantine has also a **parallel** in the Greek Sibyl line 85-88 in the sixth generation, where Constantine bears his full name. It is important you understand the redactor is not replacing Jesus with Constantine; rather the author refers to Constantine as “**the savior**” removing the persecution from The Gentile Christians. What is the most significant point is The Jewish Christian interpretation of Matthew 5:17. The Jewish nuance in *The New Testament* days can be paraphrased as, “**Do not suppose that I have come to misinterpret *The Torah* [Law] or *The Prophets*. I have not come to misinterpret them [which is the same as to abolish] rather I have come to fulfill them.**”

To purport The Emperor Constantine is a “**savior**” of Gentile Christianity is lacking in common sense. Although, Professor Flusser does not state it as such, the reader has no alternative but to be presented with an entirely different gospel. Constantine with The Bishops replaced Jesus, The Son of God with Jesus God, The Son. The Lord’s Day which has nothing to do with a day of the week, was designated as Sunday and Easter replaced Passover. The other festivals of The Jews, followed as customs of The Jerusalem Apostles and Disciples, were expressively to be denounced, for any Jewish believer in Jesus as The Messiah, to be part of The Churches of The Holy Roman Empire.



## CHAPTER 10

# THE FOURTH KINGDOM OF DANIEL NEVER CEASED TO EXIST

**In Daniel 2, it mentions Four Gentile Kingdoms are to arise in succession. The Fourth Kingdom began with Julius Caesar. Although many have attempted to explain a revived Roman Empire, “the biblical evidence” in Daniel is The Fourth Empire never ceases to exist until the stone cut out of the mountain crushes the image upon its feet (Daniel 2:32-34). Although The Fourth Roman Empire makes changes until the stone cut out of the mountain crushes it, The Empire continues to exist.**

When The Roman Emperor Constantine embraced The Gentile form of Christianity and developed **The Holy Roman Empire as The Kingdom of God**, just how Holy was it? You will find Satan took over Christianity.

The sword was used on those who would not accept the doctrines and dogma of The Empire. Although The Roman Empire has put on many faces in one form or another it has **never ceased to exist**. The two legs – Rome in Italy – The Second Rome in Constantinople – split off from each other due to disagreement in some religious details.

Although going their separate ways, both The West and The East

still retained the same basic dogmas.

## **The Doctrine Of The Trinity**

The battle over whether or not Jesus was God who came in the flesh became a bloody battle between those in the Arian camp, with those of the Athanasius camp. Which camp had **the truth** or were they both fighting over unscriptural-based dogma? Can a Trinity or “**three separate beings**” be identified with The One True God of *The Hebrew Bible*? Athanasius argued “yes,” even though it could not be logically explained. On the other hand Arian argued that there was a time Jesus was not.

Both Arian and Athanasius departed from *The Hebrew Scriptures*, where God said, besides Him, there is not another God (Isaiah 44-45). When The One God was explained as being in **three beings**, most Jews felt **the trinity doctrine** spelled tri-theism – three gods – and that was polytheism. Easter replaced The Passover; The Seventh Day, Sabbath was replaced with **the day of the sun**, Sunday.

Jews, if they were to be of the household of faith, were required to denounce their Jewish heritage and reject all Jewish customs.

The Roman Empire was being torn apart by the fighting between the followers of Arian and Athanasius. The battle was taken from the pulpit to every household. Each side hated the other and what began as verbal debate, turned to bloodshed by both parties. Constantine called The Bishops to Nicaea **to end the controversy**. Constantine’s concern was for The Roman Empire far more than **church doctrine**. He listened to the debates and finally sided with Athanasius and **forced** all **bishops** to sign a document of **agreement**.

With sword-bearers encircling **the bishops**, along with Eusebius who was more on the side of Arian, they all finally signed. Because of the loose wording in the document, Eusebius felt he could explain the document to **the churches** in The West in a way which would allow the Arian contention, that there was only The One God of Israel. It was not until the great Council of Chalcedon that The Arian **believers** lost out completely, when The Bishops of Athanasius Dogma of The Trinity finally became the orthodoxy of The Roman Empire.

### Three Great Cities

Rome had been the premier city of The Mediterranean World, although it did not last. During the time when The City of Rome was rapidly falling into decline, Rubenstein mentions in his book, *When Jesus Became God*, three other cities of The Mediterranean, began ascending in greatness. “...**Alexandria, Antioch, and Constantinople, there were, also, hundreds of other highly developed towns. By comparison the Latin West was an economic and cultured backwater with Rome herself, a city in sad decline**, (although still considered the “first city” for historical reasons, Page 4).”

Alexandria in Egypt was the creation of Alexander, The Great. He laid out the plans in 332 A.D., but never lived to see it constructed. Concerning this magnificent seaport city, Rubenstein states, “... The waterfront city, diverse cultures mixed, clashed, and recombined; feverish commercial activity coexisted with deep spiritual hunger; and worldly, ambitious people became fascinated – even obsessed – by issues of religious faith...”

There were two Greek thinkers, St. Clement and Origin, both greatly influenced the creation of Greek and Latin Christianity.

The development made many twists and turns before events arrived at the point where the proto-Orthodox became the “**Orthodoxy**” of Constantinople. The proto-Orthodox were the ones who won out over all the competing interpretations. It became known as Orthodox Christianity and is still functioning, today, in the modern world.

Two councils were required to bring together the final decree. This was The Nicene Council of 325 A.D. and The Chalcedon Council of 451 A.D. The confession of The Apostles of God who claimed Jesus was “The Son of God” had been turned around to read “God, The Son.” Furthermore, all this was done under the auspices and trappings of **The Sun God**.

The great confession of the Shema, “**Hear O Israel the Lord your God the Lord is one**” (Deuteronomy 6:4), was perverted to a polytheistic hermeneutic as observed from the statement of James A. Sanders.

Paul was accused by the Judaizers of perverting *The Gospel of Jesus Christ*. On that basis, how much more serious was the matter of perverting the confession of Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Moses and the whole house of The Children of Israel? Believe it or not, **no greater apostasy and falling away** from “**the truth**” could there have been – that of denying The One Almighty God. This was done by The Decrees of Nicaea and Chalcedon. It is impossible, by the very nature of things to make “**three separate beings**” into “**one being**.” Two joined together as one, in mind and attitude as a husband and wife, never takes away the basic facts of the laws of nature. The husband is still one husband and the wife – one wife. When you add one husband and one wife, you will always come up with two individuals. The only husband/wife team which was ONE was when Eve came from Adam. All others

are separate individuals and when you add one plus one you **come up** with **two**.

## Where Is The Logic?

God created a very logical world. Once the world lost the logic and common sense of things, it had found itself in the sad condition of feeble-mindedness. If things do not make sense then it is “non-sense.” It is foolishness for there to be more than One True God, as Jesus and Paul stated (John 17:3 and 1 Corinthians 8:4). Besides, it is blasphemous against God.

There has to be an urgency for every sincere soul to proceed in proving this evidence. It must be determined whether this is both **biblically based** and **historically correct**. You must examine the many sources quoted and employ common sense with **biblical study**. Your study must combine **God’s Holy Word** with **undeniable history**. At the mature age of 30, Jesus came to John, The Baptist and was anointed for His historical ministry. When The Disciples of Jesus beheld His “**glory**” it was when He came into the world to begin His **appointed “mission.”** For too many years, it has been interpreted that The Recorder of *The Fourth Gospel* was speaking about The Birth of Jesus.

Jesus did not show Himself to the world of The Jews when He was born. When did Jesus show Himself in Galilee, Samaria, Judaea and The Great City of Jerusalem? It was at His baptism and anointing from God. When did His Disciples behold His “**glory**?” The Disciples did not know Jesus until He came into The World of The Jews after He was anointed (John 1:14). How simple it is, when you take time to think about these important facts.

## CHAPTER 11

### THE BEAST OF REVELATION 13

**One of the more intriguing aspects of This Great Apostasy concerns the hidden interconnection with the material recorded in *The Book of Revelation*. It is time to begin to focus upon a mystery that can be solved. What is the relationship of: (1) The Apostasy, (2) The falling away from *The True Gospel* in II Thessalonians 2:3 and (3) The Son of Perdition in Verses 3 and 4? The final phase concerns The Man of Sin – The Son of Perdition.**

The origin of The Apostasy is a historical series of events. Yet this matter about The Son of Perdition has all the appearances of being a futuristic fulfillment – with Constantine as the prior type. Of course, it is fairly logical to perceive how: (1) A Historical Apostasy, could lead to a (2) futuristic finality – that is evidenced by this final Son of Perdition.

There is a critical correlation between The Olivet Prophecies of Jesus and the predictions by The Apostle Paul. Then the whole matter will be tied together in *The Book of Revelation* given to John, The Apostle. “...**Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold he is in the desert; go not forth: Behold, he is in the secret chambers; believe it not...**” (Matthew 24:26).

This is a serious matter. As a preface to discernment, consider that Jesus was in the **desert** when He was tempted of The Devil – before His public ministry began. Then, Jesus came into **the**

**temple** and cast out the money changers. But He never entered into The Most Holy Place. That was reserved for The High Priest. It was the most secret of all chambers.

This text of Matthew 24, therefore, supports the basic notion that THE GREAT FALSE MESSIAH may well begin His work in the desert – and then will ultimately place himself in **The Holiest of All** – just as Paul stated (II Thessalonians 2:4). What is the relationship of The Apostasy – the falling away from *The True Gospel* in II Thessalonians 2:3 and The Son of Perdition in Verses 3-4? Except there come **the falling away** first, then, the **man of sin**, The **Son of Perdition** is revealed. The Apostasy is a historical series of events. The Olivet prophecies of Jesus and the words of The Apostle Paul, tie together perfectly in *The Revelations* given to John.

Jesus, Paul and John identify The Son of Perdition. Then, Jesus spoke of **false** “Christs” and **false** “Prophets” to come in Matthew 24:24. In Verse 25, the **many false Christs**, are narrowed to **one false Christ**. This fallen angel is **an angel of light**. Always remember Satan can appear as an angel of light (II Corinthians 11:14). Is there a connection between Satan who can appear as an angel of light and the brightness of the coming of The Lord who will destroy The Son of Perdition with His Brightness? There is a direct correlation between Satan as the image appearing as the angel of light – The Son of Perdition, which will be destroyed by the greater brightness of The Son of Man. The greater brightness and brilliance of The Lord will put out the light of the projected image of The Son of Perdition.

The Apostle Paul is explaining. THE COMING OF THE LORD IN GREAT GLORY AND BRIGHTNESS AND WILL DESTROY THE LESSER LIGHT OF THE MOON GLOW OF SATAN WHO

CAN APPEAR IN BRIGHTNESS. Keep this, always, in mind as you continue this amazing story.

Is the projected **moon-bright** image of Satan – the very image of The Beast (Revelation 13)? **The truth** unfolds. The **historical false prophet** was The Emperor Constantine. The vision in the sky, a cross, with the words “**use this and go conquer**” was a false vision, which makes Constantine **a false prophet**. There is to be another vision in **the end of days**, an image, the projected image by Satan **believed** by many **to be The Return of The True Christ**. For Satan, himself can appear as an angel of light. Angels can and do appear in the form of a man. Although Satan has the inward character of a serpent as in The Garden of Eden, an appearance of a serpent would have never deceived Eve.

Just as “**the glory**” **covering** of God prevented the nakedness of Adam and Eve from being seen, “**the glory**” **covering** of the fallen angel of light deceived Eve. It was on The Isle of Patmos that God gave to Christ **the revelation** to give to John. *The Book of Revelation* was the last writing of *The New Testament Scriptures*. It should not surprise you that the last written testimony brings together The Witness of Jesus, Paul and *The Revelation* Jesus gave to John.

In Revelation 13, John is seeing in vision three symbolic beasts. In Verse 1, he observes a beast rising up out of the sea. In Verse 2, the power of the beast, out of the sea, is from the dragon, which is Satan. Satan gives power and great authority to the beast out of the sea. In Verse 4 a key statement is made. “**And they worshipped the dragon, which gave power unto the beast.**” The dragon is the beast that is worshipped and not the beast out of the sea.

In Revelation 13:2 and 11, John observes another beast coming up



out of the earth and he has two horns like a lamb and he spoke like a dragon. If you were asked to answer the question of which beast is in priority to the other two, you would most likely answer “the dragon.” The power and authority of the two beasts, the first out of the sea and second out of the earth, received their power and authority, from this dragon.

And, yet, in all commentaries on “**the beast**” in Revelation 13:12 is applied to **the first beast out of the sea**. The Greek for “first” is “protos” meaning “first in priority.” The first beast, in priority, is the source of power and authority given to the sea and earth beast and they worshipped the dragon (Verse 4). Then the image that is worshipped cannot be other than the dragon, being the beast of priority (Verse 14). It leaves little doubt the beast in priority, the dragon worshipped and the image of the beast is one and the selfsame character. Begin with the witness of Jesus in Matthew 24:26-28, which narrows it down to ONE FALSE Christ. Combine that with Paul’s witness in II Thessalonians 2:3, “**the great falling away**.” The third and last witness, which ties it all together, are The Revelations of Jesus Christ to John (Revelation 13).

When you read Professor Sanders’ book, *The Bible at Guanzum* (pages 25-26), you read The Ten Commandments written by The Finger of God were being broken. In the first place no one knows what Jesus looked like except He looked like a Jew. And, secondly, since Jesus is sitting at the right hand of God, no image or likeness of anything in heaven is to be made on earth.

Any statue or image of Jesus can only be the figment of the imagination of mankind being disobedient. Since Satan can appear as an angel of light, “**angels**” – good and evil – can manifest themselves in the appearance of a man. Satan can and does appear

in brightness. So angels and Satan can appear in the form of a man. For Satan to appear as a glorified man with his morning-star brightness, you may very well observe the false anti-Christ appearing and claiming to be **the true Christ** some time in the future.

Since The Doctrine of The Trinity claims Jesus is God, Satan in the greatest deception ever, may be, one day worshipped as The Lord Jesus Christ and God all in the same “**false Christ image.**” Although there were voices of descent, the images and statues of a Jesus they knew not, took on the form of pagan gods they **did know**. This future image, which will have life and can communicate, will soon appear. What will you do when it does appear and death awaits those who will not bow down to this false image (Revelation 13:14)?

## CHAPTER 12

### FROM THE PAST TO THE FUTURE

**The “apostasy” and cover-up is not just an event in the future. The Gospel of God which was begun through Jesus, The Messiah, was a movement which began in “late second temple of Herod.” Judaism, then went to Rome and from there THE APOSTASY WAS MADE COMPLETE. The Emperor Constantine turned upside down The True Gospel as Jesus and The Apostles taught it. Although The Holy Roman Empire claimed to be the successors of The Gospel of Jesus and The Apostles, *The Book of Revelation* calls them false apostles and their synagogues are The Synagogues of Satan.**

When The Gentile Church separated from The Messianic Jews and the original Twelve Apostles, they began to interpret *The New Testament* from the mindset of “**Greek culture.**” They taught a gospel mixed **with truth and error.** As Eve was deceived by Satan in The Garden of Eden, The Gentile Church fathers fell for the same lie. No one should judge but there is a saying, “When a lie is told often enough...” Jesus will be their judge. You now have the historic facts of what happened and in some sense why it happened. **“<sup>4</sup>And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. <sup>5</sup>For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities”** (Revelation 18:4-5).

The three beasts are depicted in symbolic language (Revelation 13). The traditional view has been **the beast out of the sea** is the **one which an image was to represent**. However, the first in priority with the power is this dragon. Since then, the image of a false Christ has spread to the four corners of the earth. God warned that no image of anything in heaven above or the earth beneath is to be made, let alone prayed to. The first Three Commandments of God were broken when a supposed image of Jesus came out of the imagination of artists and sculptures. No one knows what Jesus looked like except He looked like a Jew.

The **false prophet** gave authority for the whole world to make an image of the beast that had been wounded by the sword but was still alive (Revelation 13:14). Jesus defeated this beast and bruised his head and took away his authority over those Christians who were worshipping God. But Satan still lives to deceive those who would worship this **false image** – THE ULTIMATE ANTI-CHRIST. You no longer worship Jesus in the flesh, but should worship Him in “**Spirit**” and “**truth.**” Could you have made a false image of Jesus in your mind and thoughts? Perhaps, but now, you need to STOP, MEDITATE and question what is false and what is TRUE.

The world is full of icons and images of what most think are a representation of Jesus Christ. Many remark they were inspired to make an image of Jesus Christ. But, remember those first Three Commandments of God: is to not make icons or images of anything in heaven above or the earth beneath. The false prophet has already spoken and commanded the whole world to make an image to the beast and most of the world has obeyed. So you, as a Christian, must decide for yourself whether to follow **the true Christ** in an image or icon made of metal, ceramics, stone or oils by man or not to look to images (Revelation 13). It is best for Christians

not to have any image by following **the commandments**.

In Matthew 22:36-40 an expert in The Law came to Jesus and asked, “<sup>36</sup>**Teacher which Commandment in The Law is the greatest?** <sup>37</sup>**Jesus said to him, Love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind.** <sup>38</sup>**This is the first and greatest commandment.** <sup>39</sup>**The second is like it: Love your neighbor as yourself.** <sup>40</sup>**All the Law and the prophets hang on these two commandments.”**

You must live by “**every word**” of God and **not the commandments of men**. In the last decades of the first century B.C., there was “**a drifting away**” from the very teachings of Jesus and The Apostles. In The Letter to The Seven Churches in Revelation, **false apostles** were already teaching a different gospel. God made a **covenant** with The Children of Israel which was to be everlasting. Commentaries interpret “**the false apostles**” of The Synagogue of Satan as The Synagogue of The Jews. This is a **false interpretation**. Because of anti-Jewish views of many of The Greek and Latin “**church fathers**,” their interpretations of *The Holy Scriptures* were from a Platonic world-view and mindset.

From The Word of God in *The Torah*, from The Prophets and from *The Scriptures OF JESUS AND THE APOSTLES*, came *The New Testament Scriptures*. You now have **the truth** with not only historical facts, but The Biblical Words of God, The Father.

You have *The Scriptures* and the **historical** evidence of a deception, which may be greater than the deception in The Garden of Eden. Prove all things and hold fast to that which is good. In *God’s Puzzle Solved – Chapter 7 – ‘The True Gospel’* – defines the difference between The Letter of The Law and The Spirit of The Law. It is through The Holy Spirit of God which will lead

you into all TRUTH.

### **Fourth Empire Exists Until The End Of Time**

The Fourth Empire Rome – The Mystery Babylon never ceases to exist until the very end. Although there are changes in The Empire, such as fragmentations, the pieces and parts are prophesied **to come together for one last stand** against God. It may be nearer than you realize and the last great warning of God must be heeded. **“And I heard another voice from heaven saying, come out of her My people, that you be not partakers of her sins, and that you receive not of her plagues”** (KJV – Revelation 18:4).

God allowed The Apostles to realize Jesus would not return in their generation, so it became necessary to compile *The Gospels*, *The Epistles* and *The Letters*.

THERE YOU HAVE IT. THE APOSTASY AND THE COVER UP BEGAN AS EARLY AS 50-52 B.C. May God give you the gift of wisdom so He can protect you from Satan, The Evil One.

# **GOD'S STORY**

**PROPHECY – VOL. IX**

**PART 4**

**BY**

**ART MOKAROW**

## Copyright Pending – *Book*

### Puzzles – Vol. I

God's Puzzle Solved

God's Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God's Mystery Fulfilled

### Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ's Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

### Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

### Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God's Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God's Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

### Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God's Law

The True Churches Of God

Paul's Religion

### Temple– Vol. VI

History Of God's Law

The Christian Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

### Deception – Vol. VII

God's Old And New Covenant

What's It All About?

Morality And Economics

The Times Of The Gentiles

Satan's Deception

### Worship – Vol. VIII

God's Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God's Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

### Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God's Story

History Of Revelation

### Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God's School

God's Science Vs. Human Science

### Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don't Bury Your Talents

God's Work Vs. Man's Work

### End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon's Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God's Gift Of Inheritance

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

### Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God's Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God's House

Bible Study God's Way

Biblical World History

### Basic Truth – Vol. XIV

Simplicity In Christ

Beginner's Bible Study

Christ In You

Competition

Visions, Dreams And Friends

Seeking God

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.



# **GOD'S STORY**

## **CONTENTS**

<b>PREFACE</b>	<b>v</b>
<b>INTRODUCTION</b>	<b>vi</b>
<b>BEFORE A BEGINNING</b>	<b>1</b>
<b>THE SEVENTH DAY PARADISE</b>	<b>7</b>
<b>GOD'S REST</b>	<b>13</b>
<b>SIN AND THE PRIESTHOOD</b>	<b>21</b>
<b>THE INHERITANCE</b>	<b>27</b>
<b>GOD'S TESTAMENT</b>	<b>35</b>
<b>THE LAW</b>	<b>43</b>
<b>THREE WITNESSES</b>	<b>55</b>
<b>THE FOUR GENTILE KINGDOMS</b>	<b>61</b>
<b>FOUR HUNDRED YEARS</b>	<b>69</b>
<b>THE LAST DAYS</b>	<b>79</b>
<b>GOD'S WORK</b>	<b>83</b>
<b>ONLY ONE TESTAMENT</b>	<b>89</b>
<b>ONE STORY</b>	<b>101</b>
<b>WHAT IS THE GOSPEL?</b>	<b>111</b>
<b>THE FARMERS</b>	<b>123</b>
<b>GOD'S EARTHLY HOUSES</b>	<b>135</b>
<b>GOD'S SPIRITUAL HOUSE</b>	<b>143</b>
<b>SEVENTY TIMES SEVEN</b>	<b>149</b>
<b>OLD AND THE NEW</b>	<b>157</b>
<b>THE FOUR GOSPELS</b>	<b>163</b>
<b>LUKE AND ACTS</b>	<b>171</b>
<b>THE OLD TO THE NEW TEACHING</b>	<b>177</b>
<b>JOHN'S SPIRITUAL GOSPEL</b>	<b>189</b>
<b>DEATH AND LIFE</b>	<b>197</b>
<b>PURPOSE OF SPIRITUAL BLINDNESS</b>	<b>207</b>
<b>THE MALACHI CURSE</b>	<b>217</b>

<b>TWO GREAT TRIBULATIONS</b>	<b>225</b>
<b>THE TWO MYSTERIES</b>	<b>235</b>
<b>PROPHECY FAILS!</b>	<b>243</b>
<b>WHAT IS THE CURSE?</b>	<b>253</b>
<b>ROMANS – CORINTHIANS – GALATIANS</b>	<b>261</b>
<b>THE GOSPEL OF CHRIST</b>	<b>279</b>
<b>MYSTERY OF INIQUITY</b>	<b>291</b>
<b>THE WEDDING FEAST</b>	<b>301</b>

# GOD'S STORY

## PREFACE

The Bible is God's Story. It is prophecy which becomes history. God had The Bible written as a testimony or witness for humanity. It is God's plan to have His Son, Jesus, save the WORLD (I John 4:14).

God's Story tells you how God carries out His purpose to be ALL and IN ALL (I Corinthians 15:28). This story does not cover The Bible in totality but the story from the garden in Eden to the new paradise in the new heaven and new earth where God makes ALL THINGS NEW. To aid your Bible study it is helpful to visualize the complete picture or story. When you do a math problem, a vital principal to understand is that the WHOLE is the SUM TOTAL of its PARTS. May God bless your personal Bible study when understanding the WHOLE STORY from beginning to end.

No monies can ever be accepted, but feel free to offer any comments or criticisms. Ask for your free CD containing eleven books which you can read on your computer. Also, feel free to ask biblical questions by mail or e-mail.

Art Mokarow  
Box 1197  
Montgomery, TX 77356

E-mail: [art@mokarow.com](mailto:art@mokarow.com)  
Web site: [www.godspuzzlesolved.com](http://www.godspuzzlesolved.com)

Download all books free of charge

<i>God's Puzzle Solved</i>	<i>The Original Bible</i>	<i>God's Sabbath And Holy Days</i>
<i>God's Work</i>	<i>Discovering God</i>	
<i>Revelation Uncovered</i>	<i>Faith With Works</i>	<b>Children's Books</b>
<i>Christ In You</i>	<i>God's Story</i>	<i>God's Two Trees</i>
<i>The Great Apostasy</i>	<i>Bible Study Made Easy</i>	<i>God's Magical Ten Words</i>
<i>The White Throne Judgment</i>	<i>God's Will</i>	<i>God's Three Houses</i>

# INTRODUCTION TO GOD'S STORY

## Kind After Kind

Once upon a time a man asked me an extremely pertinent question. "Why does God bother?" He was referring to the creation of the universe and all that humanity has to go through. Why did God even bother to create everything?

With all the prevalent evil and human suffering including innocent children, why does God allow it? God allows you to live your life but he has a master blueprint whereby you will have your designated individual spot when you receive eternal life.

## The Wrong Question

Many publish books and preach why you were born. This question is putting the cart before the horse. To find out why humans were put on this earth, you need to ask, "What is it that God is doing?" God answers the question, in part, in Ephesians 1:3-6. Paul told **the saints** and **the faithful** that **God has blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places "in Christ."** It is through Christ that God blesses everyone from heaven. What are these blessings? Ephesians 1:4 Paul said God intends to make everyone **holy and without blame** or perfect like He is (Matthew 5:48). God said, "**Let us make man in our image**" (Genesis 1:26).

Besides looking like God, Christ is also to make you **Holy** and **blameless** like God. Why is God making you like Him?

## It Is God's Pleasure

God starts to reveal Himself in Ephesians 1:5. It is God's very **will** or **purpose** to make you like Him, Holy and blameless because it gives God pleasure. There is **part of your answer** as to

why God is doing what He is doing. God had fun or great satisfaction in creating the universe and mankind. For what purpose? So, you could be like Him.

Then in Ephesians 1:9 God reports this “**will**” of His, (which has given Him great pleasure) is actually a great mystery, The Mystery of His Will.

God predestinated or pre-planned this mystery so you could obtain an inheritance according to His purpose who makes it happen according to His own counsel of His own “**will**” (Ephesians 4:11).

The theme of *God’s Story, The Bible*, is to make you like God by and through His Son, Jesus by God’s Holy Spirit. This theme is an inheritance, a gift from God. You are to receive salvation by becoming like God, The Father through Christ. God will not give you salvation as a gift of inheritance unless you become Holy like Him through Christ. This is the only way everyone can live in paradise in God’s love. You are about to find out why God receives pleasure in making you as He is.

## **God Is Agàpè Love**

I John 4:8 declares, “**He that [agàpè] loveth not knoweth not God; for God is [agàpè] love.**” There it is. One does not even know the true God if they do not have God’s agàpè love. This is a very special love. I Corinthians 12:31 states that the most excellent gift is agàpè love (I Corinthians 13:13). Why?

Charity or agàpè love never fails (I Corinthians 13:8-13). This love is eternal. Once one has it, as God has, it never ceases or stops. It is eternal, forever. What is different *about this* love?

This “love” is more than passion, “eros” in Greek or more than “philia” in Greek, or “friendliness,” which is “compatibility.”

This love, agàpè is defined by Christ in John 15:13, “**Greater love [agàpè] hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friend.**” Agàpè love is so strong one is willing to give up their very life or existence. This truth is the most excellent gift God can give as He gave His only begotten Son for all mankind. It is God’s “will!”

## **The Answer**

Why does making you Holy and blameless give God pleasure? God has pleasure because God has agàpè love. Nothing gives God so much pleasure because He loves you so much. That is why God allows evil and human suffering because it leads you, eventually to Christ and finally God’s agàpè love which is eternal.

Once God’s agàpè love is “in you,” you then become like God, Your Father and His Son, Jesus (Hebrews 1:1-3). God’s love “in you” reveals The True God who is love and then He can give you the gift of eternal life. Why? Because Romans 13:10 manifests, “**Love [agàpè] worketh no ill to his neighbor; therefore [agàpè] love is the fulfilling of the law.**”

WOW! God is agàpè love and He must give **His all** to you through His Son, Jesus. It gives God pleasure because it is God’s “will” to give all He is and all He has. That is the answer to the man who asked me, “Why is God going to all this trouble?” God derives pleasure from giving, being agàpè love, God must give all He is and has. You are now ready to read how God fulfills His “will.”

## **God’s Purpose**

*God’s Story* reveals how God gives eternal life to mankind who, then, can become like Him: Holy and Perfect. By so doing they have God’s agàpè love, which is eternal. They, then, can be given the gift of salvation because God knows you will always do **good**

to God and all His creation.

In faith you must prove God's love by His Holy Spirit. Romans 5:5 promises, "**And hope maketh not ashamed; because the [agapè] love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit which is given unto us.**" There it is, even God's agapè love is a gift which makes you like God and Christ. Once you have that agapè love you can receive salvation as an inherited gift and then you can live in paradise forever. Now notice, God's purpose plainly stated in the scriptures, I Corinthians 15:22 "**For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.** [Then] "**But every man in His own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at His coming**" (I Corinthians 15:23). God has a pre-planned order for every human and that order is listed in I Corinthians 15:24-27. Christ must defeat all of God's enemies, including death, then Jesus returns all He has inherited, back to The Father to have complete authority again for a very good purpose. I Corinthians 15:28 declares, "**And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.**" God's purpose is to make everyone just like God which is what God intended from the beginning in Genesis 1:26 and Hebrews 1:1-3. God is reproducing Himself through Christ.

Before you are ready to read *God's Story*, you need to prove how Christ saves everyone in their order.

## **God's Kingdom Is A Marriage**

You now know God's purpose is to reproduce Himself through His Son, Jesus, The Christ. You can prove The Kingdom of God is all about a royal marriage. Mark 1:1 declares, "**The beginning of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God.**" In Greek, *The Gospel* is defined as Good News. This Good News is about Jesus,

The Christ. Why? Because Christ is the author or beginning of salvation. You will see in *God's Story* Jesus must prove Himself worthy to be The Christ, The Groom or Husband of the wife.

Jesus states in Matthew 22:2, “**The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, [God] which made a marriage for his Son.**” The Kingdom of Heaven is God’s **kingdom** which you will prove is God’s **kingdom** brought to the earth at the time of The New Heaven and New Earth. This will be The Marriage Feast which never ends, when Christ marries His Bride.

Matthew 22:1-14 covers the entire *Bible* from Genesis to Revelation. This is *God's Story* which begins with this Royal Marriage and concludes with the consummation of The Marriage Feast when God, The Father, comes down from heaven to dwell with man in The New Heaven and Earth **eternally**. *The Book of Life* is a *Marriage Registry* of everyone who is invited to attend. Only those who are thrown into The Lake of Fire are excluded from attending The Marriage Feast because they have the wrong “**wedding garment.**” Only those properly attired can come to the marriage. The proper wedding garment is “**the righteousness of the saints.**” (Revelation 19:8).

*God's Story* covers the preparation of The Groom to be worthy for the marriage as well as The Bride. Christ prepares His Bride to be worthy for The Marriage. It is God, our Father who decides when both The Groom and The Bride are ready for marriage (Acts 1:7).

## **When Christ Returns**

Over the years some Christians have tried to determine the date or time of Christ’s return to receive His Bride. Acts 1:7 clearly states only God, The Father can know when Jesus will return for His Bride. Still, some preachers believe they can do what only



God, The Father can do. That is why Deuteronomy 18 declares they are false prophets. Now to find out why no man or even Christ or the angels can know the date.

## **Matthew 16 And 17**

Just before it was time for Christ to be crucified, He started to warn His Disciples about His death and resurrection. Then He asked His Disciples who the people **say** He is. They said, John, The Baptist, Elijah, Jeremiah or one of The Prophets. Christ then asked, **“Who do you say I am?”** Peter responded, **“Thou art [Jesus] the Christ, the [very] son of the living God.”** Jesus retorted, **“flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee [you], but my Father which is in heaven.** Because God revealed to Peter who was The Christ (Anointed One) Jesus said that Peter had the keys to the **kingdom**. What was the key to the **kingdom**? That is why Jesus said Peter had **the keys** because God revealed it to Peter. The last verse, Matthew 16:28, Christ prophesied, **“Verily I say unto you, there be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of Man coming in His kingdom.”** Some were to see Christ’s second coming before they died. When did this happen?

Matthew 17 reveals that only Peter, James and John were with Jesus and saw Him in His **glorified form** at His **second coming** talking to Moses and Elijah. This was a future vision of this event on The Holy Mountain, The Mount of Olives.

Notice what God said to Peter, James and John: **“While he yet spake, behold a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him”** (Matthew 17:5). Before their death, in vision, they witnessed the second coming of Christ. Why? After James was martyred, only Peter and John were left to be witnesses to Christ’s second coming. The voice out of the

cloud said, “**listen to what My Son tells you.**” About what? It is when Jesus will return to receive His Bride.

## More Sure Word Of Prophecy

II Peter 1:16-18 declares since he and John were eyewitnesses of His (Christ’s) Majesty when out of the cloud the voice came for them to listen to Jesus. Peter was manifesting that Peter, James and John already saw **the second coming** of Christ and now were eyewitnesses of His **return**.

Because Peter and John saw the vision, they knew when Christ would **return** and Peter therefore said, “**We have also a more sure [certain] word of prophecy**” (II Peter 1:19). It was God’s Holy Spirit who reveals **the truth** of Christ’s **second coming**. What did Peter and John hear from Jesus about His second coming (II Peter 1:20-21)?

The subject is when will Jesus return (II Peter 3:8-11). He answers and states Christ’s coming can be one day or a thousand years away (with God a thousand years is one day). Amazingly, God has not set a date. The ignorance of man is he is always trying to assign a date to every occurrence. However, Jesus told them God had not determined a date or time, only an event. What is that event?

In II Peter 3:9 Peter prophesies that His second coming will occur when The Father sees that no one would perish but that all come to repentance. Remember, Peter revealed his prophecy was certain. God has no set date for this **universal event**. God allows **free choice for salvation**. Whether it is before the **new heaven** and **earth** or after God’s **kingdom** comes. The **opportunity** and **potential** is always available to everyone. Why? Because salvation requires **faith** and **faith** involves believing God’s **will**. God’s **will**, as I John 4:14 states, is that God sent His Son into the **world**

to save it. We either believe or not. That is our **free choice**. God has **an order of salvation** for every man (I Corinthians 15) and God will not have Jesus **return** until all of I Corinthians 15 takes place. What is it that must happen for Jesus, The Christ to **return**?

## Christ's Revelation To John

What does The Apostle, John have to say in *The Book of Revelation*? "*Revelation*," the "apocalypse" in Greek, means "the uncovering" or "unveiling." An unveiling has to do when The Groom comes for The Bride because something has happened. An unveiling shows The Bride as she really is. No longer is she veiled or covered.

Revelation 5 declares that no man is worthy to open **the seven seals** to reveal what *The Book of Revelation* prophesies. John, The Apostle is weeping. Why? "**Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindred's of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen**" (Revelation 1:7).

John wept because no man was worthy to unveil **the seven seals** of Revelation. When Christ **returns** and completes God's **purpose** then God will be "**all and in all**." Wow! Only when Christ (**the slain Lamb**) is worthy to unveil **the seven seals**, and only then, His return will be revealed (Revelation 5).

Remember, when Jesus died, the veil was rent in The Holy Place of The Temple and from that time all mankind has access to God. Now, The Bride has access to The Father in The Holy Place through Christ.

The wedding is about to take place as **the millennium** begins when Christ and His Bride invites everyone to The Wedding

Feast. When does Jesus **return** to meet His Bride? Revelation 19:7 gives the answer. “**Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready.**” There is the answer from Jesus to The Apostle, John. First, Christ had to be worthy by His sacrifice. This act proves Christ’s **agàpè love** for His Bride. Now, The Bride has made herself ready by, also, being willing to give her life for Jesus, The Groom, by having God’s **love (agàpè)**. The Father declares The Groom and The Bride to be worthy for The Marriage Feast.

When does Jesus return? When God, The Father sees His Son, Jesus is worthy to be The Groom by His love for the wife and when The Bride makes herself ready by loving her husband, Jesus, just as He loves her.

Then, and only then, by this event, can The Father determine the date of The Wedding Feast. It could be any day or thousands of years, it all depends upon the worthiness of The Bride since The Groom has already qualified.

Now for *God’s Story* to begin from **the marriage** in The Garden of Eden till The Marriage Feast in The Kingdom of God.

# CHAPTER 1

## BEFORE A BEGINNING

*God's Story* is truly God's very own "story" or a history of His "plan." It is written as a witness in judgment of humanities' failure to rule themselves peaceably or to have a society of bliss and happiness. It is also a story of free choice. The choice to either follow The One True God or not. Not following God will lead to death. On the other hand, following God allows you to live in a paradise and have eternal life.

You might question some of God's reasons for creating the universe with all its billions of inhabitants. Why did He bother? Couldn't God just have made you perfect like He is, right from the beginning? He could have, but then God would not have a family fashioned after Him. God has absolute free choice to do whatever He wants. He also has the power to do anything and everything He decides to do. For you to be like God, The Father, you must also have free choice. You must want to be like Jesus and The Father or God cannot give **the gift of eternal life**. But you couldn't choose just any choices, your **choices** would have to be all the **right choices**. To be able to live in a community with happy people eternally, everyone would have to become perfect and Holy.

Anything "less" would create chaos and finally cause destruction which would lead to death. God's Story is "a perfect story" and the only path a society could take to be able to live in eternal bliss. This story is without a flaw and is absolutely perfect. The clearest

proof of God's truth is **the plan** He formulated which, in itself, is perfect and doesn't contain any flaws. That is proof in itself.

## **God's Pleasure**

God reveals that He **PREDESTINATED** His whole and complete **plan**. It was God's "**will**" or "**purpose**" to **save** or give eternal paradise to everyone in the world (Ephesians I). That is why Christ came in the first place (I John 4:14). Before there was ever a beginning, there was only God. There was no **space** or **time**, as God had not created anyone or anything in His creation. God consists of **light** and "**in Him**" is **no darkness** (I John 1:5). There was only God and His "**light**" and His "**glory**."

The Greek word for "love" is "agàpè" (I John 4:8). Why is God bothering to go to all this work of **creation** to eventually have a **kingdom**? This **kingdom** is to be ruled by a royal family. God's purpose is to be "All and in All" (I Corinthians 15:28). A **kingdom** of eternal happiness. God predestinated this **free choice plan** because it gives God **PLEASURE** to **plan** and see it through to the finish (Ephesians 1:5). Why does God receive pleasure from building this **royal kingdom** of sons and daughters? The answer is God is **LOVE** (I John 4:8).

This **LOVE** is a special "love." It goes beyond a passion, emotion or friendliness. God's "**love**" is "agàpè" or **CHARITY**. Charity is a type of love that gives **the giver** immense pleasure. God loves to give. That is why Jesus said, "**it is more blessed to give than to receive.**" God is the most giving "**being**" there is or ever will be. God's whole **essence**, **heart** and **will** is to be generous. You, yourself, find when you continually buy things for yourself, in time you find you have accumulated too much junk. After the initial pleasure, continually buying more for yourself, starts to get

boring. Giving to others is eternal or without **end**. This alone discloses what the true God is all about. He is always in a state of continually wanting to give. He is always in a **state of giving**. When there is no one else but God, it would have contradicted God's very being and nature. That is why God went to the trouble to create the universe, with inhabitants, animals and all the rest of creation. He must share all that He is, as it is the only **RIGHTEOUS** thing He can do. But to have an eternal paradise, God must be "All and In All." You must become just like Him.

## Kind After Kind

An important point to note about God is when He gives, He must give to "kind after kind." To experience all the happiness and goodness of God, He had to create "beings" just as He is (Genesis 1:26). It was not merely to guarantee paradise "eternally" but to give to those who have the full or complete capacity to understand and know God's "**plan**" for eternal happiness. There you have it. His creation must learn to be completely giving or to be able to sacrifice themselves. This is the very character of God and He gave the same characteristics to His Son (Hebrews 1:1-3). His creation also must have an attitude of giving. God decided to build a family in His "likeness" which will guarantee He will continue to give eternal pleasure and joy. God, before any beginning, predetermined this most wonderful plan of His so He could become "ALL and IN ALL" (I Corinthians 15:28). This is God's **plan**. His family kingdom must become just as He is, so everyone can have the capacity to live forever in paradise and in eternal bliss.

## The Plan

God had the wisdom not to make His first man and woman "ma-

**ture**” or “**perfect.**” Who would want a robot? God’s “kind” must have free choice. His creation must have unconditional liberty, like God! Secondly, Adam and Eve could not have been made eternal before God knew they would make all the right choices. They had to follow their Father’s example and His **very way or path** for them.

To be able to live eternally in paradise, God’s plan had conditions which required FAITH having total TRUST in Him. For this reason, God predestinated you would be made corruptible or susceptible to death. Now this matter of choosing **the right path** becomes real. When you know your choices can lead to death, your primary motivation becomes a matter of survival. Evolution determines “survival of the fittest” which consists of man’s human nature. By God giving humans the opportunity of free choice, He gives the very toughest test of free choice mankind ever had to encounter. Only God could have planned such a brilliant plan and mankind will one day begin to comprehend.

God laid out His strategy and plan. When you have “a choice” then it demands you have options. To be able to live or die becomes a very vital objective. What kind of environment did God need to create, to allow free choice when “life” is desired first and foremost? God had to make sure His future family would want to choose “life eternal” rather than death, so He had to make the environment very desirable and appealing.

## **A Wedding**

God likens His Son, Jesus and **the church** as a marriage (Matthew 22). They need to become **one flesh**. Jesus and His Father are “**one**” and now **the church** is **one** with The Father and The Son (John 17:21). You, yourself, become **one** with The Son and The



Father. You are in the family of God and will inherit God's riches and all of God's "glory." You, as an heir, are an inheritor of God's riches and glory. You will be in His household, The Household of God (II Timothy 2:19-21).

When any of The Israelites (Tribes of Israel) got married, the bride and groom took their vows under a canopy. This "canopy" or "covering" pictures God's blessings which serve as a protection. As husband and wife, they become "one" under God's "tent" or "tabernacle." They are in The Household of God. The Israelites call this "canopy" a "huppah" or "covering." When the **wedding feast** of Christ and His Bride takes place in the **new heaven** and the **new earth**, The Groom and Bride will dwell in The Father's house in New Jerusalem. They will benefit from all of God's **riches**. They are under God's "**huppah**" or "**covering**" (Revelation 21 and 22).

## The Dispensation

After the destruction of **the temple** in 70 A.D., The Jews had to flee Jerusalem. Both The Jews and Christians were under persecution from Rome. Christianity from that time, became corrupt just as The Jews had corrupted themselves (Revelation 2 and 3). Jude, Christ's half brother and brother of James, "The Just," issued a warning to Christians to return to the **faith** once delivered to the **saints** (Jude 3).

Paul explained to The Ephesian Church what the **faith was, which was** delivered to the **saints** (Ephesians 1:1-3). Paul declares God's "**will**" to the saints which He had **predetermined** before the earth was created. God has **willed** that you become Holy and perfect just as He is. This gives God great pleasure because God is "**love**" and He will only **give** to His own kind (Ephesians 1:4-8).

Paul continues and reveals God's "**will**" or "**testament**" is a mystery and only discloses all this to **His saints**. Why? Like any "**will**" only the **witnesses** know "the will" even exists. To the rest, it is a **mystery** until it is **enforced**.

Then Paul refers to the **dispensation** when the time is fulfilled or complete. The word "dispensation" in Greek is "oikonoma." This definition means "**administration of a house or property.**" The ultimate dispensing of God's riches or estate takes place when all things will come to pass by Christ, "the **administrator**" and "**executor**" of God's "**will**" for His "**estate.**"

At the end, when "**the will**" is enacted, Christ will have conquered all God's enemies, including death. Then "**all**" will be "in Christ" and Jesus will turn over His **entire inheritance** back to God, The Father, who then **will** be "**all and in all**" (Hebrews 1:1-2 and I Corinthians 15:28). This is exactly what Paul reveals in God's "**will**" as stated in Ephesians 1:10. Read all of I Corinthians 15.

Christians having the **faith** or knowing the **will** of God from this point will be **witnesses** of His "**will**" and "**testament.**" This is the theme in God's story with Jesus, The Christ as "**the executor**" of God's "**will.**"

God intends to give all the riches of His estate (house) to everyone "in Christ" at **the dispensation**. For a more in depth understanding, read *The White Throne Judgment*.

## CHAPTER 2

### THE SEVENTH-DAY PARADISE

**In the beginning, God created the heaven and earth. At this point, God's Spirit saw the earth He had created was void and without form. God's Spirit moved over the waters (Genesis 1:1-2). The earth was already existing, but the waters were covering the entire earth along with the atmosphere or the heavens. What did God do next?**

#### The Canopy

The earth was to be God's **house** where humans could dwell. Out of the entire universe, this was God's chosen environment for His **creation**. This earth did not have to be the largest planet, but had to be the right size for the family God intended to have. It took God seven days to make the earth as the right environment to fulfill His **plan** (Genesis 1:31). Remember, the universe had already been created in another time-frame sometime in the past (Genesis 1:1-2).

The creation of the earth, at this particular time, was to only fulfill God's goals to give humans free choice but with limited life, so they could learn by their own volition to be like God. Since God is **light** with no **darkness**, God created day and night so part of the earth could be revealed. It had an **environment** where humanity had to choose between light to see reality or be blind, living in darkness and confusion. In the day, there was **light**, enabling man to see. At night, mankind could not see what or where they were.

Light reveals **truth** and **darkness** hides evil. The earth was made to reflect both **good** and **evil** or **light** and **darkness**. Humanity had the choice to choose life or death. It was up to God to reveal **life** or **death** whichever they chose. Once God created this perfect environment for their free choice, then humanity could decide.

That is why God grew The Tree of Life and The Tree of Good and Evil. Adam and Eve had complete “**free choice**” from the very beginning. To complete this ideal plan of free choice, God first manifested an intense LIGHT which became the first day. Because the earth rotated, the daytime hours only manifested light during the day. As the earth rotated and the light force was hidden from that part of the earth, it was called night. Now the earth was in continual light during the day with darkness at night, depicting both **good** and **evil**.

The intense light from the first day initiated a process of **evaporation** and the waters were divided between the heaven (or atmosphere) and the earth. The waters on the earth turned into oceans, lakes and rivers.

As the waters rose higher, evaporating into the atmosphere, it made the air much colder, forming clouds. You now have a visual reality of the atmosphere and the earth. This was God’s “**canopy**” or “**huppah**” or the “atmosphere,” which God gave humanity to live under. This was God’s house where humans could dwell and prosper. Out of the entire universe and as science today acknowledges, there is no place in the universe like it. All the elements for **life** are here and there is no other place like it. It is truly God’s “canopy” or “tent” under which humans could live. The rest of the universe was in abject space or darkness. The galaxies gave their **glory** from their **suns** as brilliant diamonds in a sea of darkness. There is no place like the earth as a backdrop for God’s

special family of sons and daughters. During these six days, God arranged the earth to function for the good of humanity. During those six days, God arranged the days, months and years to be in sync with His very **purpose** and **plan**.

The very seasons manifest **God's purpose**. Spring pictures the **resurrection** of life. Summer, **the growing season**. Fall is the great **harvest**. Winter pictures **death**. Even the heavens reveal God's intentions, as **the sun** gives life just as Christ, represents the sun as **The Groom** and the moon as The Bride (Psalm 19). The sun and the moon represent a **bright** light as **good** and a **lesser** light as the darkness of space as evil. The moon represents humanity, light in one half and darkness in the other. Light is for **truth** and darkness for evil.

## Adam And Eve

On the earth, God selected a specific place, The Garden of Eden. This **garden** was the perfect place in which humanity could live and dwell. It truly was “**a paradise**.” Adam was **the first son** God created for this paradise and Eve came from Adam's body. Truly both of them were one, “bone of bone” and “flesh of flesh” which could not be divorced because they were “one.” They were married forever. At this point there was no death because death could only occur from sin (Romans 6:23). As long as Adam and Eve did not sin, they could have lived forever in **paradise**.

It was all a matter of choice. God gave the first man an opportunity to live forever in paradise. The reason God put The Tree of Life in **the garden** was for Adam and Eve to choose “**life**” and not “**death**.” Man could have lived in perfection from the beginning. The choice was for them to make (Genesis 1 to 3). This **garden** was God's **kingdom** on earth, from the very beginning. “**Every-**

**thing was very good**" (Genesis 1:31).

## **Life And Death**

God did not create death. Death can only occur from sin. Why does sin lead to death? The process of sinning literally contradicts God's very nature. Why? The reason is, God is "**love**" (I John 4:8). Since you are to be The Sons of God, then as **sons**, you must have God's type of **love**. But remember this "**love**" has to be **the biblical type of "love"** which is "*agàpè*." The word "*agàpè*" in Greek is "a completely giving type of love" which would never cause any harm to God or God's creation. When you have this "love" you will, then, be **perfect**. Since they were created, Adam and Eve had not sinned. They were considered perfect in God's eyes. They were God's **sons**.

In the beginning, the **creation** of Adam and Eve was considered **very good** (Genesis 1:31). To sin is to cause God and His creation harm. Harmful humans cause chaos, misery and violence in any environment. God could never give **eternal life** to "beings" who had "power" to live forever. By creating a temporal creation, God in His wisdom gave humanity a choice to choose "**life**" or "**death**." If man chooses sin, then death enters because God had to protect His **plan**. Humanity had to choose and have absolute **faith** and **trust** in God. God is Holy (pure), perfect and without sin. God does not produce anything less than "**love**." "**Love**" is the **bond of perfection** (Colossians 3:14). God's "**love**" will never cause any harm.

Death must follow sin because SIN results in a society headed for destruction. You must, therefore, choose to have complete **faith** and **trust** in **your** Father, so you can be just like His Son, Jesus. Remember, Jesus is an exact duplicate of God (Hebrews 1:1-3).

This leads to God's supreme purpose for Him to be "**all and in all**" (I Corinthians 15:28). This is God's **work and purpose**. By God being "**all and in all**," humans would be in God's **exact image** as His Son, Jesus. Then all of God's **creation** will have **perfect "love"** and He can then give His supreme gift of grace, which is **eternal life**. You will then live in **paradise** and be filled with "agàpè love" **eternally**. This is God's "**story**" which is **to save the world** by His Son, Jesus, The Christ (I John 4:14).

This book *God's Story* will tell you how God gave mankind the **free choice** to become like Him, so He can bestow the gift of **eternal life in paradise**. This gift of choice for **life** was given to Adam and Eve on that **seventh day** when God **rested** from all His **work**. God then **hallowed the seventh day** when Adam and Eve entered God's **rest**.

## CHAPTER 3

### GOD'S REST

Many believe the seventh day “rest” in The Garden of Eden was man’s “rest day” from work. God did not expect Adam and Eve to rest because they hadn’t done any “of the work” in the previous six days. It was God’s “day of rest” because only He created that paradise. In *God’s Story* it was God who rested because He did “the work.” Man can enter God’s rest, but it is only God who did and does “the work.” Man ceases from his work by allowing God to do “the work” (Hebrews 4).

#### A Rest

During this initial **seventh day rest**, God was the one who had done all “the work” by literally creating **paradise**. Adam and Eve did not do any of **the work**. God was giving a **gift** to Adam and Eve, an opportunity to live in paradise – **eternally**. They only had to **trust** God **faithfully** and live by **every Word of God**. God’s **kingdom**, in **the garden**, was His form of rulership and He proclaimed “**all**” was very good. God’s kingdom is a **kingdom** of free choice which means complete liberty.

What was God’s “**word**?” God had **two trees** in The Garden of Eden. One tree, The Tree of Life, God allowed Adam and Eve to be able to live in paradise **forever**. The other tree, The Tree of Good and Evil, was only promising **death**. If they ate The Tree of Life, it would have guaranteed they could have lived by every



Word of God, forever. This would have showed an act of **faith** by Adam and Eve. On the other hand, The Tree of Good and Evil would prove their **lack of faith** in their Father. They, on their own, chose to decide what was **right** and **wrong** by their own natural human instincts.

This was The First Covenant or **contract** with God. To receive **eternal life** in paradise, the **contract** of God demanded that God alone would do the work and absolutely no work would have to be done by any human being. If Adam and Eve had **faith**, trusting God and living by every “**word**” commanded, they could have remained in paradise eternally. God offered this **covenant** at the very beginning. **Righteousness** of The Letter of The Law could never give **eternal life** or **salvation**. How good one is – is never the issue, but as always how much faith one has in God, The Father, The Creator. Salvation can only come through **faith**. Living **righteously** gives a good life or existence. But, only **faith** and complete trust in God could give **salvation** or **eternal life**. Eternal life was only possible by God doing **the work** for Adam and Eve. God is **the only one** who can do **the work** to make everyone perfect and Holy as He is. The **choice to choose faith** was theirs to make. You may ask, why didn't God make you perfect in the beginning? In reality He did, with one catch. He gave “**free choice**.” God gave free choice because God made man in His image and God has free choice (Genesis 1:26). They could have eaten of The Tree of Life and lived forever. God guaranteed it.

God gave Adam and Eve a responsibility or charge over their human environment. Either mankind preserved “**the work**” God did or they did not. That was Adam and Eve's choice (Genesis 1:26-28). If everything God gave them as **a gift** was kept perfectly, they would have lived in that **paradise** forever. The Tree of Life was there, so the choice was theirs to make and, sure enough, they

made the wrong choice (Genesis 2:9).

Eve believed Satan's lie that she wouldn't die when she ate the forbidden fruit. Her **lust** was greater than her **faith** in God. Adam, also, lacked **faith** in God; and because he loved his wife, he ate **the fruit of death** as well. Adam wasn't deceived but couldn't resist his wife (I Timothy 2:14). Since they followed Satan and believed him, they looked to him as their Father (John 8:41-44). They honored Satan and not their real Father, God.

When God discovered their sin, He told Adam and Eve their future. Eve was now under her master, Adam, because she couldn't be trusted. Adam would become responsible to take care of their needs for survival. However, they would be under a curse from God. Satan turned into **being a snake** who was deceitful and poisonous. From that time on, Satan would constantly seek to be an enemy of Adam and Eve and their posterity.

However, to eventually save mankind, a future seed would have to be born who would destroy Satan and restore paradise back to Adam and Eve and every person who had been born (Genesis 3:15 and I Corinthians 15:22). This is the theme or story of *The Bible*. God's **will** or **testament** is to restore God's **kingdom** of rest through **the promised seed**, Jesus, The Christ. Christ is **the promised seed to save the world** (I John 4:14).

## Sin Entered

When Adam and Eve sinned or caused an offense by distrusting God, a tremendous change occurred. God had to issue His decree upon Adam, Eve and Satan also. Adam and Eve would have to struggle to survive as any animal in the wilderness. This was God's **second covenant** in The Law or Torah.

Satan originally was God's beautiful cherub, only to become a deceitful poisonous snake trying to put a stumbling block in Adam and Eve's and their children's path (Isaiah 14 and Ezekiel 28). But Satan wanted to be worshipped (Matthew 4). Ultimately, a child would be born from Adam and Eve's progeny who would restore paradise and The Tree of Life or **salvation**. When Adam and Eve sinned, with paradise being lost (God's rest), so was **salvation** lost. The Tree of Life was no longer available. Sin, however, ushered in an even greater loss, when God, Himself, was lost to mankind.

Adam and Eve were expelled from The Garden so they would not have access to The Tree of Life or be able to **live forever**. Satan was now their Father. God no longer dwelt with them in the garden. God placed two cherub angels to guard **the way into the garden** and The Tree of Life (Genesis 3). Now God did not remove Adam and Eve from The Land of Eden or pleasantness, but didn't allow them **access** to The Garden and The Tree of Life. This was where God dwelt. The way back to **the garden** could only occur thousands of years later by one of Adam and Eve's posterity. The next event has **great spiritual depth** in *God's Story* with the birth of Adam and Eve's first two children, Cain and Abel. Why did God include the story about this birth and the act between Cain and Abel?

## **God's House And The World**

Because of sin, Adam and Eve along with their children lost **salvation**. Access to The Tree of Life was forbidden. *God's Story* makes a monumental change from this point in world history. Adam and Eve, as well as their children, have had to wait until **the promised seed** (Christ) came to restore The Tree of Life and **salvation**. Paradise was truly lost and **death** now reigned upon

all of Adam and Eve's future generations. All of Adam and Eve's progeny sinned because God did not dwell with them (Romans 6:23). It is exactly what Paul prophesied (I Corinthians 15:22-23). However, Adam and Eve, as well as their children, lived in Eden, **the land of pleasantness**. Cain and Abel both were in Eden and knew they could never enter **the garden** where The Tree of Life was located. Cain and Abel knew all about the **gospel of the kingdom**. Their parents had lived in it (Genesis 1:31).

God was still available and spoke to Cain and Abel through **the angel** of The Lord. God, at this time, did not hide Himself from Adam and Eve's two children. As yet they hadn't sinned. Remember, it is from Adam and Eve's children that **paradise** would be restored, then the **promised seed** would come (Genesis 3:15). After the birth of Cain and Abel, time passed until the two sons attained the age of responsibility. Cain was a truck farmer and Abel was a shepherd raising sheep. Man from this point, because of Adam and Eve's sin, had to do the work themselves. Adam and Eve's sin did not cause humanity to be guilty of sin. It is your own sin which brings the death penalty. Adam and Eve's sin or offence lost paradise where The Tree of Life was. God no longer dwelt with them. Eternity was lost until Christ would come a second time. God, then, will dwell "in you" as His temple or house (Hebrews 3).

This seems to be such an uneventful account in which Cain was a farmer and Abel a shepherd. But *God's Story* is about to reveal a significant change in world affairs. *The Bible*, up to this time, has God's presence still with Adam and Eve and their children (Genesis 4). Since they were not in the garden where God provided everything, Adam and Eve and their family had to do "**the work**" of providing for themselves. Cain grew farm products and Abel herded sheep. **Survival of the fittest** prevailed as with any ani-

mal. Keep in mind, humanity and animals were both created the sixth day. Humans are of the animal kingdom and both struggle to survive. The Tree of Life was gone. God was no longer with them.

When Adam and Eve sinned, God allowed them free choice to choose between **right** or **wrong** on their own. It was then up to mankind to do “**the work**” in their own way. They rejected God’s “**work**,” so then God allowed man to do whatever they thought was **good** or **right**. Adam and his family were no longer in God’s **kingdom**.

The human family still lived on God’s land but they were now on their own. They left God’s paradise on earth where God had done all the work. No longer were they in God’s **rest**. From this point on, they would do **the work** to be able to survive (no Tree of Life) and had to take their own **rest** from any or all of their labors.

## **God’s Work And Man’s Work**

Since Adam and his family were now on their own, doing “**the work**” to be able to survive, they were ready for another world shaking event to take place. Cain and Abel were at the age of accountability and no longer under their parent’s responsibility. A monumental **world event** was ready to occur.

## **Adam Was Sold Short**

Why did God from this point choose Adam, a man, to be over Eve as her master thus becoming his property?

In I Timothy 2:14, Paul revealed to Timothy that Adam wasn’t deceived when he ate from the Tree of Good and Evil. It was Eve

who was deceived because of her desire for the fruit so she could decide right from wrong on her own as a God. Adam knew better and could have gone and eaten from The Tree of Life and lived forever. Instead, since he loved her, because she was bone of his bone and flesh of his flesh, Adam was willing to die with her in this human life. This is exactly why Paul said in Ephesians 5:28, **“So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself.”**

This is exactly what Adam did. Then Paul explains Adam’s actions by saying, **“Nevertheless, death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude [likeness] of Adam’s transgression, who is the figure [Christ] of him that was to come”** (Romans 5:14).

Adam died for his wife because he loved her as Christ, who was to die for mankind. Christ also died for His Bride. Adam, who knew better, chooses death to be with his wife just as Christ. Adam could have gone to The Tree of Life and received eternity but he chose death. Adam was a type of Christ.

That is why Paul concludes in Ephesians 5:32, **“This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church.”**

Now, you have the answer as to why all mankind from this point in history and prophecy must do the work instead of God, because it was Adam and Eve’s choice!

The entire *Bible* story surrounds this royal marriage between Adam and Eve’s seed becoming The Groom waiting for **the church, His Bride, to get herself ready. Then all will be able to live forever, together in God’s household. His paradise of rest.**

## CHAPTER 4

# SIN AND THE PRIESTHOOD

**Sin entered the world when Adam and Eve sinned and God would no longer allow Adam and his family to live in His rest or paradise. They were then responsible for their own sustenance and survival. God's kingdom was lost. God would not dwell with them. They were no longer in God's "house." Why did God make this choice?**

### Paradise

Isaiah, The Prophet, as one of God's messengers, makes an astounding revelation and warns Israel that He would no longer be their **Savior** or even listen to them. Why? "**Behold, the Lord's hand is not shortened, that it cannot save**" (Isaiah 59:1). Can you understand what God is saying? God relates that He could **save** everyone He wants to **save**. God can **save** the whole world no matter what they may have done during their lifetime. But there is a reason He refuses to **save** or hear an individual's pleas.

### God's House And The World

**"But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid His face from you, that he will not hear."** God leaves willful sinners to themselves and doesn't even hear their prayers. Cain and Abel had not sinned as yet. However, because of Adam and Eve's sins, God now would not allow Adam and his family to stay in God's **rest** or allow **salvation**. Why?

Because they had sinned, thus disgracing themselves. Cain and Abel were still partly in God's **rest** since they were still in the **promised land, Eden**. They were not in **the wilderness**. Cain and Abel were in God's rest (Eden), just as Israel under Joshua entered God's rest. Nevertheless, Cain and Abel had to do the work.

Now Cain and Abel had to wait for **the promised seed**, The Christ, to restore God's complete **rest**. Both of them knew *The Gospel* or The Good News of The Restoration to Paradise. They knew because their parents had told them. God told them **The Gospel** and they lived it. God had completed His "**work**" or His "**kingdom**" from the foundation of the world (Hebrews 4:3-5). When? On The **Seventh** Day God had Adam and Eve in paradise or God's **rest**. When The Kingdom of God was completed for Adam and Eve, they turned their backs on their Father by sinning. They had to leave God's "house" and His protection.

God had to remove them from His "kingdom of rest" and Adam, with his family, had to work to survive. That was the curse for their lack of **faith** in God. They **spiritually** broke The Fifth Commandment. God now left them on their own to do **the work**. Sin penalized not only Adam and Eve, but their children as well. Sin entered the world, so God departed. Now you need to understand God's conditions to save the world so everyone could eventually re-enter God's rest!

## **The Priesthood**

God told His **chosen people**, Israel, they were to be a **royal nation** and a **chosen Priesthood** (Exodus 19:5-6). When Israel kept sinning, God turned to "**the church**" through Christ. The Apostle Peter said the same thing God told Israel. "**But ye are a cho-**



**sen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvelous light** (I Peter 2:9). Then, referring to The Gentiles, Peter stated they were **the people** of God (I Peter 2:10).

With the coming of a **promised seed** through Adam and Eve's children, a line of righteous people must exist, testifying or witnessing God's **promise to restore God's rest or paradise** (Hebrews 4:9). They must be God's chosen people leading others ultimately to Christ, The True High Priest and The Savior of The World.

## **Purpose Of The Priesthood**

Why did God ordain a Priesthood? Paul defined how The Priesthood was chosen. **“For every high priest taken from among men [human] is ordained [chosen] for men [humanity] in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins”** (Hebrews 5:1). When sin entered the world, God decreed a Priesthood to be His **witnesses** to remind humanity of their sins and be able to offer gifts as sacrifices so they could be forgiven. These gifts and sacrifices were actual works, so they would learn their lesson and try harder not to sin. When did The Priesthood originate? It originated when sin began with Adam and Eve.

That is why The High Priest of God met Abraham a long time before Moses or The Levitical Priesthood. This High Priest was after The Order of Melchizedek. This Priesthood was **one of righteousness and faith** and **“not of works”** (Hebrews 7:2). God chose this Priesthood by their **faith – faith without works**. Why? This was **the faith** that Adam and Eve lacked. They didn't believe or trust

God and sinned by eating the **wrong tree**. Please understand, The Priesthood existed long before Moses was born and really started with Adam and Eve when **sin entered the world**. Then, with the birth of Cain and Abel, a Priest had to be chosen because sinning began. God would only listen to His chosen people who had **faith** in Him. The others who sinned had to make sacrifices before God would hear them.

Since **the promised seed** was to come from Adam and Eve's children, a choice had to be made. With only two males, Cain and Abel, one had to become God's **called** and **chosen** Priest. Cain, being the firstborn, should have **inherited** the **right** of being the first High Priest chosen by God (Hebrews 5:1). However, two conditions were required by God, **faith** and **righteousness**. Cain and Abel understood *The Gospel* as their parents lived it and passed it on to all of their children (Hebrews 4:3). Remember, God finished all His work by **the seventh day of creation**. Always remember, The Kingdom of God was in existence when Adam and Eve were in The Garden of Eden.

All that was necessary for the genealogy of **the promised seed** was for Cain and Abel to reach the age of accountability. That is why in *God's Story* you pick up the time-sequence when Cain and Abel are grown men. One is a farmer and the other a shepherd. Who will God choose as the forefather of Christ, the **promised seed**? Notice both Cain and Abel now work to survive. No longer did they have God's rest to eat fruit freely from any tree. They must, hereafter, do **the work** for their survival.

Both men, as the adults of the seed of Adam and Eve, came and thereafter offered God a gift. The question is which gift did God accept? Cain, being a farmer, offered the first fruits of his crops. Abel, as a shepherd, offered a lamb. Both seemed to be a logical

choice. Why did God pick Abel's sacrifice over Cain's? A lamb depicts Christ, as the true lamb of God, but Cain's offering was also an acceptable offering according to The Law (Deuteronomy 18:4). So both offerings, according to The Law, were acceptable to God. It had to be some other reason that God chose Abel's sacrifice over Cain's. The Priesthood, up to Abraham's time, was after The Order of Melchizedek. The Melchizedek Priesthood demanded **righteousness** (Hebrews 7:2). That is why Jesus was accepted and chosen above all His fellows as Melchizedek because He loved **righteousness** (Hebrews 1:9).

One condition to be God's Priest was to be "**righteousness.**" But God also imposed another requirement which ultimately made God pick Abel. God's *story*, *The Bible*, is clear. Paul reveals **the elders obtained a good report** of their righteousness, but how was this determined? God chose Abel's sacrifice as more excellent than Cain's because Abel had **faith** (Hebrews 11:1-4). There, clearly, is His answer in *God's Story*. Abel was a man of **faith** and **righteousness** which made His sacrifice more excellent than Cain's, and therefore, Abel was chosen to begin God's line of The Priesthood. He was God's **first** High Priest (Hebrews 5:1 and Hebrews 11:1-4). Was Abel really more **righteous** than Cain? How can you prove this conclusion in *The Bible*? You will find God knew the hearts of these two men. When God accepted Abel's sacrifice, Cain resented it. After all, this was from his hard work too. What did God say? God asked Cain why was he angry. Then God revealed that it is human nature to "lust" which constitutes sin or coveting (Colossians 3:5).

God said you must master sin. "**If you doest well, shalt thou not be accepted**" (Genesis 4:7)? God was calling Cain to repentance. What did Cain do? Did he repent? No! Instead he murdered his brother. So God knew Abel was definitely more "the **lover of**

**righteousness**” than Cain could ever be. God knew what choice to make because Abel had **faith** and **righteousness**. Abel was “**the first**” High Priest of God.

## **Abel's Faith**

Why did God choose Abel's sacrifice as an act of faith? Both gave a sacrifice that was acceptable as explained in God's Law. Why was **Abel's sacrifice** and his faith accepted by God?

Abel's sacrifice was based upon **faith**, which made it a more excellent or a better sacrifice. Something about Abel's sacrifice made it more excellent. What was it? Hebrews states Abel's sacrifice was based upon **faith**. That **faith** made Abel's sacrifice more excellent. Why?

**Faith** has to do with **trust**. Obviously, Cain did not trust God when He selected Abel over Cain, who was the firstborn child of Adam and Eve. Rather than having **faith** in God for choosing Abel, Cain killed his brother. Being the first born he coveted The Priesthood. Cain did not have **trust** or **faith** in God. Abel did, so his sacrifice was accepted as righteousness by faith. Abel was more righteous because his heart was right. Both sacrifices were acceptable according to The Law. Abel would have been pleased with God's choice either way, because being more **faithful**, he would believe God knew what was best.

Cain proved he didn't believe God and murdered God's choice. Cain lacked a **faithful heart** and, instead, became a murderer.

## CHAPTER 5

# THE INHERITANCE

**The line of “the promised seed” to restore paradise and The Tree of Life was all set. Abel was to be The High Priest to offer an acceptable sacrifice when sin had entered the world (Hebrews 5:1). Abel’s sacrifice was accepted because he demonstrated “faith” (Hebrews 11:1-4). Abel’s sacrifice was more excellent than Cain’s because Abel’s faith proved his “righteousness” to God.**

### **Cain’s Heritage**

Because Cain had killed Abel, God banned him from His presence. Cain no longer could be in God’s rest (Eden). Cain felt his punishment was greater than he could bear. God set a mark upon Cain so no one would kill him. But who would kill him?

Obviously, only others in the family would want to kill Cain. Only family would have a need to settle Cain’s murder of his brother. Where did this family come from?

Since Cain and Abel were grown men, Adam and Eve had other children, but only Cain was the firstborn, followed by Abel. It was the extended family members after Adam and Eve had more children who would have wanted to seek revenge for their brother’s death.

That is why Lamech, a great-great-great grandson of Cain’s said,

**“If Cain shall be avenged sevenfold, truly Lamech seventy and sevenfold”** (Genesis 4:24). Since Lamech killed two men who attacked him (while protecting himself), he felt he deserved more mercy than Cain. These were all **family** members, which became a family society.

## **Cain's Lineage**

Cain married within his family and as time went on, began to build his own community which grew into a nation. But it was a nation without God. Cain passed on the knowledge of The Priesthood and as firstborn, he felt he had a right to The Office of a Priest.

It was at this time **Paganism** was born. Nations, which grew from Cain and his children, were spreading **religious ideas** as he understood and instituted them in his own way. These ideas not only came from his parents, but Cain included some of God's Law. The **good** and **bad** were religiously intermixed. The teachings of the pagan **king/priesthood** was carried to all future **pagan** generations but always excluding God. Pagans themselves lived partially in God's truth, but it was so mixed with human's imagination that it became a form of “unrighteousness.” Pagans lived **their “truth”** in “unrighteousness” as Cain did (Romans 1:18-21).

Aztecs, Egyptians, Babylonians, Sumerians, etc., all sacrificed animals (including humans) and had created their own “**priesthood.**” These Gentile Nations (without God) created Babylon or confusion. The world was left with pagan idolatry as opposed to the true Priesthood through the lineage of Abel. The **promised seed** would ultimately have to give the real sacrifice, the body God prepared for The Priesthood of Melchizedek or Jesus, The Christ. With Abel dead, how did the **promised seed** continue? Cain was cast out of Eden (pleasantness) to The Land of Nod or

“wandering without God.” Nod, in *The Bible*, is the wilderness where Satan is “the god” of this world (II Corinthians 4:4).

## The Appointed One

After Abel’s death, Cain’s family began to grow into a nation of Gentiles, but without God. A new Priesthood had to be appointed which would replace Abel as God’s accepted Priesthood. This God revealed when Seth was born. Eve conceived and states, “**For God, said she, hath appointed me another seed instead of Abel, whom Cain slew**” (Genesis 4:25).

Cain was still Eve’s firstborn, who was still alive, so why did Eve regard Seth as a replacement for Abel? Seth replaced Eve’s son, Abel as God’s High Priest. Seth was God’s accepted High Priest to offer sacrifices for sins. What follows?

As time went on, Seth has a son, Enos, whose own sons also began to call upon **the name** of God, The True God. Seth, as God’s High Priest, through whom **the promised seed would** come, was proclaiming *The Gospel*, of the coming **paradise** to be restored, which is God’s **kingdom**. **Thus, a society of paganism came through Cain while Seth’s lineage lived as The Sons of God.**

Those chosen for this Priesthood were accepted because of their **faith and not “works.”** Why? Notice this is exactly what Adam and Eve lacked. They lacked **faith** in God and sinned by eating of the wrong tree. That is what Christianity, the **faith** of The Fathers, is all about (Jude).

The Priesthood existed long before Moses and really started when sin entered the world with Adam and Eve. Now, with the birth of Cain and Abel, a Priest had to be chosen because sin began to

evolve and God would only hear from a **chosen people** who after sinning could repent, make a sacrifice and renew their faith in God. They could begin again with a clean slate.

Since the **promised seed** had to come from Adam and Eve's children, a choice had to be made. With only two grown males, Cain and Abel, one had to become God's **called** and **chosen** Priest. Cain, being the firstborn, should have inherited the right of being the first High Priest chosen among men by God (Hebrews 11:4). Remember, two conditions were required by God. First, a Priest must have "faith" and secondly, was to have a desire for "righteousness." That is required according to The Order of Melchizedek. Both Cain and Abel understood *The Gospel* as their parents passed it on to them (Hebrews 4:3). Remember, **God finished all His work by the seventh day of creation.**

The Kingdom of God existed when Adam and Eve lived in The Garden of Eden. All that was necessary for the line or genealogy of the **promised seed** was for Cain and Abel to reach the age of accountability. This is why in God's "**story**," you pick up the time sequence when Cain and Abel are grown men. One is a farmer and the other a shepherd. **God chose Abel.** No longer does God do "**the work**," which now meant Adam and Eve, as well as their progeny, were to make the choice of "**right**" and "**wrong**" by their own decisions.

The elders obtained a **good report** of their **righteousness**. But by what? If you read Hebrews 11:1-4, you find God chose Abel's sacrifice as a more excellent one than Cain's because Abel had **faith**. God clearly reveals His answer in *God's Story*. Abel was a man of **faith** and **righteousness**. This alone made Abel's sacrifice more excellent than Cain's and therefore, Abel was chosen to begin the line of God's Priesthood. Abel was God's first High Priest



according to Hebrews 5:1.

Was Abel really more righteous than Cain? How does *The Bible* prove it to you? Only God understands the hearts of all men and in particular, these two men. What actually happened when God accepted Abel's sacrifice over Cain's? Cain began to resent it. After all, this was Cain's hard work, too. What did God expect? God asked Cain why he was so angry. Then God revealed that it is **human nature** to lust, but at the same time, it is a sin or an act of coveting (Colossians 3:5). However, God told him he must master sin. If he did well, he would be accepted (Genesis 4:7). God was calling Cain to repentance.

What did Cain do? Did he repent? No, he murdered his brother. Abel was definitely **the lover of righteousness**. God knew what choice to make because Abel had **faith** and **righteousness**. Abel was the first High Priest of God. Hebrews 1 defines the two conditions necessary to be High Priest after The **Order of Melchizedek**.

After Abel's death, Seth became The High Priest. Both Cain and Abel had produced their own way of life, "**religiously speaking**," up to the time of the flood. The world was now divided, Seth's family following The True God, as The Sons of God. Cain and his family were building a family of pagan religious beliefs, seldom including The True God in the equation. The Pagans believed since God's "**spirit**," The Great Spirit, created everything, they decided to worship God's creation instead of God (Romans 1).

Cain claimed The Priesthood by "**right of firstborn**," passing down his lineage and his right of "inheritance." The nations of the world following Cain's heritage had their own Priest/Kings offering sacrifice to appease their personal ideas of a "god." Be-

fore the flood, idolatry prevailed throughout the world and all its religions.

The **inheritance** of The Priesthood was **man-made** and not of God. The pagan priesthood was also passed on or inherited by the right of the firstborn, which determined the inheritance.

### **Melchizedek Priesthood**

The Priesthood of The Order of Melchizedek was by oath from Almighty God and not by human genealogy (Hebrews 7:20-22). This Melchizedek Priesthood had no father or mother but was by an oath chosen by God, Himself (Hebrews 7:1-3).

God chose The Order of Melchizedek by “**righteousness**” and “**faith**” and not from The Law of Inheritance through genealogy. The Melchizedek Priesthood came from God, Himself, to fulfill **the promised seed**.

This line or Order of Priesthood was not by man's inheritance but purely by God's choice, which culminated in Jesus, The Christ. Christ was The Anointed One as “**the body**” God wanted as an accepted sacrifice. Christ, The True High Priest of Melchizedek, replaced Cain (Pagan Priesthood) and Abel's Priesthood. How? By being both, Christ, the real firstborn, Son of God and by loving “righteousness.” That is why (Psalm 110 and Hebrews 1) Jesus replaced all firstborn as Priests, to **save the world**, which included both Pagans and Christians (I John 4:14).

Christ died for everyone's sins and was The Light for all men (John 1). However, The Levitical Priesthood remains on earth and Melchizedek is “**a spiritual priesthood**” in heaven (Hebrews 8:4).

## The True Inheritance

Since The Priesthood of Melchizedek was not always selected by **the right of inheritance**, God came full circle. Christ, as High Priest, being God's firstborn Son **who was a lover of righteousness and faith was the body God accepted as High Priest. There was never a human who demonstrated righteousness and faith more than Christ did. Jesus truly became The Author of Salvation** (Hebrews 5:9).

This is why Jesus was "**the body**" that was accepted by God. God never was pleased with animal sacrifice (Hebrews 10:5). God allowed animal sacrifice from the time of Abel because **the true promised seed**, Christ, as God's **sacrifice** had not yet come. The Old Testament Priesthood was only a **shadow** or **type** of Christ (Hebrews 10). God accepted animal sacrifice because it was a shadow or type of the way human nature was. Jesus, as a human, was "**the acceptable lamb**," as God's sacrifice for all sins. The others were as goats or oxen – still carnal. Pagans, even worse, were lions, leopards and bears, voracious in behavior. Abel, and then Seth had "**the faith**" which was counted as **righteousness** for The Order of Melchizedek.

Once Jesus was resurrected and became just like God and was The True High Priest, He no longer was pictured as "a lamb," but totally "**spirit**" exactly like His Father (Hebrews 1:1-2).

To understand animal sacrifice completely, read the book *Discovering God*. The sacrifice of Christ, His firstborn Son, who loved righteousness and was faithful as Melchizedek was based upon the real body God wanted as a sacrifice (Hebrews 1:9 and John 1:18). As God's High Priest, who was perfect in **righteousness** and **faith**, Jesus now with His sacrifice has paid for all the world's

sins. Why? Why would Jesus' sacrifice, pay for everyone's sins? Christ, who as **The Word**, created all things and because he did, God made Him, The Heir of **all things** (Hebrews 1:1-4). Jesus, The Christ (Anointed High Priest) paid for everyone's sins because He created **everything**. It was, then, **salvation** became a matter of **inheritance**. This inheritance, since Jesus was the total **heir**, is the one who gives of His **inheritance** to everyone else. Salvation, therefore, comes from the spilled blood of Christ, The Savior. Why?

### **Life Is In The Blood**

Moses said "**the life of human beings is in the blood**" (Leviticus 17:11). That is the reason blood has to be offered to make a sacrifice acceptable to God. By offering the very life of a person is what proves **faith** in God. Jesus, the **faithful** and **righteous one** gave His blood for you and everyone else. Why is giving one's life, the ultimate sacrifice which is acceptable by God? "**Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends**" (John 15:13). This human sacrifice, by spilling His blood for you, made Jesus, The Author of Your Salvation and The Groom to marry The Bride. (Matthew 22). He was willing to die because He loved you and all mankind more than His own life. Just as Adam died for his wife. He and God are "**love.**" That is the reason you must also be willing to sacrifice your life as a Christian. It is God's "**love**" (agàpè) that makes you Holy, as God is Holy (Ephesians 1:4). By being like Christ or having Christ "in you," you also inherit all things from Jesus, as Sons of God. Inheritance is the key to **salvation**. Once you become a living sacrifice like Jesus, as a lamb, you now become acceptable to God as His son (Galatians 3:28 and Romans 12:1). Everyone becomes Sons (the family) of God, like Christ through and by His **inheritance**.

## CHAPTER 6

### GOD'S TESTAMENT

God's "story" is God's written "legal will" or "testament." As with any "will" it must stand up in court. Those who contest the "will" have to be very sure of their case or they will be proven a fraud. If anyone is found to be "a fraud" they will be without excuse. The benefactors who are listed to receive an inheritance must also qualify for it to be legal. The executor or administrator is the one responsible to carry out the legality of "the will" and disperse all assets listed. A "will" must also, when written, have two to three witnesses to certify the legal document to be true.

#### The Executor

*The Bible* claims God, The Father, whose "testament" is His **story**, wants to give this inheritance to His sons and daughters. *The Bible* is GOD'S WRITTEN WILL in a **court of law** (The White Throne Judgment) to be testified or witnessed in **COURT**.

Ephesians 1:10 claims, "**In the dispensation of the fullness of times he might gather together in one [be the same] all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth, even in him.**" Jesus, The Christ is the administrator or mediator of the "will" (Hebrews 8:6).

It is God's purpose to allot **His household** as it gives Him great

pleasure to do so (Ephesians 2:9). God receives joy **“in giving”** because He is full of love. God loves His creation (Romans 8:19). He intends to make everything, all His creation to be **“very good”** just as it was on **the seventh day** in **The Garden of Eden** (Genesis 1:31). The result was **“God’s rest”** after **perfecting His work**. Jesus is the one given the job of restoring **God’s rest** (Matthew 18:11). When **paradise** was lost, Christ was assigned to restore it (1 Corinthians 15:22-23). By restoring it, The Tree of Life or Salvation which was lost will be reinstated.

## **The Dispensation**

The **“fullness of times”** is when this **contract, The Covenant of God**, is fulfilled or completed. Then God’s **“will”** goes into force. When does this happen?

First you must understand when the **“will”** is executed and what benefits are dispersed to those receiving **the inheritance**. Christ said, **“For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth them, even so the Son quickeneth, whom he will. For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son”** (John 5:21-22). Quite clear. The Son, Jesus, executes **“the will”** as a **judge**, and no one else will have that authority. What benefit does The Son give? **Eternal life** is what God bequeaths. It is a gift of **grace** as an **inheritance**. You cannot earn it but there is much, much more!

The Greek word for **“dispensation”** is defined as a **“household.”** **“A household consists of everything one owns.”** A **“dispensation”** is **“the result of dispensing the assets of the household.”** This is in addition to **“the gift of eternal life.”** God desires to give you everything He has. It gives Him pleasure and great joy. God loves His **creation**. The **dispensation** of God’s **house**, be-

sides **salvation** as a **gift**, is everything God **creates**. Realize the wonder and awesome **love** of God.

On the seventh day of creation, God said everything He created was **very good** (Genesis 1:31). Always remember God did the **work** and not Adam and Eve. This was God's **gift** to Adam and Eve and their future children. But there was a condition, which is the same requirement for **salvation**.

## A Kingdom

When God created Adam and Eve, He gave them a job. “**And God blessed them and God said unto them, Be fruitful and multiply and replenish the earth and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowls of the air and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth**” (Genesis 1:28). Do you really understand what God is telling you? God told Adam and Eve they were given everything on earth so they could be the rulers and be in control as His heirs. What a gift! Humans will rule in God's **kingdom**. However, they had to replenish and take care of it. In essence, God told Adam and Eve they are responsible to care for all His **creation**. That is why He told them to dress and keep **the garden** (Genesis 2:15). This is exactly the same **condition for you to have salvation** and all of God's blessings (Deuteronomy 6:4-7 and Matthew 22:37-40). God's **conditions** for you to inherit from His “**will**” are to love God and love His creation. It is that simple! Humans make religion too complicated and confusing. What is required to be saved is to love God, as He loves you and love what God has given you. That is it!

God refers to “human religions” as Babylon, which consists of controversy and **confusion**. They are in “**the wilderness**” with

Satan as their **god** and **father** (John 8 and II Corinthians 4:4). That is why Jesus commands Christians to come out of her – Babylon (Revelation 18:4).

## A Mystery

God's "**testament**" is like any "**will**" – it is kept a secret until it is executed. Then God will make **all things known**. Paul said, "**Having made known unto us [Christians] the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he hath purposed in himself**" (Ephesians 1:9).

Just like any "**will**" the one giving the inheritance keeps the contents secret until the contract is one day enacted. Why? Because a "**will**" has conditions. Any "**will**" can be changed when some of the conditions change. In *The Torah* itself, which is The Law, God had made changes with five different **covenants** in it. So God changed His "**will**" over five times in The Law or Torah.

Ultimately, God is giving **salvation** as a "**gift**" to everyone (I Corinthians 15:22-23 and I John 4:14). But God's "**will**" **covers much more than salvation**. God desires for you to share everything that He creates. But this is "**conditional**," with "**a reward**" for doing certain requirements, which are all based upon **faith** (Matthew 25:29). **Rewards** are in addition to **salvation**. Rewards in the "**will**" (*The Bible*) can be given or taken away. Since this is so, the mystery of God's "**will**" is to remain secret. Disclosure of God's "**testament**" must remain hidden and only known to God and His Son, Jesus, but also, includes the **witnesses**.

## A Witness

Paul defined clearly the need for witnesses. "**In the mouth of two**



**or three witnesses shall every word be established**" (II Corinthians 13:1). Even God's promise given to Abraham was confirmed by an oath, by two immutable things (Hebrews 6:17-18).

The truthfulness and authenticity of an individual's word is guaranteed by two or three faithful witnesses. "Hearsay" does not have a chance in God's **court**. God requires His testament to be verified by two or three faithful witnesses! That is why **faith** is the basis of **salvation**. Without being **faithful**, a person's word cannot be reliable. It is by **faith** you are **saved** but that **faith** must be real and proven by "deeds" and "**works**" (James 2:18). Read the book *Faith With Works*.

God demands a **faithful witness** or Christ cannot accept the **witness in the judgment**. God's **witnesses "in the judgment"** must be clothed in white, which is **righteousness** or they will not be accepted (Revelation 19:8). God's witnesses are never to be fraudulent in any of their ways.

Jesus, The Christ is **the first faithful witness** who was sent by God to testify of His "**word**" (Revelation 1:5). But, you need two more witnesses.

The Twelve Tribes of Israel were a chosen nation to witness what God's "**will**" states to be true. However, they were rejected because they lacked **faith** (Hebrews 3:10-12). They did not understand God's ways. This is the reason, in **the millennium**, Israel will be a **faithful witness** to the world and will eventually be **saved** (Romans 11:16).

The third witness of God's "**will**" is The Church of God. That is why Jesus commissioned **the church** to be a witness of Him in all the earth (Acts 1:8). Now there are the three witnesses of

God's "testament." Christianity has an important commission. How faithful you are will validate your **testimony** or your **witness** during The White Throne Judgment.

That is why God's **faithful witnesses** will become **kings** and **priests**. Israel, as well, was to have been a nation of **priests** and **kings** (Exodus 19:6).

The Apostle Paul summarizes all the faithful witnesses of the past and clearly states, "**Wherefore seeing we [Christians] also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us** (Hebrews 12:1).

*The Bible*, God's "**story**" is truly God's "testament" or "**will**" to be administered by Jesus as The Christ, as **the promised seed**, to save Adam and Eve and all their children (I Corinthians 15:22-23). God's "**story**" is a legal document, written by God as His "**will**" to all His **creation** to be disclosed during The White Throne Judgment (John 5:27-29).

## **Enforcing God's Will**

Hebrews 9:15-28 reveals the **biblical** requirements for God's **testament** to go into force. The key conditions are as follow:

- 1 **All sin must be forgiven and then destroyed.**
- 2 **Death of a testator or heir is, also, in charge of the estate.**
- 3 **Until the testator dies, "the will" cannot be executed.**

- 4 Blood had to be shed to reveal the love of the administrator. Christ is that **administrator**. One must be **faithful**.
  
- 5 **Finally, all those who are faithful and trust Christ will receive eternal life at His appearing.**

Until these conditions are met, the mystery of God's **testament** will not be made known. Only Jesus as The Mediator and His **faithful witnesses** will know the contents of God's "**will**" (Hebrews 8:6). Why not? Simply because God changes His "**will**" according to those who follow "**righteousness**" in **faith**.

## CHAPTER 7

### THE LAW

For nearly two thousand, five hundred (2,500) years there was no written Word of God. Didn't God preach *The Gospel* in those previous years? Was there no salvation before The Bible? Yes! The Gospel was preached from the very time of Adam and Eve in The Garden. Who, then, preached *The Gospel* before God had *The Bible* written down? Adam and Eve were living *The Gospel* in The Garden.

### The Prophets

Paul plainly stated that in past years God spoke to the fathers, from Adam and Eve to this day by The Prophets. But initially God, Himself, revealed **the kingdom** to Adam and Eve (Hebrews 1:1-2). They lived in God's **kingdom**. The Hebrew word for "prophet" gives a much clearer definition of a "prophet" as opposed to the modern conception.

A "prophet" is "one to whom God reveals His Word by revelation in visions or dreams." It is also true that God gave **visions** and **dreams** to those like Isaiah, Ezekiel and others. Agabus was ONE example in The New Testament. In Hebrew, however, the word "prophet" has a broader definition. A "prophet" more correctly means "**one who speaks The Word of God.**" The counterpart in Greek is "**the oracle of God.**" In Greek times, "**an oracle**" was "one who spoke The Word of God as a pagan."

The Hebrew and Greek languages both convey the same understanding. Those Greeks or Hebrews who had **visions** and **dreams** were Prophets who had The Word of God given to them **directly**. Oracles, however, were “**pagans**” speaking truth “**in unrighteousness.**”

The “**oracles**” themselves spoke a false word of God. In Greek there are two words, “*prophetaise*” and “*prophetaeo*” signifying **these two definitions** of a “prophet.”

At times, even **nations** are considered God's Prophets. In Psalm 105:15, God calls The Nation of Israel as one of His Prophets. These nations were to speak and live by every Word of God. They were to be God's **witnesses** of His “**Word.**” God spoke in one form or another long before the **written word** by all His Prophets (Hebrews 1:1-2).

## **The Torah**

Moses, a Prophet of God (Deuteronomy 18:18), was directed by God to put God's “**Words**” in a book. It was called *The Book of “The Law”* and later was translated into English. However, “The Law” in English does not do it justice. In Hebrew, “The Torah” (**law** when translated into English) carries far more meaning than just “**a law.**”

“Torah” is a Hebrew word that comes from a root meaning “to shoot an arrow.” It conveys the thought of living within a straight path. It is **instruction** or learning from God. The Jewish religion relates to *The Torah* as **the path** or **the way**. It is more than a Law. *The Torah* is a **way or path** of life. It is the teachings of **what is written**. Much of The Law or **Torah** is **the history of the creation by God**. In fact, the legal requirements of The Let-

ter of The Law has to do with **The Nation of Israel** only. This part of The Torah of Law is known as **The Law of Moses**. Moses was the “**administrator**.” This Law only covered 120 years from Moses’ birth to his death. But for two thousand, four hundred years (2,400), *The Torah* had different covenants.

## Five Covenants

Erroneously some consider The Law or Torah, as part of *The Old Testament* (God’s “**will**”) or *The Old Covenant* “**contract**.” But there are actually **five contracts** or **covenants** in The Torah and not merely The Ten Commandments. The Jews made **six hundred and thirteen commands** given by God, from The Torah. Read a copy of *The Talmud* for all **613 commandments**. There is much more to The Torah, known in English as The Law, than you may realize. The **five agreements** are as follows:

### First Contract

God’s contract with Adam and Eve was they had a choice to eat from The Tree of Life or The Tree of Good and Evil (Genesis 2-4). This **agreement** with God actually had to do with **salvation** – **eternal life**. Adam and Eve, from the beginning, could have lived in God’s **kingdom** with God’s **presence** forever. This was God’s **rest** or God’s **household**.

### Second Contract

After the flood, God made a **covenant** or **contract** with Noah. This became known as The Noahite Covenant. This **contract** had much to do with **the church’s agreement** in Acts 15, when it was decided The Gentiles, without “**the works**” of The Law, could receive God’s Holy Spirit. The Gentiles did not have to be cir-

cumcised or **keep any part** of The Letter of The Law (Acts 15:24-29). Gentiles followed The Noahite Covenant. Now The Gentiles followed God's Law on a higher standard, by God's Holy Spirit being able to change a person's human nature (Romans 2).

### **Third Contract**

Many are not aware that Abraham had **two acts of faith** with two **different promises** by God. This **covenant** was a **contract of righteousness** as Abraham kept God's **commandments and statutes** (Genesis 26:5), but it was not a **legal requirement** because **the covenant** was based upon **faith**. Abraham based the obedience of God's Law on his **faith** rather than a **legal matter**. The Law of Moses was not added to The Torah for 430 years after Abraham's time (Galatians 3:17). That is when The Law became a legal requirement with judgments administered by Moses. That is why it is called The Law of Moses.

This is the reason, after two thousand, five hundred years (2,500), Moses started to write The Torah into a law – The Law of Moses. Now The Torah became a matter of a law in court (I Kings 8:32).

This first act of **faith** had a **promise** which only had to do with **the land promised** to Abraham's children. No **salvation** was offered, but it was still based upon **faith** and was **guaranteed**. This was an unconditional contract based totally upon **faith**. This is why Melchizedek, God's High Priest, blessed Abraham. Melchizedek was a Priesthood that loved **righteousness** and had **faith** as its **requirement**. There were no additional conditions to keep The Letter of The Law because The Law was meant to be written in the hearts and minds of men. This would be *The New Covenant* or New Testament administered by Christ. Read all of Genesis 15. This first agreement or The Abrahamic Promise only gave **the**

**land** as God's rest.

## Fourth Contract

This **covenant** or **contract** was also a guarantee for **salvation**. It was a **promise** by God based upon **faith** for **eternal life** that God, not **The Letter of The Law**, would change a person's nature. Then The Law would be written in their hearts and minds. In **faith you believe** through Christ that God would make you perfect or Holy as He is perfect (Ephesians 1:4). Otherwise, you would **lack** that **faith**. Read all of Genesis 22 and the book *Faith With Works*.

## Fifth Contract

**The fifth covenant** became a **legal document** and was only made with Israel. Very plainly, Moses stated the **contract** made with Israel was different than any of the **previous contracts** made with the fathers (Deuteronomy 5:2-3). This **covenant** is not based on **faith** but on The **Letter** of The (written) Law and must be kept strictly. Breaking even one little point of The Law made one **guilty** of breaking the **entire law** (James 2:10). Why was God so **strict** with Israel? In *The Book Of Deuteronomy*, in Hebrew, is a re-writing of The Law of Moses, after they sinned. That is why Deuteronomy 5 states this **covenant** is not the **same covenant** as with the Fathers. This **covenant** had blessings in this life but also curses with **no eternal life**. It was added to The Torah 430 years after Abraham (Galatians 4).

Hebrews 3 reveals Israel did not know God's **way** was based upon **faith**. Because Israel sinned by building **the golden calf**, God gave them **the legal letter** of The Law to be kept perfectly because they lacked the **faith** God intended them to have. Right and wrong had



to be spelled out for them because they had a **wrong heart** (Deuteronomy 5:29). The God of *The Old Testament* wasn't cruel; it was because Israel refused to have a right heart based upon **faith**, and therefore, by their own human effort, had to keep The Letter of The Law perfectly. This is known as "**Man's Work**." This Letter of The Law was administered by Moses, called The Law of Moses. The only way God could allow them to be His chosen people, as a **witness** of His **testament** or **will**, was for them to keep The Law "**perfectly**" as a **legal document**. This covenant had blessings and cursings or judgment. This Law of Moses was a court matter.

Because Israel lacked **faith**, even The Priesthood had to be changed from Melchizedek to Levi. This Priesthood was to be based upon a **carnal** or human commandment (Hebrews 7). This **covenant** was for **carnal, unrighteous people** (I Timothy 1:7-10). The reason Paul called this commandment "**carnal**" was The Law had to be kept by human effort. They had a wrong heart (Deuteronomy 5:29).

Just as any nation having people who have **no conscience** to do **righteousness**, there must be **written legal laws** which must be kept to protect the innocent population. This fifth covenant in The Torah or Law was part of The Law known as *The Old Covenant* or *Old Testament*. This **covenant** was only part of **The Torah** or **the way** for unbelieving people who lacked **faith** in God. **The Torah** or The Law covers at least **five covenants**. The Law of Moses was only for Israel as a **witness** so they and others could eventually come to God (Hebrews 3:5 and Galatians 3:19, 24).

*The Torah* is much, much more than **the one covenant** made with Israel. *The Torah* also includes The Abrahamic Covenant based upon **faith** so God would change everyone's human nature by

writing His Law in their **hearts** and **minds** (Jeremiah 31:31). It is all a matter of faith and trust in God. That is **the theme** in God's "**story**." Now, hopefully, you are able to fully understand The Torah, which is known as The Law.

## Perfection And Carnality

*The Torah* covers **the history of creation** with Adam and Eve until "**a nation**" could be chosen as God's people. Those groups eventually became known as The Nation of Israel.

**The theme of the promised seed** courses throughout these *first five books* written by Moses. It is a story starting with God's **kingdom in paradise** or God's **rest**, where Adam and Eve are living in perfection. The choice was theirs, but they sinned and were cut off from The Tree of Life – **salvation**.

Because of sin which Cain committed, two different groups of people generated their own societies. Paganism, without God, was pursued by Cain and his lineage, which established many personal **gods** alongside the **worship** of The One True God. Any human establishment always ends in confusion or Babylon. Seth, who replaced Abel and his lineage, called upon God and were God's sons. Seth was the lineage **to restore paradise** from which **the promised seed** would come.

Both societies, Cain's and Seth's, had High Priests and both offered their own chosen type of **sacrifices**. Each offered sacrifices to please their **individual gods**. Seth, calling upon **the true God**, sacrificed on behalf of his people for sins as **the faithful one**, as Abel did before him.

In time, the world was filled with many **gods**, especially since

each human lived almost one thousand years. Each had a favored “**god**” that they chose as their High Priest to intervene for their sins.

Near the time of the flood, societies had integrated the teachings of the **sons of God** along with the **pagans**. The world had literally become **perverse** and every thought mankind generated had turned to evil (Genesis 6:5). The world became evil because every human system of government ended in violence (Matthew 11:12).

One thousand years of existence, as in the case of Methuselah, did not keep mankind from turning to different levels of **evilness**. God had to step in before the complete destruction of every single person. Carnality dominated the human family. Humanity, by its own efforts, **could not ever** become perfect. To end the evil, God caused the flood and only Noah and his family were **saved**.

The free choice God gave to the inhabitants did not, nor could not, restore **paradise**. Even God's **chosen people**, in time, integrated and became part of Babylon. Only Noah, **a preacher of righteousness**, “who was perfect in his generation” and only his household were preserved.

About two thousand years of world history seems to show you that humans could not live at peace and everything seems to end in carnality. This **thread** throughout God's **story**, *The Bible*, will prevail until God's **kingdom** is restored by Christ, **the promised seed**. It goes without saying, humans, left to themselves, eventually become carnal in one way or another.

The word “**carnal**” in Hebrew and Greek merely means “*beast like*.” Mankind, just as animals, fight for their survival. Self-

preservation dominates humanity like any of the animal kingdom. That is why, starting with Abel, God accepted animal sacrifices. Notice what Solomon, in all his **wisdom**, learned: “**I said in mine heart concerning the estate of the sons of men, that God might manifest them, and that they might see that they themselves are beasts**” (Ecclesiastes 3:18). Until **the promised seed** restores what was lost, mankind will always be carnal or act beast-like. Humanity, on their own, each and every time, resorts to or ends in violence and war. Any type of religion done by man’s efforts always ends in chaos and confusion.

God accepted animal sacrifices for the various sins because sacrifices were a **shadow** or a picture of good things to come (Hebrews 10:1). God never delighted or had pleasure in the sacrificing of animals (Hebrews 10:4-6).

The Apostle Peter clearly reveals **this truth** of God. Peter received a vision where God asks Peter to eat all kinds of animals, **clean** and **unclean**. Peter said he had never eaten any unclean animals and would not eat unclean foods. Peter pondered this vision until he was called to **the first conversion** of a Gentile, named Cornelius, who was a centurion. Peter had the vision where God told him, concerning all these animals, both clean and unclean, “**What God hath cleansed that call not thou common.**” Read what Peter finally learned in Acts 10 and Acts 11:9.

Then Peter understood the vision after he saw Cornelius receive God’s Holy Spirit – that God no longer discriminated between Gentiles and His people Israel. Peter said, “**But in every nation he that fears [believes] him [God] and worketh righteousness is accepted with him**” (Acts 10:34-35).

Solomon saw that mankind, in their **natural state**, were acting

carnally, just as **beasts** act. Only God can make domesticated humanity as clean animals, such as an ox, goat or sheep. These individuals are still carnal but trainable. God calls this **repentance** when you turn to **the true God**. So “**in small steps**” or “**in leaps**” you can become **righteous**. Hopefully, now you understand why God allowed and accepted animal sacrifice for sin.

It started with Cain and Abel and continued through the ages by pagans who were accepted as High Priests as well. The Egyptians, Sumerians and Aztecs, among others, worshipped their gods as each group decided for themselves. God's Prophets and High Priests made sacrifice for sin from the beginning with Abel. That is why God told Noah to bring both clean and unclean animals into **the ark** (Genesis 7:6-10).

Animal sacrifice did not start with Moses and Israel but from the beginning with Cain and Abel. Abel was the **accepted** High Priest of God. The other High Priests through Cain made their offering, not according to God's ways but instead chose their own ways (including the sacrifice of children).

God reveals **The Pagans** took the actual truth of God and turned the truth into **foulness** or unrighteousness (Romans 1:18).

The Torah is more than The Law given to Moses, it was **the shadow** of good things to come, which is the ultimate accepted High Priest, Melchizedek, Jesus, The Christ. The Torah, as a **schoolmaster**, was and is the **way** or **path** to Christ (Galatians 3:19).

But remember, God took no pleasure in animal sacrifice, but in the body (Christ) He was to prepare (Hebrews 10:5). The **entire Torah** points to Jesus, **the promised seed**. Be aware God can and does have certain individuals come to Christ who repent and

become Christians.

That is why The Law of Moses or The Torah administered by Moses only included **one covenant** in The Law or The Torah. The Law administered by Moses was only a **testimony** or **witness** of things to be spoken about The Christ (Hebrews 3:1-3). The Torah revealed Christ and Jesus said, very plainly, that this is the **theme** of God's **story**. Jesus revealed that if they had listened to Moses, they would have believed in Him because Moses himself, from the beginning, spoke of Jesus in his own writings (John 5:46-47).

The Torah is far more than a Law. It is a **path** to **eternal life** or **salvation**. The Torah covers *The Bible's* "**theme**" of the **promised seed**, Christ, who will restore **paradise** (Matthew 18:11).

*The Old Covenant* made with Israel is only **one contract** in The Torah. *The Old Testament* proclaims a right to live and prosper in the **promised land** but secured no guarantee for **eternal life**. This *Old Covenant* had only to do with the **land** and **prosperity**.

The Torah is about Christ, the **promised seed**, with **salvation**, or the right to The Tree of Life in **paradise**. That is why Jesus said, "**I am the resurrection and the life**" (John 11:25). Jesus, Himself is the **path** or The Torah. Moses and The Letter of The Law were only to be a **witness** to **testify** of Christ, The Messiah.

The Torah, the **first five books** of *The Bible*, were **written** as a **witness** to testify to the **theme** of God's **story**. The Torah, is a legal document, as you would find in court. Israel, as God's people, was to witness Christ by keeping The Law perfectly, in every point, but they failed, as no one can keep the Law perfectly. They will complete or **fulfill** this "**testimony**" or "**will**" of God to the world during **The Millennium** (Romans 11:25-26).

God waited about 2,500 years to write *The Bible*, God's "**will**" as a "**testimony**" of His plan. This "**will**" is to be a **contract** which will be exposed or made known at The White Throne Judgment. Until Moses and The Nation of Israel, God **witnessed** *The Gospel* through The Prophets who were **faithful** to the end (Hebrews 1:1-3).

When Israel sinned, it became necessary that God made The Law, *The Old Covenant*, a legal matter so Israel could remain God's **witness**.

Much of The Torah demands God's **witnesses** have free choice just as Adam and Eve had. Now Israel which are God's Prophet, because of their wrong hearts, must keep The Letter of The Law perfectly by their own **works** of **righteousness**. The keeping of The Law of Moses was their own righteousness by The Letter of The Law (Deuteronomy 6:25).

## CHAPTER 8

### THREE WITNESSES

**From Adam and Eve in The Garden, to the times of Israel, you have traced the theme of God’s “story” about Christ, “The Promised Seed.”**

With God’s “testament” or “will” being written as a legal document, His Prophets and Israel became the first witnesses of this testimony.

You will find that the rest of *The Old Testament* relates to Israel’s refusal to witness *The Gospel* with God’s constant efforts through His Prophets to make Israel faithful and learn to trust Him.

When calling *the scriptures* – *The Old Testament*, it can be a misnomer. You have seen many covenants made by God with mankind in The Law. That is why *The Old Testament* is merely called *the scriptures* by The Jews. In Hebrew, *the scriptures* refer to *The Old Testament* as The TANAK.

The three divisions of *The Old Testament* break down to T.N.K. “T” representing “The Torah,” “N” representing “The Neviim” or “prophets” and “K” representing “The Ketuvim” or “writings.” Then, with the added vowels, it is translated “TANAK.”

Amazingly, Jesus defines what these three parts of *the scriptures* refer to or why God had them written. Remember, Jesus is **the promised seed** who restores paradise, God’s **rest**, to Adam and Eve’s children (I Corinthians 15:22-23).



## The Tanak's Purpose

For forty days Jesus taught His Disciples about God's **kingdom**, then He was taken to heaven. Notice what He said just before He left: "**These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law [Torah] of Moses, and in the prophets [Neviim] and in the Psalms [Ketuvim] concerning me**" (Luke 24:44).

The **entire TANAK** was written about Christ. When you study *The Old Testament*, you will find throughout **the theme** of God's "**story**" it is about Christ as The Administrator who will restore **paradise**. *The Old Testament* can't be said any simpler. The entire *TANAK* is about Christ and **the restoration** to The Garden of Eden with The Tree of Life. Jesus claims His Disciples are to be **witnesses** of those things which reveal Him in The *TANAK* (Luke 24:48). **The Torah** and all The **Prophets** and **Writings** witness Christ. There are three written **witnesses** about Christ.

## Israel – God's Prophets

Besides God's Prophets, The Nation of Israel was also to be God's Prophets (Psalm 105:15). Read the entire 105<sup>th</sup> Psalm and get Israel's **promise of the land** by being God's Prophet. But who was Israel? Jacob was renamed Israel, who eventually had 12 sons known as the Twelve Tribes of Israel. Read Galatians 4 where Isaac was miraculously born to Sarah who was past her reproductive years. Isaac was born of God by a promise. That is why Israel was chosen as God's people and witness (Genesis 22).

These twelve sons grew into The Nation of Israel. The twelve sons, as a nation at the time of Moses, became a nation of millions. When Moses died he was replaced by Joshua, who brought

them into **the promised land**. As long as Joshua or the elders remained, Israel followed God. After the death of Joshua and the elders, Israel segmented into self-rule, each tribe of the twelve, in their **separate inheritance** by lot. Some even began to hire their own Levites as their own personal Priests. It was a time when each person did what was **right** in his own eyes (Judges 21:25).

Because The Israelites were not following God, their enemies, such as The Philistines, prevailed over them. Each person was deciding **right** from **wrong** and not including God in their decisions, which eventually brought persecution from their enemies. They cried out to God, so God sent them a judge, Samson, who would deliver them. The **judges** and Israel were never unified except for short periods of time. Read *The Book of Judges*. Israel never fully entered God's **rest** (Hebrews 4:8).

Israel would turn to God and then when things got better, they began to forget Him. "*Jesus*," translated in Hebrews 4:8, should be "*Yeshua*," and is an English **miss translation**. In Hebrew it is translated correctly as "Yeshua."

Then the people wanted a king. God said since Israel did not want God as their ruler, He gave Saul as their first king. Then Saul disobeyed God and was replaced by King David.

David, being a king after God's heart, had united Israel; and Israel **almost** entered God's **rest** (Hebrews 4:7). God promised David that a son of His would always be available to sit on **the throne as king**. David's kingdom reached its height with his son, Solomon, but finally dissipated because of David's and Solomon's many wives and concubines. Read II Samuel.

From this point of "**almost entering** God's rest" in **the promised**

**land**, Israel deteriorated into two nations known as The Nation of Israel and The Nation of Judah. Rehoboam, Solomon's son, was a harsh ruler and a raiser of taxes. Israel decided to separate The Ten Tribes from Judah (Jews) and they became known as The Nation of Israel. From that time on, King David's sons, starting with Rehoboam, only ruled Judah while Jeroboam reigned over The Ten Tribes of Israel.

The theme of **the promised seed**, from Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Israel as a nation, to Israel's division from Judah, now left Judah with the scepter of kingship until Shiloh or Christ would come. Jacob, who became Israel, made this prophecy just before his death in Genesis 49:10. The Law was also to be administered from this time by Judah until Jesus came (Genesis 49:10). The theme of God's **story** continues with Christ, **the promised seed**.

The ten remaining tribes, now known as Israel, only had **the promise** of wealth and prosperity through Jacob's son, Joseph. Joseph had two children, Ephraim and Manasseh. Ephraim became the head tribe of The Ten Tribes of Israel in prophecy (Genesis 49:22-26).

These two kingdoms, Israel (ten tribes) and Judah (two and one-half tribes), remained in **the promised land** until they were **morally corrupt**. Kings of Israel and Judah were a combination of both bad and good.

Israel, as The Ten Tribes, with their capital in Samaria and Judah with its capital in Jerusalem, ended up going into captivity. First, Israel was taken captive by Assyria and then 130 years later, Judah was taken captive by King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon. Read Kings and Chronicles. **The promised land** was lost because The Twelve Tribes of Israel refused to be **witnesses** of **The Gospel**

**to the world.** Likewise, Judah followed Israel **into** captivity for seventy years.

As recorded in The *TANAK*, the **three written witnesses** – *The Torah*, The Prophets and **The Writings** – were fulfilled. They were waiting for The Messiah, **the promised seed**, to save them from captivity and restore that **promised land** to both Israel and Judah.

## Chapter 9

### THE FOUR GENTILE KINGDOMS

**The Ten Tribes of Israel were lost in captivity. They were to be scattered in all nations. Wherever those lost tribes predominated, they had the physical blessings of the earth. Remember, this was prophesied by Jacob in Genesis 49. These were the blessings bestowed upon Jacob's son, Joseph.**

Genesis 49 also predicted Judah would remain The Law “**giver**” as well as “**keeper**” of The Scepter of Kingship until Shiloh, The Christ, **the promised seed**, came. The Bible “story” **theme** continues.

#### Captivity

With both Israel and Judah in captivity, it is Judah who carries the promise of David's **seed** to always have an heir for the throne. The Messianic Promise continues from this time on, even through the captivity. God promised His people they would enter God's **rest** or **paradise** through Christ, The Messiah (Hebrews 4:9). With the chosen people of God in captivity, The Gentile Kingdoms took control of the known world, especially those nations around The Mediterranean Sea. This is the reason the prophecy of the kingdoms (as beasts) coming out of The Mediterranean Sea refers to each kingdom.

“Prophecy” is “history in advance.” In Ephesians 1:5 God prede-

terminated or prophesied His purpose.

“World rule” shifts from **the chosen people** in The Promised Land to The Gentiles, until all **the purposes in God's plan** are fulfilled and completed.

Paul stated that Israel, as a nation, is to remain in darkness until The Time of The Gentiles is **fulfilled** or completed (Romans 11:25). Israel combined, Judah and Israel, will not be in God's **rest** until Christ comes and restores The Davidic Kingdom during **the millennium**. During this one-thousand-year Davidic reign, Christ will save Israel to be God's witness to The Gentile World. Up to this moment, The Gentile Nations have reigned in the world to fulfill God's plan. As long as the kings, who rule The Gentile Kingdom, know they reign, not by their power, but by God's power, they will keep their kingdoms. Now for some of the prophetic books about Judah's captivity. Israel is lost to the world while Judah continues The Abrahamic Covenant of **the promised seed**.

## **Daniel**

King Nebuchadnezzar took Judah into captivity and used many of The Jewish **leaders** who were intelligent and wise in his court. One of these brilliant captives was Daniel. The name “Daniel” means “God's judge.”

Nebuchadnezzar had a dream that disturbed him greatly. None of his sorcerers could interpret the dream. Eventually Daniel told the king that God is the only one who can interpret dreams accurately.

Daniel reveals the dream as a great **human image**. Read all of

Daniel 2. The head is made of **gold**. The arms and breast are of **silver**. The stomach and thighs of **brass**. The legs and ten toes are a mixture of **iron and clay**. Daniel interprets that in the days of the legs and toes, **the promised seed**, The Messiah, will come and break the legs and toes, until the entire image crumbles and is totally destroyed.

This is **the end** of The Times of The Gentiles. This great image represents The Gentile's rule until Jesus, The Christ **returns** and establishes God's **kingdom**, during **the millennium**. You will learn this was to occur at Christ's first coming.

This completes Satan's rule as the **god of this world** (II Corinthians 4:4). Paul also declares Satan's world ends with these four Gentile Kingdoms. This completes The Times of The Gentiles with The Return of Christ as King of Kings. God's **rest** is restored. Israel believes The Messiah and becomes God's **witness** of His "**testament**" to the world. The wilderness ruled by Satan is **over**. Satan is imprisoned during **the millennium** so the world cannot be deceived (Revelation 20:2).

Daniel then interprets "**the image**." He reveals that Nebuchadnezzar, The King of Babylon, is **the head of gold**. The next kingdom is Media-Persia, which is followed by The Greco-Macedonian Empire under Alexander, The Great, and the final kingdom is The Roman Empire. At the conclusion of The Roman Empire, Jesus, The Christ comes to establish God's **rest** and **kingdom**. Read Daniel 7. As you study, you will see this prophecy could have occurred at Christ's first coming.

This is world history in prophecy from about 527 B.C. till Jesus **returns**. *The Old Testament* "**focus**" is now upon Judah, The Jews, as they are responsible for The Law and **the scepter kingdom**.

## Cyrus, The Mede

About seventy years after Judah was taken captive, God heard the pleas of The Jews. Cyrus, The King of Media-Persia, had become the ruler of the second kingdom prophesied in Nebuchadnezzar's great image. This kingdom under Cyrus was of silver and still considered a precious metal. Why? Cyrus, as prophesied, issued a decree to have Jews return to Palestine, specifically to Jerusalem, to restore **the temple**.

This was done under Ezra and Nehemiah. Read those two books over again. The Jews had much difficulty, especially with The Chaldeans from Babylon who had been placed there in Nebuchadnezzar's time with Samaria becoming their main area. **The temple** needed to be restored especially in reference to the coming of Christ, The Promised Seed.

**The second temple** was completed by Herod, The Great, after over forty years of building. This **second temple**, completed by Herod, was very important to **the theme** of *The Bible* – God's "**will**." God was ready to make a significant change in *The Old Covenant* made with Israel under Moses, known as The Law of Moses. Not only was **the covenant** or "**will**" changed but also as to how The Law of God was to be kept or administered (Hebrews 7:12).

## The Last Days

Many believe that the **last days** refers to **the end of days** when Jesus is to return and establish God's **kingdom**. Even though The Apostles said they were in the **last days**, many believe they made a **biblical** mistake because they expected Christ to return, at any minute. In actuality, they did not expect Him. In fact, Peter be-



lieved it could be thousands of years away (II Peter 3:8-9).

Paul clearly reveals “**the last days.**” “**God who at sundry times and in divers manners spoke in times past unto the fathers by the prophets** [from Adam and Eve on]. **Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds**” (Hebrews 1:1-2).

When did **the last days** start? They started when Jesus was born, when He came in the flesh. Christ came to establish peace and **end** The Time of The Gentile’s “**rule.**” Always remember, this prophecy could have happened when Jesus first came. *The New Testament* means just what it says. Christ came to administer *The New Covenant*. This was a change of God’s “**will,**” which God’s “**word**” promised in Jeremiah 31:31. However, when did God mean for His “**will**” or “**covenant**” to be changed? At the time of the **last** or fourth beast of Daniel’s prophecy of the great image, The Roman Empire was initiated at Christ’s birth.

Julius Caesar, about 65-67 B.C., started **the empire as the beast** who was wounded and finally resurrected. (Read *Revelation Uncovered*).

**The promised seed**, The Christ, would destroy the last ruling Roman Empire image, which had become more diverse than the other three. Both Christ and Rome existed at the same time. Both had to exist for Christ to be able to destroy it. This truly was the **last days** as Paul stated.

The introduction of *The New Covenant* demanded a body be sacrificed so *The New Covenant* could be **written**. Blood must be spilled before a **covenant** can be in force (Hebrews 10:5, 8-15). Christ had to come as **the administrator** to rewrite **the testament**

or God's "**will**." God's "**will**" was the same but a new contract of "**conditions**" was to be introduced. This new covenant was the same one as Adam and Eve had, at liberty to choose, or have free choice.

As mediator between God and mankind, Jesus was mankind's lawyer rewriting *The New Covenant*. That is why Paul said that in these **last days** God was changing His "**will**" having Christ, **the administrator** as your **mediator**. It was time for a *New Covenant*. Paul stated that The Priesthood would also be changed when The Law was changed (Hebrews 7:12).

Israel, as God's witness, had failed in their commission. Moses had been faithful as **the administrator** in His house (Hebrews 3:1-3). Remember, The Nation of Israel was not **faithful**, so they had to be replaced by Christ.

Paul stated that both Jesus and Moses were **faithful witnesses** in their **houses**. Both were and are God's **houses** or households (Hebrews 3:2). The difference between Moses' house and Israel's was that Moses was only to testify or witness what was to come, which was a **better "testimony" (will)**. However, the **house** Jesus is building, can make His **witnesses perfect**. This new **witness** was and is to become Holy, like God and have God's Law written in their **hearts**. This was better than just doing The Letter of The Law, which was weak and could not make them perfect. God's "**will**" demands one to be "**holy**" in order to inherit God's **promise** (Ephesians 1:1-3). That is why in these **last days**, the time of *The New Covenant* or God's "**new will**" – Christ, The Administrator, spoke God's "**word**." That is why God's "**work**" is "**that ye believe on Him whom he [God] had sent**" (John 6:28-29).

Christ came as a human in the **last days** (during the fourth beast)

to confirm this “**new will**” which God was instituting. That is why Christ came into the world to **save it** and restore what was **lost** (Matthew 18:11 and I John 4:14).

This “**new will**” or covenant had to be written so the fourth beast, The Roman Empire, could be destroyed by Christ, **the promised seed**. The Time of The Gentiles could have been fulfilled if The Jews accepted Christ, but instead they rejected Him (John 1:10-11).

## CHAPTER 10

# FOUR HUNDRED YEARS

It had been four hundred years since Judah had heard a Prophet. The last book of *The TANAK*, which is *The Book of Malachi*, was God's last Prophet describing the horrible moral condition of Judah. *The Bible* "order" is different in Jewish translations but *The Book of Malachi* is still the last Prophet.

### Moral Decay

After The Jews were restored to Palestine following their seventy years of captivity, the lessons in Babylon did not improve their behavior. With all of God's merciful pleadings by all His Prophets, you find even The Priesthood, itself, had corrupted themselves. Malachi cries out in God's name: "**A son honours *his* father and a servant his master: if then I *be* a father, where is mine honour? and if I be a master, where is my fear? saith the Lord of hosts unto you, O priests, that despise my name. And ye say, Wherein have we despised thy name? Ye offer polluted bread upon mine altar; and ye say ... The table of the Lord is contemptible. If ye offer the blind for sacrifice, is it not evil? and if ye offer the lame and sick, is it not evil? offer it now unto thy governor; will he be pleased with thee, or accept thy person? saith the Lord of hosts. And now, I pray you, beseech God that he will be gracious unto us: this hath been by your means: will he regard your persons? saith the Lord of hosts"** (Malachi 1:6-9).

Just before **the promised seed** would come to heal and restore everything which was lost, Malachi made it painfully clear Judah and The Priesthood had rejected God. “**Ye have said, It is vain to serve God: and what profit is it that we have kept his ordinance, and that we have walked mournfully before the Lord of hosts? And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up; yea they that tempt God are even delivered**” (Malachi 3:14-15). Christ told the religious leaders – The Pharisees, “**Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within [hearts] full of dead men’s bones and of all uncleanness. Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity**” (Matthew 23:27-28).

The Jews, with all their pleadings to be **saved**, pledged to obey God, but eventually fell in the usual moral decay after God had helped them. As always with mankind, when life becomes prosperous and good, God is **too easily forgotten**. From time immemorial – Adam to this present time, when the good times roll in, God is little by little forgotten. A people will appear to want God and do good, but God wants a **right heart** and not merely a **human form of religion**. So it was four hundred years before Christ was born as The Son of Man and **only the few remembered God**. Malachi said it well. “**Then they that feared the Lord spake often one to another: and the Lord hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared the Lord, and that thought upon his name**” (Malachi 3:16).

## Stage Is Set

God’s last Prophet was forecasting Judah’s future. “**Behold, I**

**will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to His temple, even the messenger of the covenant [Abrahamic], whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come, saith the Lord of hosts”** (Malachi 3:1). Reread Malachi 3:1 again. There are **two messengers**. One messenger prepares the way for the **second messenger**. Who is the first messenger?

Malachi 4:5-6 reveals the first messenger is Elijah, The Prophet who comes preparing the **hearts** of the children to the fathers. The fathers are Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and so on. This Elijah, as you will see, calls for **repentance** in their hearts and not merely a religious chain of physical works. For **the promised seed** to come, God now wanted a change of heart or change of nature. Who was this Elijah?

You will prove Malachi was not the LAST PROPHET of God. Malachi, himself, prophesies who the next Prophet of God would be. Malachi 4:5-6 foretells the next Prophet of God to come is Elijah. So there it is! Malachi was not God’s last prophet. Elijah is “to come” as the last Prophet before Christ comes.

Jesus reveals Elijah was John, The Baptist and called for repentance of the heart. Read Matthew 11:11-15.

So, to those who will listen, Christ said, “**And from the days of John, the Baptist until now The Kingdom of Heaven suffereth [taken] violence, and the violent take it by force”** (Matthew 11:12).

Amazingly, all history to the time of John, The Baptist, God’s **kingdom** was taken by force. They always thought only military means would be the solution. Israel entered the **land** (which had

been promised) **by military force**. This is exactly the reason The Jews were looking for some **military** solution to be set free from the control of The Roman Empire (the last beast of Daniel 2). Their Messiah would ultimately destroy this last world Gentile Kingdom and **take over the rulership of the world**.

This Messiah, “Yeshua” or “Joshua” would deliver them from Rome. The entire movement of The **Zealots** “falsely” believed this. The Jews believe this very false solution to this day. Many Jews presently believe these present days will prove Yeshua and He will come and deliver them from their enemies. They are looking to Armageddon at Christ’s second coming. The “**unconverted**” have always believed in violence or a military success to enter God’s **kingdom**. That is why religion has caused so many wars. But never forget, “violence is not God’s way.”

The Lubavitches of today, a Jewish order, are looking for the resurrection of one of their late Rabbis, named Schneirson, who will be **the resurrected messiah**. It was the same in John, The Baptist’s time. The Jews were expecting The Messiah from The House of David to deliver them **militarily** or to take **the kingdom** by force. What did Jesus say? He said **the kingdom** under The Law suffered **violence** (literally, it was humans killing humans). The violent took **the promised land** by force. That is why Christ said **all The Prophets** prophesied God’s **kingdom** would be taken by force or violence. But now with John, The Baptist, a change was to transpire. Read Malachi 3:1 again.

This second messenger wasn’t coming to save The Jews “**militarily**,” but was to come to **the temple** to restore **righteousness**. Jesus, according to Malachi, their **last** Prophet, declared The Messiah would not come to take over the world, but as a tool to restore a **right heart** in God’s people. Since The Jews expected their

Messiah to take over God's **kingdom** by military force, as The **Zealots** had, they rejected Him.

That is why John 1:11 states, "**He came unto his own, and his own received him not.**" The Jews rejected **the promised seed** because Jesus, according to Malachi, didn't know He (Jesus) would come to restore the **true temple worship** (Malachi 3:1). The Jews were to keep The Law of Moses perfectly.

The reason John, The Baptist came was to bring The Jews to **repentance** or a change of **hearts and minds**. He preached, "**Repent ye! For the kingdom of heaven is at hand**" (Matthew 3:2-3). Now God's **kingdom** must first come; only by a change of heart and mind. The **time** of *The New Covenant* was at hand, as prophesied in Jeremiah 31:31 and Hebrews 10:16. The Jews, however, still wanted deliverance "**militarily**" from Rome.

John, The Baptist (Elijah) was to prepare the **way** (Torah) so repentance would change their hearts, but, instead, he was murdered by Herod. Herod, a false king from Edom, was placed on the throne by Rome and claimed legal right to be king because he married his brother Philip's Jewish wife. To please The Jews, he completed **the temple**, which took forty some years to build and placated them, even though Herod had no legal right to the throne.

Herod and the leading Jews had their High Priest in **the temple**. Actually, The High Priest, who was also corrupt, was chosen by The Roman Government, which was and is the last Gentile **Kingdom** which Jesus will destroy at His Second Coming. All of Judah, in that day, was waiting for their Messiah.

Jesus, **the second messenger** in Malachi 3:1, came to restore **true**



**Godly worship in the temple** which could easily be done through **repentance**. But they rejected Him as The High Priest, because the leaders feared they would lose their position and they were right. Their very careers were at stake.

## **God's Way**

The Law of Moses actually blinded Israel. Most of The Torah from Adam (the first Jesus) was not under The Law of Moses as a legal document. The majority of The Torah was a matter of having **free choice**.

Adam had to choose life or death. The Abrahamic Covenant was a promise including **the covenant of the promised land** and **the covenant of the promised seed**. These covenants were under The Melchizedek Priesthood, which was a Priesthood chosen by oath from those who were **faithful** and loved **righteousness**. Even The Noahite Covenant was based upon Melchizedek. The point is that most of The Torah was under The Priesthood of Melchizedek based upon **faith**.

**The written letter** of The Law administered by Moses did not require **faith** for "**righteousness**." This Law of Moses was expected to be followed. If not, a Levitical Priesthood was introduced for sin, by **works**. Therefore, doing The Letter of The Law became **their righteousness** (Deuteronomy 6:25). **Faith** was not an issue. This Letter of The Law never could give **life**, but only **death**. Why? Because **The Letter "kills,"** as all humans had, and have today, the weaknesses of the flesh (Romans 6:23).

This Law was **good, Holy** and **righteous** and gave a prosperous, long life, but could not give **salvation**. This Law was based upon **works**, which never changed human nature. Only God through

Christ changes man's nature. This Law was for people who kept sinning (I Timothy 1:7-10). It was given because Israel had sinned.

God answers the problem with The Law of Moses. “**Wherefore I was grieved with that generation [Israel], and said, They do always err in their *heart*, and they have not known my ways.**” Israel, as a nation, did not know God. They feared Him because of His power, but they did not know the true God and what He wanted of them (Hebrews 3:10).

All The Prophets, who did know God, continually warned Israel what God was really wanting from them. Isaiah summed it up quite clearly in Isaiah 58. Read the chapter thoroughly. Notice it wasn't the **works** of Law which God wanted. God tells Isaiah, “**Cry aloud, spare not, lift up thy voice like a trumpet, and show my people [Israel] their transgressions, and the house of Jacob their sins**” (Isaiah 58:1).

## Israel's Sin

Isaiah 58:2 declares Israel does seek God and wants to know God's **way** and delights in approaching God. The Israelites were **church-goers**. They always congregated in **the temple**. They really followed “**the works**” of The Law. What was the problem? Isaiah states, although they fasted on The Day of Atonement, their heart's desire was only to prosper and make gain. They did not care about their brothers or the stranger. They were doing **the works** of The Law but **the works** were only supposed to bring them to Christ as a schoolmaster or a tutor (Galatians 3:24).

Physical fasting did nothing to change them. Physical fasting was supposed to make them seek God in a humble manner. It was to

make them as a child, so God could then change their nature. They should have been crying out to God, “**Change me!**” Instead, they believed doing the **works** of The Law and fasting on The Day of Atonement was good enough or all that was necessary. Then God gives His answer through Isaiah. Read Isaiah 58:6-11 again.

God is not interested in **physical fasting**. God wants you to **change** so you could be striving to be more like God. God wants you to be Holy, like Him. What does it mean to be “**like God?**” It means to try to attain a form of perfection (Matthew 5:48).

God consists of **love** and He loves His creation. He wants to continually bless everyone. Christians are to do the same. Care for the needy and be honest with all people. Do righteous judgment and not get involved in any bribery. There it is. Love God and His creation and dress and keep it as He told Adam and Eve to do (Deuteronomy 6:4).

Physical fasting when doing The Letter does nothing; but being humble as a child makes you teachable and God through Christ can **heal** you and make you whole (Isaiah 58:11-12 and Matthew 13:15).

*The Old and New Testaments* have the same conditions for **salvation**. *The Torah* is based upon **faith**, the same **faith** Abraham had. The Torah is the **path** or **way** to salvation through **the promised seed**.

The Law of Moses, administered by him, could never bring **righteousness**. The Letter of The Law was to make them understand how weak they were as carnal humans (Romans 5:20). The Law of Moses was only to be a **witness** of what was to come. It was to be just a **shadow** or type (Hebrews 3:5 and 10:1).

*The Torah*, as was proven, is far more exacting than The Letter of The Law administered by Moses. *The Torah Law* was a **path** or **way** to Christ, **the promised seed**.

## A Change Of Law

Was *The Torah Law* ever **done away**? **No! Never!** *The Torah* leads Christians to Christ, **the promised seed**. **Jesus is *The Torah***.

Once Christians come to Christ, God's **mystery**, Christ will be "**in you**" (Colossians 1:27). Only then Christ will write *The Torah* in **your heart** and **mind**. This is *The New Covenant* or **testament**.

God rewrites the **conditions** of His "**testament**" by Jesus to include a people **more righteous** than Israel. Who are they? It is anyone, whether Israelite or Gentile, who **loves righteousness** and is **faithful**. That is what Peter said. The Priesthood of Melchizedek is based upon **righteousness** and **faith**. *The New Testament* is the revelation of the new "**will**" of God administered by **the promised seed, The Christ**.

God continued His **story** and it is the same **story** which was started in **the garden**. That **story** is *The Torah* or the **way** to **salvation**. The Law is never done away but now is under *The New Covenant*. Christ, as The Mediator (executor) writes The Law, not in ink or **tables of stone**, but in Christian's **hearts** by changing their **very nature** (II Corinthians 3:6-8 and Romans 2).

The entire *Bible* is God's **story** about His "**will**" administered by Christ, **the promised seed**. How does God change your very **nature** through **Christ**?

## CHAPTER 11

### THE LAST DAYS

*The Bible* “story” or “theme” does not have a separation between *The Old* and *New Testaments*. God’s “word” continues His “testament” or “will.” The physical birth of Jesus begins with the last beast of Daniel, The Roman Empire, dominating the known world. Daniel’s prophecy reveals Christ is to come during these last days of the fourth beast (Daniel 2).

Malachi, the last *Old Testament* Prophet, ties *The Old Testament* “story” with *The New Testament*. Malachi tells The Jews, including The Priesthood who were found morally corrupt, that God would send a **messenger**.

So Elijah was sent to turn the hearts of the children (The Jews) to the fathers of old, such as Noah, Abraham, Jacob and all the others from the time of Abel. Matthew 11 states that Elijah **to come** is John, The Baptist.

So you can see *The Old Testament* story is continued in *The New Testament*. **The promised seed** who will restore paradise to come. Messiah, The Christ, is born as the last world Gentile Kingdom rules the known world. Jesus was not prophesied in *The TANAK* that He would come twice. What happened?

All the prophecies in Revelation 13 and Daniel 7 declare these four beasts will come out of the great sea, The Mediterranean.

History validates this fact and **the promised seed** was about to enter the world. Jesus came just as prophesied.

## History Repeats Itself

Another mysterious theme in *The Bible* is each time God restores mankind to His **ways**, most individuals from Adam to the present **eventually** start corrupting themselves.

God, through His Prophets, keeps preaching *The Gospel* of His **kingdom**, but each time **the good seed** is planted, Satan comes along and spreads tares or weeds, corrupting The Word of God. History truly repeats itself. Humanity, when trying to become righteous by their own **efforts** or **works** will eventually **corrupt** themselves, even if they live for one thousand years (II Peter 3). Then a dramatic change occurs with Christ's birth.

## The Promised Seed

Humanity always believes they can be “**good**” or “**righteous**” on their own, as Job felt. After Adam and Eve sinned, to the time of Jesus, history keeps repeating itself. Mankind didn't know it, but they needed **the promised seed**. Only that child of Adam and Eve's lineage could **restore** paradise with The Tree of Life or **salvation**.

It is a great wonder why mankind in general doesn't understand *The Old Testament*. It is only through **the promised seed** that The Tree of Life can be restored. That is why there is no other way under heaven whereby you can be **saved**. The **Messiah** restores **the promised land** and also gives **salvation** (Acts 4:12). Jesus, The Christ is **the promised seed**! Both *The Old* and *New Testaments* proclaim it. It is **only** through Adam and Eve's heritage,

**the promised seed**, that God's **kingdom** can be restored. *The Old Testament* and *The New Testament* should really be one continuing "story" or God's "will." Without the entire complete story of this theme, you cannot understand the **complete story** in *The Bible*.

You will find that *The Old Testament* defines *The New Testament* and *The New* defines *The Old Testament*. Only in *The Old Testament*, you find Moses prophesies Christ. God told Moses that just as he was faithful in building His **house** (Israel), so a Prophet, Jesus, **the promised seed**, would build God's (Israel and now with The Gentile) **house** (Deuteronomy 18:18). Actually, this new spiritual house to be restored by Christ, includes a remnant of Israel and an innumerable number of Gentiles (Romans 11).

Notice, God will put His "word" in this Prophet's mouth. This Prophet is to be the **very "word" of God** (John 1:1). Jesus, to be The Christ, had to **live by every "word" of God**. Since Jesus was The Word of God, He only spoke and followed God's "word" (John 5:30). That is why Paul said in Hebrews 1:1-2 that in these **last days**, God speaks to everyone, not by The Prophets, but by His Son, Jesus, because Christ is The Word of God. He is that **Prophet** that God told Moses would come and speak God's "word." That is why Jesus, before going to heaven, said to His Disciples, "**All things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the Psalms, concerning me**" (Luke 24:44).

To guarantee Jesus was **the promised seed**, everything Jesus did proved He was The Christ. That is why *The Gospels* reveal Jesus' life from birth to His resurrection! That is why Christ said that if you don't believe the "words" He spoke, then believe "**the**

**works**” He did (John 14:11). Jesus lived His life according to *the scriptures, The TANAK*, to prove **the works** He did was **The Work of God**. What is God’s “**work**?”

## Work Of God

Many declare all Christians must do The Work of God. So what is God’s “**work**” and secondly, how can humans do the same “**work**” God does?

For nearly six thousand years, man has tried to do God’s “**work**” and in the end, mankind always fails. As well-meaning as a person can be or tries to be, how can a human do what only God can do? Job had to learn that lesson.

In *The Old Testament*, from Adam and Eve to this very day, individuals have tried to decide **good** and **evil** on their own. Humanity has tried to do **the work**, but each and every time they fail. Just look at today’s world and you can see the world is at the brink of world catastrophe.

You must realize **paradise** can only come through **the promised seed**. Why is it so useless to keep trying to do a “**work**” only Christ can do? Jesus, Himself will tell you what The Work of God is.



## CHAPTER 12

### GOD'S WORK

**Jesus healed a man by a pool called Bethesda. This was during The Sabbath, A High Day during A Feast of The Jews (John 5:1-2). After the man was healed, Christ told him to take up his bed and walk. The Jews became hysterical because Jesus healed the man on The Sabbath. They asked Him why He worked on The Sabbath. Now for a remarkable answer: “But Jesus answered them, My Father [God] worketh hitherto, and I work” (John 5:17).**

Many believe this answer is in respect to the traditional commandments The Jews “**made up**” in how to keep The Sabbath “Holy.” That isn’t what Christ was really saying. Read Christ’s answer again. Jesus was telling them He and God, His Father, both **work, even** on The Sabbath, as long as it is “**a good work.**” The word for “*work*” in Greek is the word “*ergozomai.*” It conveys “**hard work**” and **not** merely some human Sabbath command concerning The Sabbath. That is why Jesus, at other times when He healed on The Sabbath, referred to pulling an ox out of a ditch. That is the hard work Jesus and His Father do even on The Sabbath.

In Greek, the word “work” in Galatians is “*ergo*” or “deeds.” But in this case, Jesus gives the Greek word for “**hard work**” as “*ergozomai.*” The point is, they were asking Him about the **type of work** Christ and God do, even on The Sabbath. Whatever work they do, is, indeed only **hard work.**

Many believe the subject text of this **subject** had ended, but it had not. Read on and Jesus describes in detail **the hard work** that God and He do. Reading the complete text (John 5), Jesus first remarks that **He can do nothing of Himself**. He states He only does **the work** that He sees His Father does. **God's work** and **the work** Jesus does are exactly the same. This is God's **work** and can only be done by God and His Son, Jesus. Man cannot do this "**work**." What kind of "**work**" is this? Jesus gives the answer in John 5:21. "**For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth [gives life] them; even so the Son quickeneth [gives life] whom he will.**"

Can you grasp God's "**work**?" This is speaking about **salvation!** No human can **save** anyone. Only God who has **life** and has given His Son the ability to give life also. This is God's "**work**." God's "**work**" is **salvation**. Only God, The Father and His Son can give life.

No matter how hard the **work** or on what day, God and Christ **will save** you along with the rest of mankind. That is God's **will** or **testament** (I John 4:14). Paul restated this **work** in I Timothy 2:4-5. "**Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth. For there is one God, and one mediator [The Promised Seed] between God and men, the man Christ Jesus.**"

How clear can it get for you? Jesus continues explaining God's "**work**" which no human can do. Christ reveals that all judgment is given by The Father to Him, as The Father judges no man. Why? Because God is God and Jesus is The Son of Man. It would not be right to have God judge humans who never experienced the weakness of human nature. That is why Jesus had to be human. He is The Son of Man. He came from human flesh through His

mother Mary. That is **righteous judgment**. Because of the lessons Christians have learned in this life, they as **the saints**, will be qualified to judge the world (I Corinthians 6:2). Righteous judgment is composed of “like-kind” both the **judge** and the **jury**.

In the rest of John 5, Jesus relates to the time of world judgment and that it is God who **bears witness** that Jesus is **the righteous judge**. Then Christ ends the chapter, that it is not Jesus who will answer The Jews but Moses, because Moses was the one who wrote of Christ and **the work** which would be done by Him.

The subject continues in Chapter 6, by the feeding of the great multitude with five loaves and two fishes. Christ summarizes this feeding of the multitude with: “**Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed**” (John 6:27).

Then they asked him, “**What shall we do, that we might work the works of God?**” What is the only way humans can do God’s “**work**” is the question. Read the answer: “**This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent**” (John 6:28-29).

Nearly two chapters clearly define God’s **work**. God’s **work** is **salvation** done by and through Jesus, **The Word**. Man cannot do that work. Only Christ was sent by The Father to **save** the world (I John 4:14). Humanity’s part in God’s **work** is “**to believe**” what Jesus said. Your part is having **faith**, by believing what Christ said. You are to be a witness unto Christ (Acts 1:8).

That is why it states in Hebrews 1:1-2 that “**God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the**

**fathers by the prophets. Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds.**" In times past God had *the gospel* preached by The Prophets of old, but in these last days (of the fourth beast) God does His work through and by His Son, Jesus. Whatever Jesus says, you are to believe. That is The Work of God. Jesus is The Administrator of God's "testament" or "will." Christ is **the promised seed**.

## Christian Work

Since only God, through His Son, Jesus, can do "**the work of salvation**," then what work can Christians do? Remember God's story, *The Bible*, is God's "**testament**" or "**will**." Christ is the **administrator** of that "**will**." As Christians, you have a very important **work** in reference to God's "**will**." You are to be God's **witnesses** to His "**will**." That is exactly what Christ told His Disciples to do in Acts 1:8, just before He went to heaven. They are to be witnesses of God's **testament to the world**. That is a **commission** God has given to each and every Christian. What type of a **witness**? Jesus plainly said you are to witness **Christ "in you"** (Colossians 1:27). It is a **mystery** to everyone but **the saints** (Ephesians 1:1-5). After all, only witnesses attest to the validity of "**a will**" until "**the will**" is ready to be executed and completed. The witnesses must know **the will** is true. Being a **witness of Christ "in you"** has a greater meaning than just being like Christ. Witnessing Jesus testifies God is **true** and means exactly what God's "**will**" gives to all humans. There is no other name but Jesus who makes that decision at the time of The White Throne Judgment. That is why only Jesus has **the right to judge**. Christ paid the penalty of your sins and is the heir of **all things** (Hebrews 1:1-2). Rather than humans doing **The Work of God**, you are to show your **faithfulness** by living every **Word of God** (Matthew

4:4). By living God's "**word**," you witness God's "**will**." You disclose God's mystery by living it in the likeness of His Son, Jesus. That is your requirement for **salvation**. You are to be like Christ as one of His witnesses.

## Old And New Wine

This message of **salvation** is like **new wine**. Wine symbolizes Christ's blood which He spilled for you. The old wine in *The Old Testament* was only the blood of animals and, therefore, never could give life. Read Hebrews 10.

The Old Wine only promised a prosperous, healthy, long life as well as deliverance from all enemies. This Abrahamic promise was to take place in God's **promised land** of Palestine. It all had to do with God's "**rest**" in **The Land of Palestine**. There was no salvation involved. This was God's **kingdom** on earth, but gifted "no salvation." Read all of Genesis 15. Notice the promise: "**And he [God] said unto him, I am the Lord God, that brought thee out of Ur of the Chaldees, to give thee this land to inherit it**" (Genesis 15:7).

Why did God promise this land to Abraham? Genesis 15:6 reveals that this is Abraham's first act of **faith** when he believed God and left the Chaldeans' country. This act of faith guaranteed the land forever but still did not guarantee **salvation**.

The **new wine** was an **added promise** to the first promise. This added guarantee by God was based upon a **second** act of **faith** by Abraham. "**And the angel of the Lord called unto Abraham out of heaven the second time [an oath], And said, By myself have I sworn, saith the Lord, for because thou have done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son: That in**

**blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies. And in thy seed shall all the nations [world] of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed my voice [God's word]" (Genesis 22:15-18).**

This is a **second covenant** or contract God gave to Abraham. **The first** is the land, where God's **kingdom** will physically be, but **the second promise** included **salvation of the world**. Wow!

**The Work of God** is **the salvation of the world** as a promise to Abraham. That is God's "**work**" done by and through His Son, Jesus, The Christ. Christ was **the promised seed** in Genesis 3:15.

## CHAPTER 13

### ONLY ONE TESTAMENT

**You can never understand *The New Testament* without knowing or having a reasonable understanding of *The Old Testament*. Neither can you understand *The Old Testament* without *The New Testament*. Why this confusion? Some Christians do not believe in *The Old Testament*. Others, like those in Jewish religions, reject *The New Testament*. Why the confusion, what is the reason? You are about to find out.**

#### One Testament

By dividing *The Bible* into two books, known as *Old* and *New Testaments*, you are believing in two different “wills” or “testaments.”

When The Disciples asked Jesus to teach them to pray, He gave them what is known as The Lord’s Prayer (Matthew 6). What did Christ tell His Disciples (**witnesses**) to pray for? First he said to pray only to God, The Father. “**Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name.**” Immediately following, He said, “**Thy Kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth.**” Read Matthew 6.

Christians are to pray for God’s **will** or God’s **testament** to come to the earth. This refers to the second coming of Christ where He establishes God’s **kingdom** on earth. There cannot be two “wills” of God – only **one**. You must prove this is **biblically** true. When studying *The Bible* as **one book with “one testament”** it will open

up your **biblical understanding** and **spiritual growth**.

## Before The New Testament

There was a four-hundred-year lapse of time between *The Old* and *New Testaments*. In fact, *The New Testament* took another one hundred years to be written. It would only be natural to think these two testaments are **two books**. However, they are only **one book with one continuing testament**.

Prior to the writing of *The New Testament*, *The Old Testament* was only known as *the scriptures*. They were known as *the scriptures* because the other scriptures were not written as yet. The Apostle Peter said, “**As also in all his epistles [letters] speaking in them of these things, in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction**” (II Peter 3:16).

Peter knew Paul's letters were *scripture*. Read the book, *The Original Bible*, for details. The point is, Peter knew what Christ, His Apostles and scribes were writing was indeed *scripture*. *The Old* and *New Testament* are truly one book or scripture. They, together, are The Word of God. The Prophets of old, before *The New Testament*, had God's Word. Then Jesus and His Apostles, with their scribes, spoke God's “**word**.” There are not two parts to God's book but one complete book – God's **total “will” or “testament”** as revealed by Christ and His Apostles.

## New And Old Covenant

The entire *Bible* as God's “testament” or “**will**” can be proven. God's “**will**” is a mystery reserved for the **faithful** and His **saints**



(Ephesians 1:9). God's "**will**" has a "**work**" that only God and His Son, Jesus can do. Salvation can only come from God through His Son, **the promised seed**. How does God produce **salvation**?

The Apostle Paul reveals **salvation** only comes through Christ. "**For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming**" (I Corinthians 15:22-23).

Paul tells you at the end, when Jesus puts down all of **God's enemies, including death**, then He turns all control back to God, The Father to be "**all and in all**" (I Corinthians 15:24-28). That is exactly what you read earlier, which is God's "**will**" or "**testament**." This is God's purpose to be "**all and in all**." God's entire creation will be of God and ruled by His Royal family.

God has given you this inheritance from His "**testament**" or "**will**" by His own counsel or intentions (Ephesians 1:11). It is God's "**will**" to give you **salvation**. This is what God predestined. That is The **Work of God**. When Jesus destroys the enemy, then you will be **Holy** like God or God will be "**all and in all**." What is the outcome of this **inheritance** (grace, a gift)? Read Ephesians 1:10. "**That in the dispensation [God's estate] of the fullness [completion] of times he might gather together in one [God is "all in all"] all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in him.**"

This is the "**testament**" or "**will**" of God. This is the **final inheritance**. God intends to **save the whole world** (I Timothy 2:4). To get the full story, read the book *The White Throne Judgment*.

There you have it. God's "**testament**" or "**will**" is the same al-

ways, whether in *The Old* or *New Testament*. Since both books of *The Bible* have **only one** “will,” what is the difference between these two parts of *scripture*? Paul clearly tells you the difference. “**Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me) to do thy will [testament], O God. Above when he said, Sacrifice and offering and burnt offerings and offering for sin thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure therein; which are offered by the Law; Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy will, O God. He taketh away the first, that he may establish the second**” (Hebrews 10:7-9).

Plainly, Jesus intends to take away “the **old**” and establish “the **new**,” not to *The Old Covenant* of The Letter of The Law but *The New Covenant*, “the **spirit**” of The Law (II Corinthians 3:1-6). God’s “will” or “**testament**” is one and the same, whether in *The Old Testament* or *The New Testament*. There is really **one book or one testament** of God’s “will” whether new or old. What is the difference?

## Old Covenant

Both books of *The Bible* are **one testament** or God’s “will,” which is “**salvation**.” What was the purpose of *The Old Covenant*? “*The Torah*” in English means “The Law.” The “**Torah**” has much greater meaning than the English word “law.” “Law” conveys “the idea of what is permitted to do by society or not.” Most call “**breaking the law**” a crime. “Torah” is “a **way** or a **path** to life.” “*The Torah*” is “a process” and “not merely limited to the many **do**’s and **don**’ts.” “The Torah” is “a **teaching**” or “a **learning** to have a blissful **life** in this world” and “**eternity** in the world to come or God’s **kingdom**.”

In *The New Testament*, the Greek word “*nomos*” means the same

thing as “*The Torah*” in Hebrew. The definition of “*nomos*” is “to parcel out food to animals as prescriptive” or “how to have a whole healthy **life**.” It is synonymous with Torah. In a later chapter you will discover why it is related to food for animals. Also, *The Torah* has **many covenants or contracts** made by God.

Five of God’s Covenants in The Torah are as follows:

- 1 Covenant of “**choice**” between Adam, Eve and God in choosing The Tree of Life or The Tree of Good and Evil. No works were required by Adam and Eve. God had done all the work of creating His **rest** or His **kingdom**. God has created His house for His family. Everything in it was very good (Genesis 1:31). When Adam and Eve sinned, they, because of lack of faith in The Father, broke God’s covenant and The Tree of Life or “paradise” was lost.
- 2 The second covenant by God was a curse or penalty for breaking the first contract “of free choice.” Adam, because Eve led him to disobey God, was now going to have to survive on his own and be responsible over his wife Eve and the family. Eve could not be trusted, so now her husband was her master. Now she would desire her husband and have pain in childbirth, depicting the future crucifixion of Christ who would save her.

However, Adam and Eve and their progeny would be restored to The Tree of Life and God’s **rest** or **kingdom** through their **promised seed**, The Christ.

Satan, as God’s **adversary** would be Adam and Eve’s enemy until **the promised seed**, The Christ destroyed him. Satan, from then

on, would be a snake and the lowest in the animal kingdom.

- 3 What is known as The Noahite Covenant, by God, included the entire world or all children born from Noah and his family. This, eventually, as families grew into nations, included Gentiles and Israel. God signed this contract with the appearance of the rainbow after the flood. This “**world covenant**” promised no more flood and only a prosperous life, if kept. Murder by humans brought immediate justice by the family of the murdered victim. Also blood was not to be eaten, as God’s “**word**” explained human life is in the blood. Much of The Noahite Covenant had to do with the church’s decision not requiring Gentiles to be circumcised nor legally required to keep The Law (Acts 15).
  
- 4 This **covenant** of God was made with one person. It is known as The Abrahamic Covenant. It is not based upon The Letter or “**works**” of The Law. This contract in The Torah was conditional, based upon **faith** or **trust** in God for **righteousness**. Its Priesthood was not of “**the works**” or Letter of The Law but an unconditional promise because of faith. This is exactly as Adam and Eve’s contract which was based upon faith by free choice.

This **covenant** actually had **two promises**. One has to do with the **land** and the other with **salvation**. This **first promise** was guaranteed because Abraham, in **faith**, left his home in Ur of The Chaldees or Babylon, and went by **faith** to the **promised land**, looking **forward** in **faith** for **salvation** (Genesis 15:6-7).

This second act of **faith** which promised **salvation** through Abraham’s **seed**, was his act of offering Isaac as a **sacrifice** (Genesis 22:15-18).

- 5 God made the fifth covenant with Israel because they had sinned. It **was added** to The Torah as a legal document in a court of Law. Notice what Moses said to Israel about this personal, **added covenant**. “**The Lord made not this covenant with our fathers, but with us, even us [Israel], who are all of us here alive this day**” (Deuteronomy 5:3).

This contract or covenant by God was only made with The Nation of Israel having Moses as “**the administrator**.” That is why this contract was called **The Law of Moses**. This legal Law had to be kept perfectly. If they broke **one part** they were guilty of breaking the **entire law** (James 2:10). By not keeping any part, they **frauded** the **covenant** God made with Israel. Why was this covenant different than the **contract** made with Adam and Eve, Noah, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and so on? This **covenant** was different because Israel had **sinned** or **transgressed** by building the **golden calf** and then worshipping it.

Read Galatians 3:19, “**Wherefore then serveth the Law? It was added because of transgressions [sin] till the seed [Christ] should come to whom the promise [Genesis 22] was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator.**” This is the account. “**These words the Lord spoke unto all your assembly in the mount out of the midst of the fire, of the cloud, and of the thick darkness, with a great voice: and he added no more. And he wrote them in two tables of stone [Ten Commandments] and delivered them unto me**” (Deuteronomy 5:22).

Israel sinned before they even received the two tables (tablets) when God spoke The Ten Commandments from Mount Sinai (Acts 7:38). Now, because they sinned, God **added** The Law of Moses which had to be kept “perfectly” or they were guilty of **sin**. This

**covenant** with Israel became known as *The Old Covenant*; and when God made this **contract** with Israel, **it was only to last until Christ came. This is the old wine based upon their sinful nature.** This **covenant** was made because they had a **wrong heart** (Deuteronomy 5:29). Even after they went through **the wilderness**, they could not enter **God's rest**, which was **the land**, because of a **wrong heart**. Paul said in Hebrews 3:9-11, "**Wherefore, I was grieved with that generation, and said, they do always err in their heart; and they have not known my ways.**"

Israel had a **wrong heart** and didn't even know what the true God wanted. Because of this, they lost **the promises** which were made with **the fathers** and even **lost the right** to have **free choice** as God had given them from the time of Adam and Eve to Jacob. All **covenants** previously given to mankind had the option of **free choice** and were based upon **faith** through **The Order of The Priesthood of Melchizedek.**

Now, a new Priesthood had to be instituted based upon **human works** to be kept **perfectly**. Israel had to do "**the work.**" This was "**the added law**" to The Torah as the **fifth covenant** in **The Law or Torah**. This Priesthood was for carnal people, as a **carnal commandment**, based upon people with a **wrong heart** because of the weakness of the **flesh** (human beings) to sin (Hebrews 7:16-19 and I Timothy 1:7-10). This, **biblically**, is known as *The Old Covenant* and was based upon The Law of Moses and not The Law of Christ. Remember, the word "**carnal**" in Greek is "**animal-like**" or "**as a beast.**"

This *Old Covenant* had physical blessings promising a long earthly life in the **promised land**, but gave no gift of **salvation**. This was The Abrahamic "promise" only in regard to the **land** but never included **eternal life** in paradise. This was **all** *The Old Covenant*

**promised.** If one point of **The Law** under Moses was broken, they were guilty of all and received the **curses** listed in Deuteronomy 30-33.

This *Old Covenant* caused the split between The Pharisees and Sadducees. The Sadducees did not believe in **the resurrection**, because they knew *The Old Covenant* only applied to the **land** and a long, prosperous human existence, but without the gift of **salvation**. On the other hand, The Pharisees did believe in **a resurrection**. This *Old Covenant* also caused Israel to believe in a Messiah who would come and restore Israel in **the promised land** by military force. When Jesus came, they did not expect Him to sacrifice His life for the forgiveness of sins.

All of Judah was waiting and expecting their Messiah to take The Roman Empire by force and be able to give freedom to The Jews. To this very day most Jews are still waiting for The Messiah to come “**militarily**.” That is why they do not accept Jesus as The Messiah. They believe The Messiah, when He does come, will take over the world **by military force**.

Note: This fifth covenant in The Torah was called *The Old Covenant* when in reality it is **the fifth covenant** in The Torah called The Law of Moses. In *The Book of Hebrews*, this *Old Covenant* with Israel was only to last until Jesus came. *The Old Covenant* in Hebrews 8:13 states this *Old Covenant* is to vanish away and be replaced by Christ when He came in the flesh.

## **New Covenant**

Many believe with the abolishment of *The Old Covenant*, which finally occurred at the destruction of **the temple** in 70 A.D., that God’s Law was no longer **in force**. Is that true? If *The Old Cov-*

*enant* ceases, does The Law also vanish? *The New Covenant* answers this question. What is *The New Covenant*? In Hebrews 10:9, 16-17, Paul defines *The New Covenant* or contract. “**Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy will** [testament], **O God. He taketh away the first** [*Old Covenant*], **that he may establish the second** [*New Covenant*]” (Hebrews 10:9).

What is *The New Covenant*? “**This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them. And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more**” (Hebrews 10:16-17).

The Law isn't done away; it is now written into one's heart and mind. This is the **change of nature** which is necessary to become **Holy like God**. This *New Covenant* is taken right out of Jeremiah, The Prophet's prophecy (Jeremiah 31:31).

It isn't God's Law which is done away, but the “**works**” which demanded they be kept perfectly. That is why Paul in Galatians said Christ removed the **curse** of The Law because in *The New Covenant*, God does not remember **your sins** anymore. How plain!

*The New Covenant* is a **spiritual covenant** with God and Christ, **saving everyone from themselves**. It is God and His Son, Jesus who do the **work**. Just as the work which was done in The Garden of Eden. God will do the **work** through Christ, the executor or mediator of God's “**will**.” With the end of *The Old Covenant*, man's “work” or “effort” **ceased**. God once again does **the work**.

There is only **one testament**, not two or three or more. God does not change His “**will**” but God has changed His **covenants** or **contracts** according to the varying conditions caused by the people. Every person who has an **estate** to leave to his **heirs** may change



his **will** according to how the **heirs may behave**. The **covenants change but not the estate** or what is left to the **heirs**.

God's **estate** or **dispensation is salvation by grace** in paradise, The Garden of Eden. That is why Christ came to **restore what was lost** (Matthew 18:11).

There is only "**one will**" but **many covenants**.

## CHAPTER 14

### ONE STORY

Whether you are reading *The Old Testament* or *The New Testament*, both books have proven to have only “one testament” or “will.” That “one testament” is to restore humanity to paradise so everyone can have eternal life. To call *The Old and New Testaments* by those two names is an error since there is only “one testament” combining both books.

Now you are ready to continue God’s story and find there is but **one story**. The so-called *New and Old Testaments* are combined as “one book” with “one continuing story.”

#### **Bible Written As Two Books**

Why has *The Bible*, God’s story, been written as two separate books? Jesus gives you the answer in a rather difficult scripture to understand. Referring to John, The Baptist as Elijah to come, Jesus said in Matthew 11:12, “**And from the days of John, The Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.**”

Why did Christ say this when referring to John, The Baptist? For hundreds of years this verse by Jesus has caused people to wonder. The truth is, you will find it means exactly what it states. This **text** by Jesus is one of the most **profound prophecies** in the gospels. Christ’s **purpose** in making such a statement is to describe who

John, The Baptist was and why he had to come. John was fulfilling prophecy. This prophecy was of **worldwide** significance and affects all of human existence to this **very day**. In Matthew 11:7 when the multitude listened to Christ, "**Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind.**"

Later you will see Jesus was saying John is not a **revolutionary** as were The **Zealots**. For over four hundred years, from the last *Old Testament* Prophet, Malachi, The Jews were trying to take back **the kingdom** by force. The entire history of The Maccabees was revolutionary. In 167 B.C., Antiochus Epiphanes put the abomination of desolation in **the temple**. Finally The Maccabees restored **the temple** and took control of Judah, which was called The Feast of Lights. The Feast of Dedication in the winter celebrates this victory. Then in 67 B.C. Julius Caesar and The Roman Empire took control again by military force. That is why The Jews came to John, The Baptist, to see if he, as a Zealot, would help them restore **the kingdom** by force. Again Jesus remarked, "**But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they that wear soft clothing are in kings' houses. But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and more than a prophet**" (Matthew 11:8-9).

Then Christ reveals John's commission from God. "**For this is he, of whom it is written [prophecy], Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare the way before thee**" (Matthew 11:10). Jesus summarizes His previous remarks with the main text: "**From the days of John, The Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent [Zealots] take it by force**" (Matthew 11:12). There it is. Jesus quoted from Malachi and the state of **Judah** (Israel had gone into captivity) during Malachi's time until John, The Baptist. How

clear the text. From Malachi's day, the history is all about violence in order to restore God's **kingdom**. For four hundred years, starting with Malachi, The Prophet until John, The Baptist, Judah was in a state of terror and violence. This was prophecy which became history from Antiochus Epiphanes to The Maccabees Revolution till Rome took Judah captive.

Christ revealed how from Malachi until **the fourth beast** in Daniel 7, (which is Rome) would always experience **violence** or **war** to attempt to control God's **kingdom**.

Then Jesus declares, "**For all the Prophets and the Law [Torah] prophesied until John**" (Matthew 11:13). Christ's conclusion tells who John, The Baptist was in Matthew 11:14, "**And if ye will receive it, this is Elias [Elijah] which is to come.**" What a prophecy! This is earth shaking, and includes the **entire world**. God's **kingdom**, from the beginning of God's **rest**, has been **violent** or always taken by force or **militarily**. Now a change is about to occur with **John's message** and Christ states, "**He that hath ears to hear, let him hear** (Matthew 11:15). That **message** which proves *The Old and New Testaments* are really **one story** about God's theme, which is **God's "testament"** or **God's "will"** administered by Christ, **the promised seed**.

## Two Messengers

*The Book of Malachi* is the last Prophet in *The Old Testament*. No other Prophet spoke again until John, The Baptist, who was "**Elijah to come**" to prepare the **way** for Jesus, when He came on the scene. This prophecy was clearly told by Malachi over four hundred years before John and Christ came. There is no historical break between Malachi and *The New Testament Gospels*. Malachi 3:1 reveals two messengers: "**Behold, I will send my messenger,**

**and he shall prepare the way before me: and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come, said the Lord of hosts."**

There are two messengers prophesied by Malachi. One was to prepare the **way** and the second messenger reveals Christ's **first coming**. This was to be Christ's only coming. If The Jews would have accepted their Messiah, God's **kingdom** would have come. *The Gospel of Mark* is considered to be the oldest or first of *The Four Gospels* written. Notice how Mark begins: "**The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God; As it is written [Malachi 3:1] in the prophets, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee**" (Mark 1:1-2).

Jesus said this messenger, John, The Baptist was Elijah; and notice what Malachi 4:5-6 reveals: "**Behold I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord. And he [Elijah] shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse.**" This is exactly what Luke 1:17 stated John, The Baptist would do. He made the **path** straight to Christ. What did John say? In Matthew 3:8, he told the people, especially The Pharisees and The Sadducees, to bring forth **fruit for repentance**. No military violence or force but **repentance**. If they did not accept Christ, then God would curse the earth (Malachi 4).

It becomes obviously clear, *The Book of Mark* should follow Malachi as **one story** instead of **two separate scriptures**.

John, The Baptist was the next Prophet after Malachi to continue

God's **story**. *The Book of Malachi* and *The Book of Mark* are **one continuing book** with **one continual story**.

But the author, God, decided to have *The Books of Malachi* and *Mark* written almost **four hundred** years apart. They had to wait 430 years, just like The Abrahamic Promise for The Amorite's sins (violence) which had to be fulfilled. Judah was a violent and corrupt nation with its zealots.

## Christ's First Coming

Many have difficulty understanding *The Old Testament* prophesied that there would be **two comings** for The Messiah. Why?

His first coming was to do away with God's **kingdom** being taken **militarily** or by **violence** (Isaiah 40:1-2). Jesus came the **first time** to bring **peace** to the **world**. Also Isaiah declares that God **no longer would remember their sins**. God had pardoned them. These **two promises** by God is why Jesus came the first time. Read what the angel told Joseph about marrying Mary: "**And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shall call his name Jesus: for he shall save his people from their sin**" (Matthew 1:21).

Then Luke records what the heavenly host said. "**Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men**" (Luke 2:14). *The Old and New Testament* both **reveal the purpose** of Christ's **first coming** to the earth. Jesus came to forgive **sin** and also bring **world peace**. **Military wars** were to be done away with, if only they accepted Jesus, The Christ.

## The Need Of A Second Coming

John 1:11-12 declares that Jesus came to His own, The Jews, and

they knew Him not. But those who did, had their sins forgiven, as prophesied and became God's Sons.

Malachi also said the same. “**Behold, I will send you Elijah [John, The Baptist] the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord. And he [John] shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers lest, I come and smite the earth with a curse**” (Malachi 4:5-6).

Christ's first coming was to forgive sin and bring **peace** to the earth. In Isaiah 40:1-2, God's **kingdom**, from this point on, was to give peace to the **world** with no more **warfare** for Judah. They didn't know it but **world peace** could have occurred at Christ's first coming.

The Jews and the hierarchy especially, feared they would lose their lucrative positions. Herod, The King, knew he was a **fraud** for he was an Edomite and not of **the seed** of David. This is why he killed all the children under two years of age at the time Christ was born. If Judah had accepted Christ as King, Rome would have fallen at that very time.

Finally The Jewish hierarchy (The High Priest, Pharisees and The Sadducees) incited The Jews to have Rome crucify Jesus. Back to Malachi.

## **The Curse**

Malachi, whose name in Hebrew means “The Messenger,” reveals the state of Judah's anticipation when Jesus was **born**. In Malachi 3:1 the **second messenger, Christ**, when He suddenly comes to His **temple**, even the **messenger** of the **covenant**, who Judah de-

lights in, will be expecting The **Messiah in earnest**. When Jesus did come, all of Judah were always looking for Him.

Yet when Jesus came to His own, they (**Judah**) **knew him not** (John 1:11). Why did The Jews who delighted in The Messiah's "**coming**" **reject** Him? John answers the question. "**For the law** [Torah] **was given by Moses, but grace** [forgiveness] **and truth came by Jesus Christ**" (John 1:17). This is precisely what Jesus warned about, what all The **Prophets** and The **Law prophesied till John**. What did The Law given by Moses and The **Prophets** say? All The Law and The Prophets prophesied **The Kingdom of God** would be taken by force or militarily. With John preparing Christ's way, **the kingdom** was to come by peaceful measures. That is why Jesus came the first time, to bring **world peace** with the forgiveness of **sin**.

Judah rejected John, The Baptist and Herod (the false king) beheaded him and The Jewish hierarchy had Rome, **the fourth beast, crucify** Jesus. Now, to proceed to what Malachi prophesied would happen.

The ending verse in Malachi reveals John, The Baptist's commission; and if the people didn't accept it, something **dreadful** would occur (Malachi 4:6). Malachi relates, "Because Judah and Rome, **the fourth beast**, rejected Christ, a **curse** from that time **forward** would be placed on the **world**."

In Jesus' end-time prophecy to His Disciples, He relates future **world events** till He comes the second time at "**the end of times**" (Matthew 24:1-31). Notice that in Matthew 24:6-8, Jesus said there would be nothing but **wars, kingdom against kingdom, pestilences, famines** and so on and these were **just the beginning of sorrows**. Jesus, The Christ warns that because the world



rejected Him (especially His own), the **world would be cursed**. Malachi 4:6 says the same.

The world (Rome) and especially His own, Judah, rejected The **Messiah**; therefore, the **world** would be **cursed** until His return. Religion has caused more wars because **The Kingdom of God** would **continue** to be taken by **force or violence** (militarily). The **world rejected God's peace** by His Son, Jesus. Notice, the **final curse**.

God's final curse would come to be known as "**the great tribulation**." "**For then shall be great tribulation** [war], **such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be**" (Matthew 24:21). This is when sin prevails in the world and there is nothing but violence. Violence is "**the fullness**" or result of sin. Truly a time of great tribulation. It is a time like the days of Noah when every thought was evil.

Then immediately after the **great tribulation** (final sorrow), Christ will come. Malachi concludes the **curse** and its result before Jesus once again brings **world peace**. Malachi 3:16-18 distinguishes between those who had rejected Christ at His first coming until the end time when those who have **faith** in Christ are changed at Jesus' second coming. Faithful Christians are called God's **jewels**. These relate to **The Bride of Christ** who meet Jesus in the clouds. Then what happens? Remember, this is at Christ's **second coming** and not The White Throne Judgment as some believe.

The **final curse**, because Christ was rejected at His first coming, is unleashed. Because the children did not return to the **fathers** (Abel, Noah and Abraham) they will receive God's wrath on The Day of The Lord. "**For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn**

**as an oven, and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch”** (Malachi 4:1). Then the rest of Malachi 4:2-4 states the righteous will **have healing** in their wings and **the saved** will grow up in **the kingdom, the millennium**, when God’s **kingdom** will have **peace** (Isaiah 2). The wicked will be ashes under their feet. This is the result of when Christ, **the saints** and God’s angels will end **The Battle of Armageddon** as written in *The Book of Revelation*. This is not The White Throne Judgment, as some think, because there will be **no ashes** after **the judgment**. The New Heaven and Earth are both **spiritual**. No humans will exist anymore. No ashes to walk over.

At The White Throne Judgment, there will be no humans. There will be a **new heaven** and **new earth** after The White Throne Judgment. Read Revelation 20, 21 and 22. God will make **all things new**. When God makes a new heaven and new earth, there will be no earth to have ashes. These ashes are those killed at Armageddon.

The Day of The Lord will **be the end of human rule** and God, with Christ and everyone in heaven, on the earth and under the earth will become **Holy** like God. God’s “**will**” or “**testament**” will be **executed** and Jesus will turn everything **back** to God so He can be “**all and in all**” (I Corinthians 15:1-29). This is **the purpose** of God’s “**will**,” which is to be “**all and in all**.”

*Malachi* and *The New Testament* are truly **one continuing story** with **one testament** with Jesus, The Christ as The Executor. Now **the story** continues with Christ’s commission by God as The One to bring **peace** and the forgiveness of **sin** to all the **world**.

## CHAPTER 15

# WHAT IS THE GOSPEL

**The word “gospel” in the Greek merely means “Good News.” Most people believe “the gospel” is The Good News of God’s “kingdom.”**

Christ came to preach The Gospel of The Kingdom. After John, The Baptist (Elijah) was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee preaching The Gospel or **Good News** of God’s **kingdom**. Most Christians will say, “See The Gospel is God’s **kingdom**.” The real question should be “**what**” is God’s **kingdom** (Mark 1:14)? You will find it is even much more than you could have imagined.

### God’s Kingdom

When Christ began to preach The Gospel of God’s “**kingdom**” he said, “**The time is fulfilled, and The Kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe The Gospel**” (Mark 1:14-15). This is an astounding remark by Christ. All of Judah was waiting for The Messiah to come and establish God’s **kingdom**. But how? By **force**, like all The Zealots in the past. This is confirmed in the last chapter of Malachi. **Judah** was waiting for their **Messiah** to defeat The Roman Empire **by force**. Daniel 2 declares it plainly. Christ came **the first time** to give **forgiveness of sin** and bring **world peace**. What does The Gospel of The **Kingdom of God mean**? What did Jesus say?

The first revelation by Christ is that He fulfilled all of which *The Old Testament* prophesied. What actually was fulfilled was **the**

**prophecy** about Jesus (Luke 24:44). All the prophecies about Jesus in The Law and The Prophets have already happened and the **kingdom** was **at hand** or **ready** to take place in Christ's time. Wow! "**The kingdom**" according to Jesus was at hand!

Malachi 4:6 reveals if Judah does not respond to Elijah stating the children must return to The Fathers, God will strike the earth with a curse. What is this curse? In Hebrew the word is "cherem" and it is the only place "cherem" is used for the English word "curse." In Hebrew it means "taking a holy thing belonging to God and destroying it." How does God destroy the world? Malachi 4:1 answers the question in this way: "**For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch.**"

This is God's curse at Armageddon, when Jesus with angels and saints put an end to all wars once and for all.

Christ's first coming in the flesh was to bring world peace if only Judah and Rome would have accepted and believed Jesus was The Christ. They rejected Him so the curse went into effect.

Christ would only have come once and if The Jews would have accepted Jesus, then **the curse** would have already happened.

The last part of *The Gospel* of God's "**kingdom**" was for them to **repent** and believe *The Gospel*. Most think *the gospel* is God's **kingdom**, just like any government in the **world**. Too many think of God's **kingdom** as a **physical realm** and this is just what The Jews thought also. If that is **true**, then why would Christ say, "to **repent** and **believe the gospel**?" The **True Gospel** of God's

**kingdom** is explained that you should **repent** and **believe** or have **faith** in “*the gospel*.”

If the **kingdom** is physical, just as most world’s governments, what is there to **believe**? All Jesus had to do was take control of Rome and rule the world. You would require **no faith** or belief or no logical reason to repent. *The Gospel* or **Good News** of God’s **kingdom** is much, much more than a physical government. God reveals it to you as *The True Gospel* of God’s “**kingdom**.”

### **Kingdom Not By Observation**

Jesus, in comparing what The Kingdom of God is like, said, “**Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God? Or with what comparison shall we compare it**” (Mark 4:30)?

He then answers His own question. “**It is like a grain of mustard seed, which, when it is sown in the earth, is less than all the seeds that be in the earth. But when it is sown, it growth up, and becometh greater than all herbs, and shooteth out great branches; so that the fowls of the air may lodge under the shadow of it**” (Mark 4:31-32).

This certainly doesn’t sound like a **military** takeover but a **process** over a long period of time. Jesus is telling you rather than **military force** to establish God’s **kingdom**, The **Gospel** of The Kingdom evolves as a **growing entity**. That is why He used the example of a **mustard seed**. That is what **the millennium** is all about. God’s **kingdom** takes thousands of years to happen. Now just what is God’s **kingdom**? The Pharisees asked Jesus when **the kingdom** would come. It was spelled out very clearly when Christ said they should not expect Him to come by force. “**The Kingdom of God cometh not by observation: Neither shall**

**they say, Lo here! Or Lo there! For, behold, the Kingdom of God is within you”** (Luke 17:20-21).

This passage couldn't be any clearer. God's kingdom is an internal matter not an external physical government.

## **Human Nature**

You need to ask yourself in what way is God's **kingdom** “in you.” Something must happen to a human being to make an individual **be part of The Kingdom of God.**

What is it about human beings that keeps them out of **the kingdom**? Always remember, this is not a physical matter like a physical government, but has to do with your **internal nature.**

Romans 6:23 reveals “**the wages of sin is death.**” Sin causes death because The Law tells you what sin is. When you are no longer human but “**a spirit,**” then **death is swallowed up in victory** (I Corinthians 15:53-56). It is your human body, which always looks out for itself and is constantly aware of survival, which causes you to sin. That is why Paul pleaded to God to deliver him from his own human body, which causes a person to sin and die (Romans 7:24-25). Clearly, Paul states Christ is the answer to show you how to stop sinning.

What is wrong with man's **human nature**? Solomon, after living his human existence, declares “**it is vanity**” [nothing]; “**all is vanity**” [all for nothing]. He is under inspiration and is defining what **human nature is.** “**I said in mine heart concerning the estate of the sons of men, that God might manifest them, and that they [humanity] might see that they themselves are beasts**” (Ecclesiastes 3:18).

Solomon, having God's wisdom, related that the **sons of man** are **beasts**. As humans you are of the **animal kingdom**. Both animals and humans were created on the **sixth** day of **creation** (Genesis 1:24-31).

Christ was called The **Son of Man** just as Solomon said in Ecclesiastes 3:18. The Greek word for "man" is "*anthropos*" or "the animal kingdom." God knew long before the scientists understood that humans are from the animal kingdom. In fact, humans are **beasts** or very **carnal**. Humans devour flesh like any **animal** in order to survive. Beasts are **wild** like a lion, bear or leopard.

Humans are not born with the characteristics of a sheep (not being carnivorous). Humans fight for survival like any wild beast. That is why those who do not **repent** are called **carnal** (I Corinthians 3:1).

For God's **kingdom** to be "in you," you must no longer be **beasts**. That is why John, The Baptist (as Elijah) prepared **the way** for Christ. He was calling Judah to repentance.

## **Pagan Religions**

Whether you look at the history of The Egyptians, Summerians, Aztecs, Babylonians or any other, you find similarities of **traditions** or **belief** being practiced. Most had priest-kings like Israel's Melchizedek or The Levitical Priesthood. The world has always believed in sacrifices of animals, children and adults. Sacrifices have always plagued most world's religious systems.

All nations sought to please their "little gods" by sacrifice. How did this come about? If various cultures **worshipped their own gods**, why did they all accept the practice of sacrifices as an ap-

peasement for sin? There must have been **a common origin**.

Sacrifice began with Cain and Abel. Cain murdered Abel and was sent wandering in **the wilderness** without God. From Cain the nations with their human imagination adopted "**poly gods**." Pagans believed in idols because they knew God's spirit created everything. Therefore, God's spirit being in everything, they worshipped the creation rather than the creator. However, as confused as the world became in their religious beliefs, the practice of sacrifice and other Godly truths were preserved. Many continued the belief of a world flood when one man was left with his family to preserve all future generations. Many other truths were intertwined in their **traditions** and **religions**. The Aztecs waited for Quatzequotel, a white man, to be their savior. Synergistic religious belief prevailed worldwide but mixed according to the culture and their reasonings along with their behavior or traditions. Many gods were created. That is why Romans 1:18 reveals pagans held the truth in "**unrighteousness**."

## **The True God**

God despises idolatry or the worship of false gods who did not create anything as **The One True God** did. That is why so many scriptures relate to only "God Almighty created the universe." God hates idolatry because it misleads humanity from God's very purpose of making you Holy and perfect like Him so you can receive **the gift of salvation**.

Colossians 3:5 states, "**Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence and covetousness, which is idolatry.**"

To covet another "**god**" besides **the true** God who created the uni-



verse is idolatry. God hates idolatry because it misleads you from the real God and all His spiritual blessings (Ephesians 1:3).

In spite of a plethora of world religions which retained some of God's truth, idolatry only causes confusion and only brings a great deal of doubt about **the truth**. Humans always talk "**truth**" and end up with a religious system of lies and half-truths which ends in unrighteousness.

Since many religions believe in sacrifice, including human sacrifice, why did God allow any sacrifice for sin?

Hebrews 10:6 states God has **no pleasure** in offerings and sacrifices for sin. Why not? Hebrews 10:4 reveals animal sacrifices, like bulls and goats, cannot take away sin.

One can do all these human works or deeds just as the keeping of man-made days like Easter, Halloween and so on, or God's Holy Days depicting His **plan** which can never stop humans from sinning. God's purpose is to **destroy sin**. Hebrews 10:10 reveals only the sacrifice of Jesus as the **one body** which God prepared does take away sin. Animal sacrifices had a completely different purpose.

Hebrews 10:1 states the demands of The Law with the sacrifices are only **shadows** or a **type** of things to come. God clearly revealed in Hebrews 3:5 that The Law given to Moses was only a **testimony** or **witness** of what would be **revealed later**. What was revealed after?

Jesus came to bring **peace** to the **world** and remove all **sin**. Animal sacrifice merely was a reminder you are still a **sinner** without Christ. That is exactly what Hebrews 10:3 states. "**But in those**

*sacrifices* there is a **REMEMBRANCE AGAIN** made of sins every year.” That is the answer. Only Christ’s sacrifice removes sin.

All the animal sacrifices were to do “was reveal that humanity was like an animal or beast.” Even Christians can still be **carnal** or beastlike as those in Corinth (I Corinthians 3:1). When one is a babe in Christ they must grow in **spiritual knowledge**. However, they are still carnal and very much like beasts. Babes, in Christ, now repentant, are clean (no sin) but still clean animals like oxen or goats but not like Christ, a lamb.

Always understand that God accepted animal sacrifices only because they represented the nature or behavior of those Israelites who still sinned. It’s like any animal that resists following direction.

Peter stated in Acts 10 and 11 that God, through Christ’s sacrifices, no longer considers ANY human, Israelite or Gentile, as an **unclean animal**. Now God is allowing you to see all mankind act like animal, some “**clean**” and some “**unclean**.”

The “**unclean**” are the **wild** animals like a lion, bear or leopard. The “**clean**” are like helpful farm animals, oxen, goats and sheep.

Now God no longer considers the wild animals as unclean, but accepts **all people** who **fear Him** and worketh **righteousness** in their lives. They will be accepted by Him. God intends to **save the whole world**. That is why He sent Christ, to **save the world** (I John 4:14).

Remember, when Jesus was born of Mary, she was told Christ

came to bring **peace** to the world and save humanity from sin. Now you need to understand how **animals** are depicted.

## Solomon's Conclusion

The preacher, Solomon, came to a conclusion concerning human life and what humanity really was. In *Ecclesiastes*, he said he experienced every human emotion and event. Solomon, as a king, was extremely wealthy and he denied nothing from enjoying a luxurious life.

He lived in folly (fun), riches, creativity, women, knowledge, construction and every human endeavor. What was his conclusion? **“I said in mine heart, concerning the estate of the sons of men, that God might manifest them, and that they might see that they themselves are beasts”** (*Ecclesiastes* 3:18).

“Estate” in Hebrew means “condition,” “manifest” and “to separate and make known.” Solomon was meditating after living every human existence possible. In the end, God will show that everyone is only a **beast** or an **animal**.

Humanity always seeks self-preservation. Survival of the fittest. Humans will kill to preserve their lives. God is telling you, even if you give your life to God, but still offer your life as an animal that resists God or devours others to protect themselves, you are still considered **carnal**. That is, unless and until you strive to be like Christ.

Jesus came into the world to forgive and destroy sin and bring **peace** or love to the world. Not like animals that are stubborn and want to devour each other. Read all of *Ecclesiastes* for a true revelation of mankind.

## The Gospel

*The Gospel* or **Good News** is more than The Kingdom of God. In Luke 12:31 Jesus said, “**But rather seek ye the kingdom of God; and all these things shall be added unto you.**” Christ related to all the things humans strive for in this life. Food, shelter, clothing, security, protection and so on and promised if you **truly seek God's kingdom** first in this life and not survival like an animal, all your needs will be supplied. Why?

“**Fear not, little flock, for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom**” (Luke 12:32). In Ephesians 1, it explains it gives God pleasure to make you Holy and unblemished like He is. God deeply desires to give you His **kingdom** but only if you **seek His kingdom first** and not be like the animals who try to preserve their lives at all costs and never care about others.

God's **kingdom** is more than a **government**. It is a **government** of specific types of **beings**. Jesus plainly gives you the answer.

The Pharisees demanded to know of Christ when God's **kingdom** would come. They merely believed in a physical government restored to Israel by The **Messiah**, their Savior. Jesus gave the answer to what God's **kingdom** really was or what *The Gospel* consists of (Luke 17:20-21). “**The Kingdom of God cometh not with observation: Neither shall they say, Lo here! Or lo there! For, behold, the Kingdom of God is within you.**”

*The Gospel* or good news is not a physical government but a **spiritual government** which is dependent upon what its **citizens** become. God's **kingdom** has to do with a **change of human behavior**. Then and only then would God's **kingdom** come to this earth. God is making you in His image (Genesis 1:26). This is so

different from what so many preach.

When Jesus was born it started the **last days**. The **Fourth Gentile Government** will be governing on this earth and Christ will destroy it. How? By changing human nature and bringing **world peace**, which was the reason He was born. Paradise can only come when **everyone** knows how to behave and be able to live in a paradise.

With this change of behavior from being as unclean animals (lion, bear, leopard) and being transformed to a clean animal (ox, goat, sheep), finally you will become His **flock** or **sheep** (Matthew 25:31-34).

Who makes up the sheep family? Jesus does, by God's Holy Spirit. What is **the kingdom**? God's **kingdom** is a **spiritual government** whose inhabitants are exactly like Jesus! They will become "sons" and "daughters" just like Jesus. Christ is your sacrificial lamb and you are also able to become a lamb or be like Jesus. Then God will accept the sacrifice of your body (Romans 12:1) as God accepted Christ's body.

When you are like Jesus, then God is **well pleased** because it will be a time of Christ "in you" (Colossians 1:27). You are now in God's **kingdom**. Why? Because *The Gospel* is Jesus. What is *The Gospel*? "**The beginning of the *The Gospel* of Jesus Christ, The Son of God.**" Jesus, The Christ, The Son of God is *The Gospel*.

## A Family Government

When you become like Jesus in **the resurrection** you are given a spiritual body and you will be in the exact image of Christ who is in the exact **image** of God. God will then be "**all and in all.**"

Since there is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female. **“For ye are all ONE in Christ, Jesus”** (Galatians 3:28).

All of you are God's “sons” in Christ. God, indeed, had a wonderful plan for His creation. No one is any better than another. There has never been a better plan for you and yours. You become a family government of sons, like Christ. That is why God wants all, males and females to be His sons. You are to be just like Jesus, God's Son.

God's **kingdom** is not a place or a location but consists of spirit beings in the likeness of Jesus and God. **That is The Kingdom of God.** If “Christ be in you” then God's **kingdom** is **present**. That family is a continually growing family and Jesus is The Beginning of *The Gospel* (Mark 1:1). Only then can you be given **salvation** (live forever and ever) and have **paradise** and God's **rest**.

## CHAPTER 16

### THE FARMERS

**God's "will" is based or determined upon God's "estate." Ephesians 1:10 states the dispensation of God's "estate" occurs "when the fullness of time is complete." God has predestined His plan to share all that He is.**

The "**Tetragramaton**," "JHVH," denotes "**I am what I am.**" God reveals He will be whatever He chooses to be. God continually **creates** or purposely grows. God can be a multitude of dimensions. His **kingdom** has no end. He also chooses to share His eternal growth with His "like-kind" which He is creating in all Christians.

#### **Physical And Spiritual**

To prepare you to join God in His future growth of a New Heaven and a New Earth, He is showing you the steps you must take so you can be just like Him. Only when everyone is like God and Jesus will eternal "bliss" or "paradise" be guaranteed. Your **training environment** is the universe; and especially your own physical household which God created for you to learn and grow. This earth and the universe is physical. It is all subject to death or that which has a temporary existence. You must, therefore, choose between life and death in this physical dimension. The **physical** is a type of the **spiritual**.

When you learn to trust your Father in everything by **faith**, just

like His Son, Jesus, you will receive the **gift of eternal life** in a **spiritual dimension**. **Spiritual “growth”** never ends just as God continues growing and creating.

## **Our Physical Environment**

In Genesis 1 and 2 God manifests three choices of environment for humanity to live in. The **world** or **earth** was created for all humans. Then God chose a land known as **Eden** or **pleasantness** in which to dwell. Finally, within The Land of Eden, God created a **wonderful garden** where the first Adam and Eve lived. This **garden** was designed to meet all of man's needs, including “**eternal life**” or **God's “rest.”** Man did not need to do any **work**. In **the garden** God completed all “**the work.**”

The Garden of Eden was God's “**rest**” or “**kingdom.**” Adam and Eve lived in “**paradise.**” Everything **humanity needed** was there and everything was **very good** (Genesis 1:31). Since no sin was committed, there was no **carnality**. There was nothing to cause harm to God or His **creation**. God was with Adam and Eve along with The Tree of Life. If they would have eaten the fruit of The Tree of Life, Adam and Eve would have continually grown to become like God. Adam and Eve in **the garden** were vegetarians since they were only given fruit and herbs to eat. No carnivorous animals were in **the garden** and God gave Adam and Eve all the security and protection they needed. There were four beautiful rivers flowing from **the garden** to the rest of Eden which watered the land with **its life-giving properties**. Eden was truly **the land of pleasantness**. The rest of the earth couldn't compare to it. The Garden was truly God's “**rest**” where God had done the **work** and The Land of Eden, as God's country, was truly **pleasant**.

**The garden** and **Eden** were a **physical type** of God's future



“rest” which is **The New Heaven** and **The New Earth**. When God makes **all things new** (Revelation 21 and 22), **Jerusalem** will be the center of **the spiritual garden**. The remaining of The New Earth will be **Eden** or **The Land of Pleasantness**. There will also be a wilderness which is a place of “**testing and growing**.” Those in this wilderness came out of The Lake of Fire and need to become like Christ so they can be allowed in New Jerusalem (Revelation 20 and Jude).

New Jerusalem, along with The Tree of Life, will have a great river going through The New Earth. Trees will be on each side of the river which shall have its leaves flow down the river to **heal** or cure the nations of the **whole earth**. Spiritual growth does not stop when this physical earth is replaced by The New Earth.

All nations which will be **saved** bring their **spiritual growth** or **glory** to God year by year. The opportunity for salvation continues. Even those who go through The Lake of Fire and now are in **darkness** will ultimately grow to be greater than any human born of man and woman. Jesus prophesied, “**Verily, I say unto you, Among them that are born of women there hath not risen a greater than John, the Baptist: notwithstanding he that is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he**” (Matthew 11:11).

New Jerusalem, which will be **the garden**, is presently in heaven and being prepared for **the saints** (John 14:1). In God’s **kingdom**, **the garden** and Eden, the **least** of individuals, will actually be **greater** than any human born of women. Who are the least? Those in this life who are **against** God and His **commandments** are to be the **least** in God’s **kingdom** (Matthew 5:19). Even those who are **least** in God’s **kingdom** will be **greater** than any existing human that has ever lived on earth. This is God’s **great plan**.

In **the kingdom** even those who burn in The Lake of Fire will finally **be great**. **Spiritual growth** continues even in God's **kingdom**. God continues the opportunity for salvation forever (II Peter 3:8-9). Those, burned in The Lake of Fire, purged of sin, are now spirit beings and in outer darkness. They must spiritually grow, just like Christians (Jude and Matthew 22). Everyone in God's **kingdom** will **forever** continue to grow to eventually be like **your God and Father**. **It will be at that time God will be "all and in all"** (I Corinthians 15:28). Since God is the "I AM" or will be whatever He chooses to be, Christians also will be growing to be like God, The Father because they have **faith** in Him. God will be "**All and In All!**"

Just as God receives **pleasure** in doing His "**will**" (Ephesians 1), you will be doing God's "**will**" just as Christ has done. All of God's creation will live in **eternal pleasure**.

## **Sin And The Wilderness**

God's "**rest**" is The Garden of Eden. Once Adam and Eve sinned they were expelled from **the garden** and The Tree of Life. Now they had to work to survive and in the end they would die. However, they still lived in Eden, known as The Pleasant Land. They were not **in the wilderness**. They were not nomadic.

Cain and Abel, Adam and Eve's children, were known as "tillers of the soil" and "shepherds." They lived in Eden as farmers. All future generations (because Adam and Eve sinned) had to work to survive. God no longer supplied their needs as in **the garden**. **The garden** was where God was. So since that time, up to the present day, mankind has had to struggle to survive.

Once Cain murdered Abel, he was exiled to The Land of Nod and

as a result became a nomad. In John 8, Jesus states Satan was a murderer from the beginning. Cain killed Abel aided by Satan. Satan became Cain's "**father.**"

Satan is the god of this world (II Corinthians 4:4). Nod was a **land of wandering** or **wilderness** where Satan was the deceiver. This was Satan's world. The wilderness is "**the world**" under Satan's jurisdiction. Under Satan's deception, everyone is lost from God and is in confusion. That is why Christ was in **the wilderness battling Satan for forty days. Satan was there as "the god of this world"** in "**the wilderness**" (Luke 4:1-4).

To know "**truth,**" mankind must be in God's land or **Eden**. It is **the land of pleasantness** because those dwelling "in Christ" understand and see "**the truth.**" They know "what's what." Those in **the wilderness** do not know why they were created human or know the purpose of life to the extent they understand what they should be doing.

They exist just "to exist." Sin is the cause of being in **the wilderness** or without God. In The New Earth, Satan will also be growing in the wilderness. But, there will be a great deal of weeping and wailing (Matthew 22:13-14).

## God's House

In II Timothy 2:19-21, Paul reveals that in **God's (Jude 13) house** there are many vessels, some to honor and some to dishonor. There is a mixture of **good** and **evil**, but in God's **kingdom** everyone will have repented and will be healed. Even those in The Lake of Fire. Read *The White Throne Judgment*.

Paul told Timothy The Lord knows **those** who belong to Him.

God's house has those who He has sealed as **His children** and He knows those who are not His (II Timothy 2:19). Satan has tossed tares into God's **house**. Does God have a house and if He does, what kind?

The Garden of Eden as New Jerusalem in God's New Heaven and Earth is where God does the **work**. Everything for **life** is provided by God for a life in **paradise**. Humanity does none of the work but must keep it in good order as God created. This **house** or **mansion** is where **those sealed** by God, as **saints**, live and serve God.

Those who have grown **spiritually** but have not matured to the stature of Christ must still work to survive. Those growing Christians have entered God's **rest** and the only work they will have is to work on having absolute **faith** in God and be like Jesus. These Christians are in Eden, a **pleasant land** and are not **lost** as **those in the wilderness**.

This **Land of Eden** is like a farm or ranch. They grow produce and have farm animals just like Cain and Abel did in the original Eden. There are no wild beasts there. Those who come out of The Lake of Fire and **repent** are goats and need to become sheep while in the wilderness. Those in God's "**rest**" are protected as long as they have **faith** in God's "**house**" or "**ranch**" or "**garden**."

## **The Beast**

Solomon summarized **the state of mankind** is nothing more than living as a **beast**. All humans are born with the desire of self-survival. To keep safe you will steal, lie or injure others. Just as any carnivore, you can become violent to maintain your security and safety. Those who are completely carnal are acting as "**beasts**."

God uses different animals to designate a particular human behavior as to a Christian's **spiritual growth**. To bring this point out further, you may have seen some reporters take pictures of singers, movie or TV stars who have a menacing look on their faces and gather in droves to pounce on their prey.

Peter states that God, no longer, regards any difference between clean and unclean animals (Acts 10 and 11). In fact, every type of creature and animal was included in **the vision** Peter had. This means even humans who behave like wild animals, lions, leopards or bears are acceptable to God.

As long as any human **fears** God and seeks **righteousness** God will accept that person (Acts 10:35). Animals, according to their differing behavior, depict mankind's nature. There are three levels of animal behavior:

- 1 **Wild beasts** – Carnivores.
- 2 **Unclean animals** – Includes carnivores and dangerous animals, poisonous snakes, rabbits, squirrels, mice and rats.
- 3 **Clean animals** – Basically, edible farm and ranch animals like oxen, goats or sheep. They are animals who are trainable and are helpful to humanity.

The animal must determine acceptability to God. Christ specifies you must be as "**a lamb**" to be able to receive **eternal life in the kingdom** (Matthew 25:32). Just as Jesus was a slain lamb, you, likewise, must become like a lamb.

All other animal behavior will not be acceptable to God. Depend-

ing upon your spiritual growth as a wild beast, lion, bear, leopard or any unclean animal as a lobster, frog, etc. to a clean animal as an ox or goat **will not** receive the opportunity for salvation until God's kingdom. Even clean animals such as an ox or goat will not qualify.

By being a **lamb** following Christ, The Shepherd, you will receive **eternal life** in the resurrection. The beast or completely carnivorous animals, are regarded to be worthy only of His **wrath**. The Mark of The Beast with its number 666 is the number of a man or beast-like to survive.

The three sixes represent humans with the nature of wild animals such as a lion, bear or leopard. In Gentile history these animals with their human names were depicted as Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon, Cyrus of Media-Persia and The Greco-Macedonians led by Alexander, The Great. All their actions are military and their armies were violent just like wild animals. This is known as The **Mark of The Beast**. God will vent out His **wrath** upon those individuals who have this behavior. Next are unclean animals such as snakes, scorpions and other such animals. Finally, clean animals may not be as voracious by not causing much havoc, are therefore, not as injurious to man much like the oxen, goats or sheep. Although remember, these clean animals can still hurt others when they are stubborn. Only people with **lamb-like natures will be saved** in the resurrection. The others will have their opportunity in God's **kingdom** but cannot enter New Jerusalem (Revelation 22:15).

## **God's Protection**

God refers to three different environments on this earth where humanity can dwell. Two of these areas are protected by God while

the third is Satan's realm. So The Garden of Eden and The Land of Eden are protected, however **the wilderness** (the world), is where **Satan is god of that domain** and rules those in it, but only until God's **kingdom**.

The Garden of Eden will only have herbs and fruit trees for mankind's menu. No wild animals. God will do **the work**. The Land of Eden or **the pleasant land** is God's "rest" with His protection **where man does the work** as on a farm or ranch. This is The True Sabbath's Rest where God does the work.

This **present world** in which you live is called **the wilderness** because Satan is its "god." It is full of wild animals like the lion, bear or leopard and they are ready to devour. It goes without saying, there are too many places in this world "rife" with violence. At present, **the true garden** or paradise is not available until The New Heaven and New Earth (New Jerusalem) is **prepared in heaven** by God and Christ (John 14:1). **Eden** or **the ranch** is where Christians live in God's **household**. Basically, farm animals such as the ox, goat or sheep will be allowed. Spiritual growth takes place on this ranch. Everyone does good works. Humans who are "**converted**" Christians, **rest** in Christ.

They are to be like sheep. They will also have God's protection from **the wilderness of the world around them**. As Christ said, "**We are in God's rest or household**." Christians are to continue growing spiritually from being an ox to a goat and finally a sheep. You need to ask yourself exactly how **spiritual growth continues** or how it stops growing.

## The Wilderness

Surprisingly, in The New Heaven and Earth there will be "a wil-

**derness.**” This “wilderness” will be the farthest location from New Jerusalem and God’s “**glory.**” In fact, this wilderness is in complete darkness as opposed to the brightness of God’s “**glory**” (Jude).

This future wilderness, as darkness, is depicted in Jude 13. Speaking of those who go into The Lake of Fire (Jude 23) and as **spirit beings** are as wandering stars (wandering spirits), to whom is **reserved** “the blackness of darkness.” “Forever” in Greek means “age-lasting” or “until they become like Christ.” This is their opportunity. Matthew 22:13 reveals the same end for those thrown out of The Wedding Feast.

As the river of waters with the healing leaves flow to the entire New Earth, these “wandering stars” (spirits) will begin to drink its **therapeutic waters** to be able to grow **spiritually**, to eventually reach the stature of Christ.

They will be “**in torment**” during this **growing period**. Just as Israel had to wander in the wilderness for forty years and as Christ did in **the wilderness** for forty days, all these **spirits** also must be tried and tested in “their” forty-year-trial period.

The word “**torment**” in Greek is “phobus” or “a phobia.” They will be wailing and gnashing their teeth for having blown their previous opportunity to have a greater **reward** with access to God and Christ in New Jerusalem (Revelation 21:6-8, 27). The ultimate promise Christ gave is that even the least in **God’s kingdom** or **family** will be **greater** than any born human in this present life (Matthew 11:11).

In God’s **family kingdom** of sons, like Christ, all will continually grow spiritually “**eternally.**” Then in **the wilderness** when Satan



and his angels (spirit beings known as demons) come out of the fire, they must, also become as sheep to be able to live in **God's kingdom**. Then, and only then, will God be "**all and in all**."

## CHAPTER 17

### GOD'S EARTHLY HOUSES

**King David wanted to build God “a house.” Here was God’s reply, “Go and tell my servant David, Thus saith the Lord, Shall thou build me an house for me to dwell in” (II Samuel 7:5)? God did dwell at times in earthly houses. Up to that point God had walked in a tent or a tabernacle (II Samuel 7:6).**

God who is “**The I AM**” or “**existing one**” will be whatever He wants to be. The “**Tetragramaton**,” “**JHVH**,” is “the one who dwells where He chooses to **dwell**.” Presently, God’s **house** is in heaven with Jesus sitting next to Him at His right hand. During this time, Jesus is building a mansion for His people, Christians, to dwell in (John 14).

#### **Different Earthly Houses**

God only dwells on earth when there is no sin (Isaiah 59:1-2). Once sin enters “**a place**” then God will not listen to them, let alone live with the sinners. When God created **the heaven and earth**, He also decided to dwell in The Garden of Eden. In this **garden** was where God **rested** from all His work on **the seventh day**.

Outside of The Garden was **The Land of Pleasantness** or Eden. This Land of Eden was still pleasant because God was there but The Tree of Life was not there. It was then “**man**” began to do

**the work** to be able to survive. Cain became a farmer and Abel became a shepherd.

In the beginning, The Garden of Eden was where God dwelt and The Tree of Life was there, but God Himself, only, did all the work. This was God's first earthly house. God did the work for Christians because He is the greatest servant. This was God's **kingdom**. In God's **kingdom** and **rest**, He, again, will do **all the work**. Adam and Eve only had to dress and keep **the garden** as God created it. All God wanted of Adam and Eve was "to keep" and not "to ruin" His **house**. Since God dwelt there, it was God's **house** or **temple**. It is where He chose to dwell since there was no sin.

God was **The Creator, The Supplier, The Protector** and **The Life-giver**. Until Adam and Eve sinned, God was "all and in all."

Adam and Eve were in God's **house** and He supplied all Adam and Eve's **needs**. Once Adam and Eve sinned they could not dwell in God's **house** and were told to leave. Adam and Eve proved they had no right to The Tree of Life or His **kingdom** (Romans 5:12-15).

## **God's Second Earthly House**

God only dwelt with a select group of people, His Prophets, until Israel became a nation under the administration of Moses.

When Israel sinned at Mount Sinai by worshipping the golden calf, God was ready to destroy Israel and build a new people, a new nation from The Tribe of The Levites. God said He would not dwell with Israel any longer, but was still willing to keep them

as His people, but they were only to be led by an angel or messenger (Exodus 23). God approved this **added covenant** – *The Old Covenant*, which only applied to Israel because they had “**a wrong heart.**” It was as a schoolmaster making them do a lot of homework until they had learned to have “**a right heart.**” Read Deuteronomy 5.

From that time God would only dwell outside of Israel’s camp in **the tabernacle** which was **God’s second earthly house**. Moses was to be **the sole contact** between God and Israel. They could not be in God’s **rest** but had to be in **the wilderness** and take care of themselves.

Israel left Sinai and went into **the wilderness** to be tried and tested to exercise **faith**. But remember Joshua and Caleb were the only ones who had **faith**. But since Israel didn’t have Joshua and Caleb’s faith, God “tried” them for forty years, but they kept murmuring and didn’t put their trust in God (Acts 7). God allowed or tested them on ten different occasions, to trust Him, and each time they would not.

When all The Israelites had died from that generation, then Joshua brought **the new generation** into “**the promised land.**”

In King David’s day, the king wanted to build a **temple** or **house** for God, so He could be with His people – Israel. God told David that he, David, was **a bloody man of war** and would not be allowed to build God’s **house**.

Later David’s son Solomon built God’s house. Again, God, as “**The I AM,**” dwells only where He chooses to dwell. God’s **new house, the temple**, was where God would dwell from that time forward until Nebuchadnezzar captured Jerusalem and de-

stroyed **the temple**. This was God's **second earthly house**, but God would only be there from time to time when God's "**glory**" would be present. God still would not dwell with Israel but talked to them through Solomon and The Levites. Solomon asked God for **wisdom** to rule the people and God gave Solomon "**the wisdom**" he asked for. This earthly house was a **temple** where God would dwell from time to time. This lasted until Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon destroyed **the temple** in 586 B.C. and brought Judah to Babylon to be in captivity for seventy years. This **temple**, as **the tabernacle**, was to be an exact duplicate of God's **temple** in heaven where God does dwell.

## God's Decree

When The Jews went into captivity in Babylon, Daniel, God's Prophet, earnestly prayed for his people to be forgiven of their sins and return them to Jerusalem to rebuild **the temple** so God could be with them again.

What did Daniel learn? Gabriel, God's angel, came to Daniel and told him he was greatly beloved because he asked for forgiveness for his people. This is what the MESSENGER said. "**Seventy weeks**" are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the TRANSGRESSION (Daniel 9:24). In the Hebrew "seventy weeks" is rendered "seventy years." Exactly seventy years from the beginning of the captivity God forgave the sins of The Jews. It was at that time King Cyrus of The Media-Persian Empire sent out a decree to restore God's **temple**. God would once again dwell with Judah from time to time in His "**glory**."

*The Books of Ezra and Nehemiah* cover the struggle The Jews had. It wasn't until **the second decree** by Artaxerxes, The King of Media-Persia, when **the temple** and walls were being completed. In

*The Bible* this period was known as TROUBLOUS TIMES (Daniel 9:25). This lasted all the way through the time of The Maccabees (Zealots), and then Herod finished **the temple**. That **temple** was finally completed by Herod, The Great (in Christ's day) which had taken **forty-six years** (John 2:20). During this time Jesus was told how beautiful **the temple** was. Then Christ made a tremendous prophetic statement: "**Destroy this TEMPLE, and in three days I will raise it up**" (John 2:19).

Jesus was telling them that **the temple** which was built by Herod would be destroyed. He told them the **spiritual answer** was His own body would be destroyed and then He would be raised up in three days (John 2:21).

Jesus was prophesying that God was about to change His **dwelling place** to a **spiritual temple** and no longer would there be a physical one (temple) where they could seek God. In 70 A.D. Herod's Temple was destroyed and God was no longer there. This is the reason Jesus said to the Samaritan woman that a day would come when God would no longer be worshipped in Samaria or Jerusalem (John 4:21). Christ said their worship in **the temple would cease** and God from that time forward only wanted to be WORSHIPPED SPIRITUALLY (John 4:23-24). **This was a monumental change of worship.**

## A Spiritual Temple

Jesus prophesied to the Samaritan woman that God would no longer DWELL in an EARTHLY HOUSE but a **spiritual one**. It was at this time God was going to change His requirements for individuals to be called His PEOPLE.

NO LONGER would PHYSICAL ELEMENTS of the earth as *The*

*Old Covenant*, or any human religious ideas, be acceptable to God when individuals wanted to worship Him. When physical worship stopped in Jerusalem, man's effort to please God had ceased. Christianity is **NOT A RELIGION of "do's and don'ts"** to be able to worship The TRUE GOD. Worshipping God in Jerusalem ceased when Titus destroyed **the temple** in 70 A.D. God ended *The Old Covenant* with Moses by allowing Titus to destroy **temple worship**. Before the destruction of **the temple** Paul warned in Hebrews 8:13 that *The Old Covenant* was vanishing and would disappear.

From 74 A.D., with the destruction of Masada, The Jews were rejected as God's people. Now God was converting a people **more worthy** than Israel had been. This concluded "**the seventy weeks prophecy**" of 490 years in Daniel 9.

If no temple existed, did God change His dwelling place? There would be no more worshipping God as a religion with "**worldly elements**" or "**deeds**" but a SPIRITUAL TEMPLE was needed where God would dwell. Hebrews 3 tells that Christians who have put their complete faith in God and Christ will have God dwelling in their very own body or temple. Christianity was never intended to be A RELIGION but A WAY OF LIVING so GOD WOULD DWELL THERE. EARTHLY TEMPLES had VANISHED and would not again appear until **the millennium**.

## God's Will

*The Bible* is a written **WILL** or **TESTAMENT** where God intends to show His **plan** so everyone can be LIKE HIM which is HOLY and PERFECT (Genesis 1:26).

*The Old Covenant* did not cease when Jesus was human. *The*

*Old and New Testament* is ONE continuing STORY with ONE THEME. The last *Old Testament* PROPHET, Malachi, continues by announcing the next Prophet to Israel which was ELIJAH or John, The Baptist. The story continues with the oldest *Gospel of Mark*, which introduces John, The Baptist.

Malachi 3:1 declares: “**Behold, I will send my messenger [John], and he shall prepare the way before me [Christ]: and the Lord, whom ye seek [Messiah], shall suddenly come to his TEMPLE, even the messenger of the COVENANT, whom ye DELIGHT in: behold, he shall come, saith the Lord of hosts.**” Malachi is revealing Christ’s commission from God. Jesus comes to God’s house, the temple. When Christ came, He brought *The New Covenant*. What does Christ do? “**But who may ABIDE the day of His coming? And who shall STAND when He appeareth? For He is like a REFINER’S FIRE, and like a FULLER’S SOPE**” (Malachi 3:2).

Jesus, when He came to **the temple**, was to purify it and make it clean without any blemish. Read the rest of Malachi 3 where Jesus will purge **the temple** by making it **righteous**. At the end of His purging He will render **judgment**, so no longer will God’s **house** be a **temple for business** which defrauds the poor and, in part, keeps them poor.

Malachi clearly prophesies the outcome of Herod’s Temple as accomplished by Christ. The **temple** gives the answer to the exact time *The Old Covenant* under Moses ceases and *The New Covenant* **begins**.



## CHAPTER 18

### GOD'S SPIRITUAL HOUSE

**Jesus started His earthly ministry when He was baptized at THIRTY years of age (Luke 3:23). This was exactly the age a Levite started to serve in The Priesthood (Numbers 4:1-3). In Malachi 3:1 Jesus would suddenly come to His “temple” or His Father’s “house” to MAKE IT RIGHTEOUS (Malachi 3:3).**

#### Forty Years

About one week before Christ approached His crucifixion, He entered **the temple** that last Passover and said the following: **“My house shall be called of ALL NATIONS the HOUSE OF PRAYER, but you have made it a DEN OF THIEVES”** (Mark 11:17). Malachi said, **“I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord: And he shall turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse”** (Malachi 4:5-6). If John, The Baptist as Elijah would not turn the hearts of the children to the fathers (Noah, Abraham, etc.), God would bring a **CURSE UPON THE EARTH.**

God cursed the earth as Jesus prophesied in Matthew 23 because of the scribes' and the Priest's corruption because they made a business in **the temple**. This is known as The Time of Sorrows which culminates in Armageddon when Christ **returns**.

After Jesus was baptized God said, “**This is my BELOVED son in whom I am well pleased**” (Mark 1:11). “**And, immediately, The Spirit [of God] drives Him [Jesus] into THE WILDERNESS. And he was there in the wilderness forty days, tempted of Satan; and was with the wild beasts.**”

Christ was in temptation by Satan and WILD BEASTS for the complete 40 days (Mark 1:12-13). Just as Israel had to go to be “**tried**” by God in the WILDERNESS for 40 years, Jesus was “**tested**” the same way. Remember, each day is a year in prophecy (II Peter 3).

The test Christ went through was to prove He was **the temple**, God’s Son, by living every Word of God (Matthew 4:3-4). This is why Satan asked, “**...if you be the son of God.**” God said, after Christ’s baptism, that He was The Son of God.

Christ proved He was God’s Son by beating Satan in THE WILDERNESS. Now from age 30, starting His **ministry** as a Levite, Christ cleansed His Father’s **house, the temple on earth**, by removing the MONEY CHANGERS.

After Jesus was crucified God gave Judah 40 years to prove themselves just as in **the wilderness**. Like Israel and all their generation who failed in **the wilderness**, The Jews had **the temple** destroyed in 70 A.D.

Christ started His **ministry** at age 30 and if you add 40 years you have 70 years or 70 A.D. when **the temple** was destroyed by Titus. Since Jesus was crucified at 33 years of age which happened in 30 A.D. **the temple** was no longer there 40 years later in 70 A.D.

The Jews, as a nation, held out in Masada to the point they took

their very lives in 74 A.D. This completed **the 490 year prophecy** in Daniel 9. The curse was now upon the earth till **the second coming of The Messiah**.

## Our New House

The first part of “**the Malachi curse**” was the destruction of **the temple**. Here is Christ’s indictment: “**And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things** [temple buildings]? **There shall not be left here ONE STONE upon another that shall not be THROWN DOWN**” (Matthew 24:1-2).

Then after the destruction of **the temple**, which was the first curse, Christ lists all of the sorrow to follow until His “**coming**” to **save** mankind from self-destruction (Matthew 24:21-22).

In 70 A.D. with **the temple** gone, The Law of Moses could no longer be kept in its entirety which was required by The Law (James 2:10). This ended *The Old Covenant*. The Greek word for “wax old” is defined as “OLD AGE” or “ready to die” in Hebrews 8:13.

The reason God disannulled this **commandment** was because it was WEAK and because of mankind’s *all too human* “**flesh**.” **Human nature being what it is could never and will never be able to keep The Law** (Hebrews 7:18). God was directly VOIDING *The Old Covenant* which had been added to The Law. The keeping of The Law could make nothing PERFECT as God’s “**testament**” demanded (Ephesians 1:4). *The Old Covenant* could never give “**salvation**.”

God no longer dwelt in **the temple** as His “**house**” after 70 years, so He eventually could be able to turn the hearts of the children

to the fathers. Paul then announced “**a new way**” which could make humans **holy and unblemished**. “**For the Law made nothing PERFECT, but the bringing in of a BETTER hope did, by the which we DRAW near unto God**” (Hebrews 7:19). God was about to dwell with His “**spirit**” of His “**Glory**” in a different way. What was this NEW HOUSE or **temple**?

## **God's New Temple**

The Apostle Paul reveals the change of dwelling for God's **new house**. Read Hebrews 3:1-19. Paul said Jesus, as The Head Apostle, sent by God, should be followed as **the profession** or as their **way of life**.

Paul describes Moses was FAITHFUL as a “**testimony**” in his **house** (*Old Covenant* and **temple**). The word “**martyr**” in Greek means “**a witness in better things to come**” (*New Covenant*).

**Earthly houses** or **temples** are built by humans but He who BUILDS ALL THINGS IS GOD. God is now about to build His own **house** or **temple** in which to dwell (Hebrews 3:4).

God will dwell in this **new temple** which He, alone, can only build. What is this **new temple**? “**But Christ as a son over his own house; WHOSE HOUSE ARE WE, if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end**” (Hebrews 3:6).

God's NEW HOUSE is centered in each Christian. God, by His Holy Spirit, now LIVES in each Christian instead of an **earthly house**. Since ONLY God is GOOD and **Holy** there is only one way any human can be HOLY. That way is by having Christ “in you” (Colossians 1:27). But just how can Christ dwell “**in you**?”

The rest of Hebrews 3 manifests it is God's Holy Spirit by which God or Christ can dwell "**in you.**" You can only be "**holy**" by what is "**holy**" "**in you.**" That is **God** "**in you.**" Paul warns, as you live in this WILDERNESS (the world which is cursed), as Israel went through **the wilderness**, you should remain FAITHFUL to the GUIDANCE of God's Holy Spirit "in you" to the very end. If you do, you then are in **God's REST** (Hebrews 4).

If you are a true Christian, God dwells "in you" as His **new house**. What does this "**house**" do? Paul answers the question. "**Know ye not that ye are the TEMPLE of GOD, and that the Spirit of God DWELLETH in you**" (I Corinthians 3:16-17). God's "**new house**" or "**TEMPLE**" where God dwells in each Christian can and will make you eventually **perfect** because God is Holy. God now DWELLS SPIRITUALLY "**in you**" as His **new house** or **temple**. God's **new house** is a SPIRITUAL HOUSE which makes Christians Holy like The Creator who made you.

## **A Change Of Worship**

When God changes His House of Worship or **temple**, He also is changing conditions of His "will" with a New Contract, which is a *New Covenant*.

*The Old Covenant* was based upon MAN'S EFFORTS or deeds. Since Israel had a wrong heart and lacked **faith** in God, they were told exactly what is **right** and **wrong** by their own ability. This is known as a RELIGION or following rules, whether by God or human imagination. Without God it is "PAGAN." Paganism is a "**human religious system**" of human ideas of worship of a **false god**.

A **Godly pure religion** is a method of worshipping God with no

human effort. God wants you to be **Holy** and **perfect**. To be **Holy** and **perfect** has to do with how someone lives their life (James 1:27). It is definitely not a series of religious deeds or activities. Doing religious deeds or works does not and cannot change human nature.

In Galatians 4:3 Paul said, “**Even so we, when we were children [new in Christ], were in BONDAGE under the ELEMENTS of the world.**”

The Greek for “ELEMENT” is “*stoicheion*” meaning “a ROW” or “go in a row.” It refers to “any worldly system of religion that one does which makes a human do something over and over again as in a ROW.” This human type of religion, done by mankind, continually repeats itself. It never changes human nature doing repetitive rituals over and over.

With the destruction of **the temple**, following a religious system of human works which ceased, it had to be replaced by a far BETTER SYSTEM. The new system is not based on human effort, but spiritually, by **God “dwelling in you,”** by His Holy Spirit which is Christ “in you” (Colossians 1:27).

God's **temple**, where God dwells, is now a SPIRITUAL TEMPLE where henceforth, as Christians, God wants you to only worship Him **spiritually** (John 4).

## CHAPTER 19

### SEVENTY TIMES SEVEN

**God uses the number 70 as “a time of forgiveness for sins.” In fact, God multiplies 70 times 7 or 490 years to forgive transgressions. Why does God allot the number 7 and 70 as a number for you to know He will forgive sin?**

#### God Is Merciful

Following *The Bible* “**story**” or “**theme**” throughout *The Bible*, God reveals His patience and mercy with all mankind. You now have an entire new act of God’s “**forgiveness**” written in *The New Testament* or *The New Covenant* in God’s “will.”

**The temple** on earth where God dwelt was destroyed in 70 A.D. Now God **no longer** wants to be worshipped by human works but “**spiritually**.” At this point, God begins to change each Christian by you becoming like Christ, **Holy** and **sinless**. **Each Christian is now God’s Spiritual Temple where He dwells**. As long as you remain FAITHFUL to God and His Son, Jesus, you are SINLESS because of Christ’s sacrifice (I John 1:7 and I John 4:18).

#### Christians Are Sinless In Christ

How do you, as a Christian, remain **sinless**? The Apostle John answers the question. “**And this is his Commandment, That we should believe on the name of His son Jesus Christ, AND LOVE ONE ANOTHER, as he gave us commandment**” (I John 3:23).

As long as you believe and have FAITH in Christ and LOVE ONE ANOTHER, you are blameless and WITHOUT SIN.

Now to answer the question about how many times you are to FORGIVE YOUR BROTHER who might transgress against you and yet, you still forgive HIM. God tells you to forgive others who transgress against you 70 x 7. Can you do the same?

Surprisingly, the first act of forgiveness was started by a pagan. When Cain murdered his brother Abel, God had Cain leave The Land of Eden. Cain went into The Land of Nod or **the wilderness** to be on his own. Over the years, as Cain's progeny grew, you encounter one of his great, great-grandchildren named Lamech. He had been attacked by two men and he killed them. Here is what Lamech told his two wives: **"Hearken unto my speech; for I have slain a man to my wounding, and a young man to my hurt. If Cain shall be avenged SEVENFOLD [times], truly Lamech SEVENTY and SEVENFOLD [times]"** (Genesis 4:23-24).

Cain was to be forgiven seven times seven or 49 years. The 50<sup>th</sup> year is Jubilee when all debts are forgiven. Lamech claimed he should be forgiven seventy times seven or 490 years. Already **mercy was to be claimed** for Cain and Lamech. Does forgiveness of seven times seven and 70 times 7 apply for you today?

## **Jesus Answers**

Christ speaks to His Disciples in Matthew 18:14-22. **"Even so it is not the "will" of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish."** Always keep in mind, God's "will" is to **save** everyone once they **repent**. Jesus relates how to handle transgressions between **church members**. If a brother transgresses against another, the dispute should be handled pri-



vately. No one should know about it. If it is settled between them, then the dispute is forgotten and they have each gained a brother. On the other hand, should the disagreement continue, then two or three other church members of good honor are to be witnesses during the discussion. If it's not settled after this encounter, there is nothing left to do but the one who transgressed should be treated as a heathen or put out of the church until he repents.

Now Jesus makes a remarkable statement. **“Again, I say unto you, that if two [witnesses] of you shall agree on earth as touching anything that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven (Matthew 18:19).**

Many believe, **erroneously**, however, this has to do with forgiveness of sin. But realize the subject is to **settle disputes between brothers. Only God and Christ can forgive sin!**

Then Peter asks a vital and important question. Should **the church**, not just **the ministers**, but any two or three witnesses settle the dispute? What Peter is asking is how many times should you be willing to forgive a transgression between one brother and another brother? How long do you keep listening to disputes between brothers before “enough is enough?” Remember, the issue is settling differences between church brethren and **not** the forgiveness of sin. Only Christ's blood does that when a Christian repents. The issue is keeping all the brethren united as a family. So Jesus replies to Peter's question. **“Jesus saith unto him. I say not unto thee, Until seven times, but until seventy times seven.”**

This can't be any clearer for Christians to understand or for anyone reading this to comprehend. Forgiving only seven times is not enough. Christians must forgive seven times seventy. (7 x 70

is 490 times or in duality 490 years).

As long as a brother asks **forgiveness** or **repents**, you as a Christian must forgive him not only 7 times (or 7 years) but 70 times 7 or 490 times (or 490 years).

Cain, himself, was forgiven seven times and then Lamech knew he would be forgiven 70 x 7. Jesus validated the forgiveness (70 x 7). This is God's Word (Matthew 18:22).

### **Mystery Of Number Seven**

God will grant **grace** "**forever**" when you repent. God has a mathematical formula which proves it. From the beginning God rested on the 7<sup>th</sup> day. Everything was very good or perfect on the seventh day (Genesis 1:31). The number 7 denotes perfection when everything is **very good**.

There is **no sin**. No sin was allowed in **paradise** (or God's **rest**), nor will it be allowed when Christ returns. Remember, God said His **kingdom** was very good (Genesis 1:31). No sin can be in or even be able to enter God's **kingdom**. The number "7" is imperative for being sinless **to be allowed in God's rest or kingdom family**. **This is a family matter**. God's **rest**, The 7th Day, is perfect and very good. It is God's sabbath and not man's.

Salvation is a **gift of grace** granted to those who become sinless or perfect like God, The Father (Matthew 5:48). To enter **God's seventh day rest you must be faithful to the end and to be able to enter God's rest** (Hebrews 4:9).

The number 'seven' denotes God's **rest** when everyone who repents will enter, whether forgiven 7 times or 7 times 7. Why is 7

times 7 or 70 times 70 so significant? It all has to do with Christ, The Judge at The White Throne Judgment.

## The Jubilee

The Jubilee, one of God's Holy days, occurred every 50th year or after 7 times 7 (Leviticus 25). Forty nine years have elapsed and what does God decree the fiftieth year? **Forgiveness of all debts.** If all debts are forgiven on the 50<sup>th</sup> year and you are to forgive 7 times 7 or even up to 70 times 7, then, as long as the other person repents, they are to be forgiven by God through Christ. You, then, become sinless and can enter God's Seventh Day Rest or be in God's **family kingdom**, because in His **kingdom** there can be no sin. Sin is destroyed by God through His Son, Jesus, The Christ. You, along with all Christians, have a wonderful Father.

You are to continue forgiving transgressions right up to The Jubilee when God will release all your debts by His Son, Jesus. This is The Real Sabbath Rest in God's **kingdom**. It will happen when everyone confesses and all is forgiven. This is at The Time of The New Heaven and New Earth revealed in Revelation 21 and 22. The number 7 reveals **God's Kingdom Rest**. But what is most significant is forgiving 7 times or 7 times 7 or 70 times 7 which brings you to The Jubilee where God forgives everyone.

## Eternal Forgiveness

God never stops forgiveness and that is why after 7 times 7 or even 7 times 70 or 490 years, God is merciful and will always forgive as long as one REPENTS.

That is why Christ told His Apostles whoever they forgive, they themselves will be forgiven in heaven. It isn't that Jesus told His

Apostles they were forgiving sin, but anyone who **repents** will be forgiven. All will be forgiven their sins as long as they RE-PENT and believe in FAITH that God is ALWAYS MERCIFUL and FORGIVING as long as they ask for forgiveness.

The number 7 denotes God's REST or **kingdom** where no sin dwells. Where no sin exists, God dwells and makes His ABODE or HOUSE there.

Whether one asks forgiveness when transgressing 7 times, they are forgiven. Even if they repent 70 times 7 or 490 years, they are forgiven.

In each case the 50<sup>th</sup> year is a Jubilee or Jubilee Year and God forgives ALL DEBTS and everyone. Then they can receive their INHERITANCE OF ETERNAL LIFE. Truly, a GIFT of GRACE from the MERCIFUL ONE, God and His Son. Whether after 7 x 7 or 49 years, The 50<sup>th</sup> Year ushers in release of ALL DEBTS or 490 years of forgiveness, when the TEN JUBILEES' DEBTS ARE FORGIVEN.

That is why Jesus said ALL MANNER of SIN shall be forgiven (Matthew 12:31). Only "the rejection" of God's Holy Spirit is not forgiven. Read the book *The White Throne Judgment* for a complete answer.

GOD ALWAYS FORGIVES THE REPENTANT. It is Christ's job to HEAL or restore that individual (Matthew 13:15). This is the CARDINAL PRINCIPLE God and Christ DECLARE TO MANKIND. God's "**will**" is TO SAVE EVERYONE (I Timothy 2:4). "**The Lord is not slack concerning his PROMISE, as SOME MEN count slackness; but is LONG SUFFERING to US-WARD, BUT THAT ALL SHOULD COME TO REPEN-**

**TANCE**” (II Peter 3:8-9). Can’t be any clearer.

The word “long suffering” in the Greek is “*comotes*” meaning “FORBEARING PATIENTLY.” Just as parents teach a baby to speak, walk, eat or dress themselves – it takes years. Your Father and His Son, Jesus never gives up until God’s “will” is achieved. The number 7 represents God’s **rest** and His sinless **kingdom** where everyone will be IN PARADISE. Paradise can only occur where there is NO SIN. God’s **rest** is about to take place in *The New Testament*. God’s **testament** or “**WILL**” continues with the establishment of *The New Covenant* when God changes His dwelling place or **temple** to a SPIRITUAL TEMPLE where RIGHTEOUSNESS prevails.

God’s **story**, the theme of *The Bible*, continues with Jesus, The Christ. The Mediator of GOD’S “**WILL**” where sin is forgiven and PEACE is established in The New Heaven and New Earth. It is when God “**rests**” or His 7<sup>th</sup> Day where God will do the “**WORK.**”

*The Old Covenant* is weak because of the FLESH and Jesus, in the LAST DAYS, introduces *The New Covenant* from God’s “**will**” as stated in *The New Testament*.

## CHAPTER 20

### OLD AND THE NEW

Many believe *The Gospels*, consisting of *Matthew, Mark, Luke* and *John* begin *The New Covenant*. When Jesus was born and at about age thirty He started His ministry as given to Him by God, His Father. Christ gives you His real reason for coming to the earth and it wasn't only to establish *The New Covenant*.

#### The Commission

When Jesus sent out The Twelve Apostles, He gave them this warning: “**Go NOT into the WAY of the GENTILES, and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not: But go rather to the lost sheep of *The House of Israel***” (Matthew 10:5-6).

When Jesus came He was only to go to The House of Israel. Clearly, Jesus answered the woman of Canaan after His Disciples told Him to send her away. “**I am NOT SENT but unto the LOST SHEEP of the HOUSE OF ISRAEL**” (Matthew 15:24). Jesus did not come to save the world but to RESTORE FIRST THE LOST SHEEP OF THE HOUSE OF ISRAEL. Christ was sent to **prove *The Old Covenant* to Israel**.

Jesus said He came to establish what was LOST. Israel, as God's **chosen witness**, was to be an example to the world as God's **people**. It is through Israel that the knowledge of God was to be known. Jesus came to restore **the path** to The Garden of Eden by

God's witness, Israel (Matthew 18:11). If Judah accepted Jesus as their Messiah, The Millennium would have begun, then and there, with Israel as God's chosen witnesses.

When Christ first came, His purpose was only to preach to Israel even though they were lost. What was He to preach?

## The Gospel

When John was put in prison, Jesus came to preach a particular message. What was that message? Jesus said, "**The TIME is FULFILLED** [completed], **and the Kingdom of God is AT HAND: REPENT ye, and believe the gospel**" (Mark 1:15).

Jesus came to restore God's **kingdom** or *Old Covenant* to Israel only, but not to The Gentiles. This was not *The New Covenant* but *The Old Covenant*.

Christ's commission from God was to restore Israel to *The Old Covenant*. If they only believed, The MILLENNIUM could have started at that time. There would be NO NEED for The MESSIAH to come **the second time**. The ONE THOUSAND YEARS of WORLD PEACE was Christ's **purpose** to be born. Jesus came to forgive sin and to bring WORLD PEACE through Israel's hands. Christ preached, "**The kingdom of God is AT HAND**" or available to Israel right then and there. These were the LAST DAYS with the FOURTH BEAST, Rome, ruling The World. That is why Jesus preached "**The Kingdom is at HAND**" (Mark 1:15).

The Apostles asked Him an important question. That question was, "**Lord, will thou AT THIS TIME RESTORE AGAIN the KINGDOM to ISRAEL**" (Acts 1:6)? This wasn't *The New Covenant* but *The Old Covenant* for Israel to be God's **chosen people**

to the world. They knew Christ came to restore the PHYSICAL KINGDOM to Israel. Notice the answer Jesus gave to His Apostles. **“It is not for you to know the TIMES or the SEASONS, which the Father hath put in his OWN POWER”** (Acts 1:7). Since Christ was born to be able to forgive Israel’s sin, He came for them to REPENT, and if they did, Christ would have restored The Kingdom of God physically and **the millennium** would have started.

## The Curse

After John, The Baptist and Christ fulfilled their ministry to restore The Jews and **the temple** to God, Christ was crucified. Neither John nor Jesus were accepted to restore **the fathers to the children** or **the children to the fathers**. Therefore, The World Curse, according to Malachi 4, had to take place.

Since God gave them 70 years to repent, *The Old Covenant* and *The New Covenant* ran **concurrently**. Notice the Hebrews 8:1-13 **“decree,”** **“For if he [Christ] were on earth, [Paul’s day] he SHOULD NOT BE A PRIEST.”** Why not? **“...Seeing there are priests that offer gifts according to the Law”** (Hebrews 8:4). Then Hebrews 8:6 announces Jesus obtained a more EXCELLENT ministry and that He is the **executor** of a BETTER **covenant** which has greater promises.

What was this *New Covenant* to do that was better? This *New Covenant* was not a bunch of do’s and dont’s like *The Old Covenant*, but to write God’s Laws in **your heart and mind**. *The New Covenant* changes human nature to be SINLESS and allows everyone to inherit **salvation**. A GIFT of GRACE.

Then Paul ends by saying *The Old Covenant* will VANISH. When?



When **the temple** and Priesthood are gone. Remember, Jesus would not be a **priest on earth**. The cardinal point is, as long as **the temple** and The Levitical Priesthood were there, **BOTH covenants** ran **concurrently**. When **the temple** was destroyed in 70 A.D., *The Old Covenant* would VANISH. Until the physical temple was destroyed, the CURSE upon “the work” did NOT GO INTO FORCE.

Until the 70 years had elapsed, as with Judah's first captivity to Babylon, they wouldn't be forgiven. Since Judah refused to accept The Messiah, Christ, after 70 years or 70 A.D., **the curse went into effect** and **the temple** was destroyed.

## **Christ's Ministry**

Jesus, at age 30, started His ministry. This ministry was to restore God's **physical kingdom** to Israel if The Jews would have accepted their Messiah. The One Thousand Years of World Peace would have started as The Millennium.

Now before World Peace could come, the CURSE in Malachi was to take place with **the fall of the temple**. After **the curse** of Matthew 24 concludes, Jesus will **return** and complete His ministry by **stopping the world from complete annihilation**. The Millennium will then take place.

*The Four Gospels* and *Acts* cover The Ministry of Jesus and His Apostles. Now let's explore The Ministry of Christ and His Apostles.

## **Proof Of The New Covenant**

When Jesus was baptized and was approved by God as His Son,

Jesus had a 40-day battle in **the wilderness**, where He was tried and tested by Satan. Christ, in **that temptation**, like any 40-day (or 40-year) trial which God had allowed, was to prove Jesus indeed was The Messiah. He won that battle by living EVERY WORD OF GOD (Matthew 4:4).

Christ had to do everything prophesied for the next 3½ years of His Ministry. Even His Disciples had a hard time accepting Jesus as The Christ. Notice what Jesus had to tell His Disciples after He was resurrected: **“Afterward he appeared unto the eleven as they sat at meat, and UPBRAIDED THEM with their UNBELIEF and HARDNESS of HEART, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen”** (Mark 16:14).

After being with Christ for 3½ years of His Ministry, they still DOUBTED HIM. It is time to study His Ministry for PROOF of His Messiahship.

God’s **“word”** or **“testament”** proved Jesus’ Messiahship and the validity is beyond doubt.

## CHAPTER 21

# THE FOUR GOSPELS

*The Four Gospels* are quite diverse in telling the story of Christ's human existence. This is especially true with *The Gospel of John*. Our purpose is to find out what *The Four Gospels* have to do with the "testament" or "will" of God.

### Synoptic Gospels

Remember, the entire *Bible* is God's "story" about His "will" as administered by Christ. When you study *The New Testament*, you will find that *The New Covenant* and *Old Covenant* ran concurrently till the destruction of the **temple**, where God dwelt. From that point a **spiritual temple** was now God's **house** or **dwelling**.

The *First Three Gospels* are known as SYNOPTIC or similar in describing the human life of Jesus while on earth. John's *Gospel* is totally different than the first three. There is an important SPIRITUAL difference between the three synoptic *Gospels* of *Matthew*, *Mark* and *Luke* as opposed to *The Gospel of John*. Why?

The three synoptic Gospels focus on Israel and *The Old Covenant* in regard to turning the hearts of the children to the fathers, as mentioned in Malachi 4. Also, Christ's commission to cleanse the **temple** and its Priesthood. These *Three Gospels* are all written prior to **the temple's** destruction in 70 A.D.

John's Gospel is presumed to be written as late as 90 A.D., near the

end of The First Century.

## State Of The Temple And Church

There was a time period of 40 years from Christ's ministry when God forgave sin and would restore **the holy temple**. It was The Jew's **time** to be tested and proved just as their fathers were tested **in the wilderness**. However, they failed by rejecting Christ as The Messiah or Savior. In 70 A.D., **the temple was** destroyed, not leaving one stone on another. God no longer dwelt in **an earthly-built house**, but desired, instead, **a spiritual one in each Christian**.

With the **church's body**, each Christian is where God now dwells as His **temple** (Hebrews 3). What happened to **the church** at its birth on The Day of Pentecost? You are now about to be set on a **Christian spiritual journey** in *The New Testament* to **prove** an extremely important **spiritual truth**. Is Jesus The Christ? That is "the important question." It is also the same question Jesus asked Peter in Matthew 16:15-17. "**But, whom say ye that I am?**" This is the very battle Jesus had with Satan during the forty days in **the wilderness**, **which** Satan asked of Christ (Matthew 4:3). It has been the question asked from the beginning of His birth. Is Jesus, The Christ or The Anointed One? (Jesus is spelled and pronounced "Yeshua" in Hebrew). The question over and over again was Jesus, **the son of Joseph**, The Real Messiah?

Is Jesus The Messiah, **the promised seed, who will forgive all sins and bring world peace?** You need to find out if *The New Testament* answers this question. Notice Christ's statement before He ascended to heaven to sit on the right hand of God, The Father. Jesus told Thomas, "**Because thou has seen me, thou has believed; blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have**

**believed**” (John 20:29).

Do you comprehend the wonderful statement Jesus made? Christ told **doubting Thomas** it was great for him to believe in Him, but there is a **blessing given to those who have not seen Him and yet believe**. A special reward goes to those who personally were not alive to see the human life of Christ. This includes all Christians who had not been alive when He was on this earth, including those who were alive but never laid eyes on Him.

This is the **ultimate question for the world**. Is Jesus The True Messiah or Savior of The World? If not, **the world** is in sin and, therefore, must die. *The New Testament* will definitely answer the question if Jesus is “Yeshua,” The Messiah.

*The Gospel of Matthew*, as well as the other two synoptic gospels, was written between 58 to 63 A.D. This left SEVEN years before **the temple’s** destruction. Why were these three gospels written before **the temple’s** destruction?

The oldest **gospel** was written by Mark for a very good reason. Matthew, however, was **the first gospel** in *The New Testament*. Why? Matthew was a publican or tax collector who followed Jesus as an Apostle. He was quite well-off and had feasts at his home and he kept very good records.

Remember *The New Testament* was a continuum of God’s “will” which proves Jesus is The Christ or Messiah. Tradition has said that Matthew had written this **gospel** originally in Hebrew. Why? Tradition relates he also wrote the text in Greek as well. Again, why?

Why was *The Gospel* written at all? How does Matthew begin?

## The Abrahamic Covenant

To many, it is fatiguing to have to read all the genealogy. But this *Gospel of Matthew* starts with David and Abraham and their genealogy. Abraham was given the PROMISE that The SAVIOR would come from his seed or progeny (Hebrews 11:13). Also King David was promised that from his seed a King would always exist to **SIT ON HIS THRONE** (II Samuel 23:5). Abraham had **a contract** from God. The Abrahamic **covenant** promised salvation through Isaac and His progeny, which promised rulership or God's **kingdom**.

Now you can understand why Matthew **is the first gospel** in *The New Testament*. It proves who The Savior of The World will be and who will be The King over God's **kingdom**. This is why the genealogy starts with Abraham, **the father of the faithful**.

This *Gospel of Matthew* had to be written to PROVE Jesus Christ was The Messiah through the genealogy. **“So all the generations from Abraham to David are FOURTEEN [2x7] generations; and from David until the carrying away into Babylon are FOURTEEN generations; and from the carrying away unto Babylon unto Christ are FOURTEEN generations (Matthew 1:17).**

Matthew wrote **the first gospel** to LEGALLY prove Jesus was The Christ. He was **the promised seed** in both Abraham's **time** and King David's **time**. He was The Savior of The World and The King of Kings in God's **kingdom** (Genesis 41:32).

The seventh year is the year of rest, God's **rest** (Hebrews 3 and 4), and two sevens or fourteen years substantiates it is of God. The first fourteen years proves Abraham and David received **the cov-**

**enants of promise.** The second, David to The Babylonian captivity was fourteen or 2x7 when Judah returns to rebuild **the temple** and then from **the temple restoration to Christ is fourteen generations** to prove Jesus is The Messiah on a legal basis.

Each of these generations is not necessarily all the children of each father's progeny but only those generations who prove Jesus is **the promised seed** or The Messiah. Matthew gives LEGAL status to Jesus as The Christ, appointed by God to fulfill **the promise** made to David and Abraham.

That is why *The Book of Matthew* ends with The Jews where the Roman authority set up guards so no one could steal Christ's body from the grave, which if He was raised, would have proved Jesus was The Christ (Matthew 28:12-15). His Disciples were then told to **witness this gospel to the world**, so those who did not witness His life on earth would BELIEVE.

## **Lack Of Faith**

*The Gospels* reveal a lack of FAITH on the part of those who were with Jesus at the time of His EARTHLY ministry. **Even Mary Magdalene**, from whom He cast out seven demons, didn't believe Jesus was **resurrected**. After Mary told His Apostles (who were given power to heal people and cast-out demons) they also did not believe Christ was resurrected. Here is what they thought when Mary told them: "**And they, when they HAD HEARD that He was ALIVE and had been seen of her, BELIEVED NOT**" (Mark 16:11).

The Apostles had seen numerous miracles of healings, plus **the resurrection to life** from those who had died, and still they couldn't believe He was **resurrected**. Each of *The Four Gos-*

*pels* of Christ's life manifests the lack of belief or FAITH in The Messiah.

Once again Jesus declared He is **The WAY, The TRUTH and The LIFE**. Then He said no man can come to The FATHER but **BY ME** (John 14:5-6).

Then Philip asked Jesus to show them The Father, so it would suffice them. Christ knowing their lack of FAITH told them how they could believe. After Jesus reminded them if they had SEEN HIM and saw Christ living His life, then they would HAVE SEEN THE FATHER. They were both "**one**." Christ said The FATHER DWELLS IN THE SON. They were exactly alike (Hebrews 1:1-2). "**Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? He that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father? Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me**" (John 14:8-10)? Hebrews 1:1-2 states that God speaks to you in these LAST DAYS by The Son. When Jesus speaks, it is as if God, The Father was speaking to you. That is why John 6:29 declares God's "**work**" is to believe on Him whom God has sent. When Christ speaks those "**words**" they are the very WORDS OF GOD. Jesus is **THE WORD OF GOD** (John 1:1 and Deuteronomy 18:18). *The Gospels* were written especially for those in the future, to REVEAL JESUS WAS GOD'S "WORK" and was truly THE MESSIAH.

Finally, Jesus knowing they hadn't received God's Holy Spirit told His followers, including Philip the following: "**Believe thou not that I AM IN THE FATHER, and the FATHER IN ME?...or ELSE believe ME for the VERY WORKS SAKE**" (John 14:10). Christians are God's **temple** where God DWELLS. God does not



DWELL in EARTHLY TEMPLES but in a SPIRITUAL ONE. Christians are God's **temple** where God DWELLS "**in them.**"

This is the lesson Jesus was teaching Philip and the rest of The Apostles. They hadn't as yet received The Holy Spirit which would have led them to TRUTH (John 12:17). Christ asked them to believe "**the works**" they saw Him do. For unconverted people it is a SIGN which makes them believe.

Once you repent and are teachable, then with God's Holy Spirit, God will reveal HIS WORD. Then you can make a truthful choice based upon FACTS. Until then **the life** of Christ reveals The MESSIAH by the MIRACLES or signs He left. Now you have the REASON God had *The GOSPELS* written.

*The Gospel of Matthew* establishes the LEGAL right Jesus had through Abraham and David. All the miracles He performed prove His Messiahship to the UNBELIEVER, and Christ's **life** proves to Christians by His "**words,**" He is indeed, THE SON OF GOD.

*The FOUR GOSPELS* do MANIFEST Jesus is The SON OF GOD, your MESSIAH. *The Bible* theme has **biblically** come to the place that a people MORE WORTHY than The Israelites or The Jews will accept The Christ. They will REPENT and accept The Christ and be CALLED to be WITNESSES of THE WORD OF GOD.

Here is how *The Fourth Gospel of John* ends: "**And there are also MANY OTHER THINGS which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one I suppose that even the WORLD itself could not CONTAIN the books that SHOULD BE WRITTEN. AMEN**" (John 21:25).

With *The New Testament*, Jesus is directly administrating *The Tes-*

*tament* of The Father. Every “**word**” reveals the WAY TO SALVATION. Satan’s purpose is to **DISPROVE** Jesus is The Son of God. The battle between Christ and Satan is the same. Is Jesus God’s Son and does *The Bible*, God’s “**word**,” prove it?

*The Gospel of Mark* continues the proof for **the unconverted** and **the converted**. The choice is yours.

## CHAPTER 22

### LUKE AND ACTS

Jesus was asked, “Are **THERE FEW** that be saved?” (Luke 13:23). Christ answered, “Strive to enter in at the strait gate [New Jerusalem]: for **MANY**, [world Christianity] I say unto you, **WILL SEEK TO ENTER IN, and shall NOT BE ABLE**” (Luke 13:24).

Christ prophesied the Christian movement “to come” with its result. After 3½ years of His Ministry there were only 120 true followers of The Messiah (Acts 1:15). *The Gospel of Luke* is written from a true Christian point of view. A few did follow Jesus and regarded Him as the real Son of God.

#### Most Blinded

Near the conclusion of Christ’s earthly ministry to restore Israel to the **kingdom**, He turns to a nation more worthy than The Jews. Here is His answer to those who rejected Him as The Messiah. Now Jesus would turn from The Jews to those who believed He was The Son of God. Christ declared, “**Behold, your house** [temple] **is left unto you DESOLATE: and verily I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until the *time* come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord**” (Luke 13:35). This foretells the fall of Judah and **the temple**.

The transition from *The Old Covenant* made with Israel was now going to include people who were **MORE WORTHY** than The

Jews (Matthew 21:48). Who are they (Matthew 21:43)?

## **Peter Opens The Kingdom**

Jesus made Peter the one who had the keys to **the kingdom** (Matthew 16:18-19). Peter was the one who was used to open the gates to God's heavenly **kingdom** when Cornelius, The Gentile Roman Centurion Soldier, was converted.

Jesus, just before He died, rejected The Jews and they were not allowed to restore King David's **kingdom**. **The temple** would be destroyed and **a new covenant** was to take place but by comparison only a few would truly accept Jesus as The Messiah. With the destruction of **the temple**, Malachi's "**world curse**" began. Now Israel would have to wait for the second coming of The Messiah. Only the few out of the world would even have the FAITH to follow Jesus. Read the parable of the sower and the seed in Matthew 13. Only some take **hold in fertile soil** and bear FRUIT as **witnesses** of Christ, while the rest are deceived (Matthew 24:5).

Peter, after hearing the centurion, said, "**Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: But in EVERY NATION he that fears [honor] Him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him**" (Act 10:34-35).

The individuals accepted, are those from all nations such as Israel, Judah and The Gentile nations who had highly honored God as their Father and did strive for **righteousness**, so they are considered more worthy. Plain and simple, those of any nation who believe Jesus and what He said shall be saved. This is *The New Covenant* in a nutshell.

Luke, as Paul's companion, scribe and physician, knew every-

thing about Christ and Christianity. *Luke's Gospel* confirms what real Christianity is. Notice Luke's reason for writing his version of Christ, The Son of God. Luke wrote **this gospel** about 60 A.D. when Christian **churches** were already having a diversity of beliefs. The original Apostles would all be dead within the next few years, except The Apostle John. The destruction of **the temple** where **The Jewish Christians** and **Apostles** worshipped God would be destroyed within ten short years. Christianity needed **the truth** about The Son of God.

Luke wrote this **gospel** to a person called EXCELLENT THEOPHILUS. The name "Theophilus" comes from two Greek words "Theo-God" and "philus-love." Luke wrote to a person who was a "**lover of God.**" Perhaps this may be a synonym of all "lovers" of God.

Here is Luke's clear purpose for writing his *gospel*: "**For as much as many have taken in hand to set in order a declaration of those things WHICH ARE MOST SURELY BELIEVED AMONG US, even as they DELIVERED THEM UNTO US, which from the beginning were EYEWITNESSES and MINISTERS of "the Word" [Christ]. It seemed good to me also, ,having had PERFECT UNDERSTANDING OF ALL THINGS from the VERY FIRST, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus. That those mightiest know the certainty of those things wherein thou hast been instructed**" (Luke 1:1-4).

*Matthew's Gospel* proved the **legal right** of Christ to be The True Messiah and restore **the kingdom**. *Mark's Gospel* with Malachi proves that He came to restore The Torah and *The Old Covenant* or the earth would be cursed.

Each *gospel* has its direct purpose for being written, but the **three**

*synoptic gospels* have similar history and speak about the same events, but each *gospel* does add specific additions to these events which addresses their different specific purpose. The **FOURTH Gospel of John** is not a **gospel** as the other three. John was different because the first three occurred before the destruction of **the temple** when Christians fled Jerusalem as Jesus told them to do in Matthew 24. In *The Gospel of John*, *The Old Covenant* ceased with the end of **the temple**. *John's Gospel* addresses *The New Covenant* on a **SPIRITUAL BASIS**. Realize when you read *John's Gospel* he covered the story in a spiritual order.

Each **gospel** addresses a specific purpose and order. Matthew shows Christ as the **LEGAL HEIR**. Mark relates **PROPHECY** while Luke shows **A WAY OF LIFE**. All three synoptic gospels prove Jesus is **the legitimate** Son of God, genealogically, prophetically and the **WAY HE LIVED** by His works to the unconverted. Whether you are a true Christian with God's Spirit or spiritually **BLIND**, the **VERY WORKS** of Jesus prove He is The Messiah.

## **Satan's Battle**

Satan's desire is to **CREATE DOUBT** that Jesus is Yeshua, The Christ, the **VERY SON OF GOD** (Matthew 4:3). That is why God had to write in His "TESTIMONY" or "WILL" who was The **PROMISED SEED** and The Mediator of God's "Will." Jesus was sinless, but also had to prove **IN FAITH** He was The Son of God by **HIS WORKS**. That is why *the gospels* had to be written. **To prove He was GOD'S VERY SON**. History, from the birth of Jesus Christ to this present day, has always challenged whether He is truly God's Son.

Today, a barrage of attacks are focused to deny Jesus is The Messiah. Satan has not changed his tactics from the **BEGINNING**.

You will see the REST OF THE SCRIPTURES continually deal with this problem. Christian's role and FAITH ALL FOCUS on the same question. Is JESUS the very SON OF GOD and The TRUE MESSIAH? He is The EXECUTOR of GOD'S "WILL" to save the world (I John 4:14). Christ was FAITHFUL and He was The Son of God as a WITNESS (Revelation 1:5). Now with His death a NEW WITNESS comes upon the scene.

## Acts

Luke wrote *The Book of Acts* just as he wrote *the gospel* which bears his name. Just before Jesus left His Apostles after teaching them for forty days, they asked Him when God would restore **the kingdom** to Israel. They thought this event would take place soon since Christ had paid for the world's sins.

Read Acts 1. At this point, they did not have God's Holy Spirit to guide them to the **truth**. Jesus told them God would restore **the kingdom** by God's decision when "**the time was right**." They did not, at that time, GRASP the CURSE UPON THE WORLD which was to come. Then Jesus gave them a COMMISSION.

Since the world was now CURSED because **the world** (Rome) and Christ's own people (Jews) denied He was GOD'S SON, The APOSTLES and all CHRISTIANS must become witnesses.

From the time of Christ to the time He will **return** all peoples who repent must be "**the witnesses**." That is Christianity! "**But ye shall receive POWER, after that the Holy Ghost [Spirit] is come upon you: and ye shall be WITNESSES UNTO ME both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the UTMOST PART OF THE EARTH**" (Acts 1:8). This is one of the best verses describing what a CHRISTIAN is or should be.

Christians are to **think**, **behave** and **do** what Christ did. That is the MIND OF CHRIST and having Christ “in you” (Philemon 2:5 and Colossians 1:27).

Christianity is not a RELIGION but a WAY OF LIFE, following Christ's LIFE. That is the responsibility Jesus gave to His Apostles, but, also to you and all Christians.



## CHAPTER 23

### THE OLD TO THE NEW TEACHING

**The Book of Acts holds far more than just EARLY CHURCH HISTORY. Acts is the “history of change” from The Old Covenant to The New Covenant so Christianity could repent and have their human nature changed so they can WITNESS CHRIST TO THE WORLD (Acts 1:8). That is why The Book of Acts ends with Paul in Rome during his first imprisonment. Paul had to witness Christ by covering the known world so Paul witnessed in Rome. Rome was the fourth world ruler which was the last beast in Daniel.**

#### **Christianity – A Jewish Sect**

Just before The Feast of Pentecost, there were only 120 followers of Christ. So very few believed all of Christ’s miracles. At this time, Judas Iscariot was replaced by Matthias. The 120 included Jews as well as other converts from all parts of The Roman World. The Jews were **religiously divided** with **the teachings** of The Pharisees, who believed in a **resurrection** while The Sadducees did not. Likewise, The Essenes, who were a very isolated sect along with many other sects. The Jews had differing denominations just as they do today. This is the **history of world religion**. It is why God calls it Babylon or “**confusion**.”

Christianity was considered a new sect of The Jews. At this point they were all waiting for The Messiah to restore **the kingdom**

to Israel. All looked to deliverance from the FOURTH BEAST prophesied in Daniel. The Apostles with the followers were waiting for Jesus to **return** as well. They knew they were in the last days.

When The Holy Spirit fell upon the followers “**as of fire**,” Peter stood up and preached. All of them spoke in the different languages of the people. This was a **sign of tongues** which God had given The Apostles. It was given, so when necessary, The Apostles were able, **with this gift of tongues**, to speak in the languages of the individuals who had come from distant and different lands. God was calling some of these unbelievers or unconverted by this miraculous gift which made them understand in their own language (I Corinthians 14:22). They were probably amazed to hear God's “**word**” and may have been willing to listen because they were hearing *The Gospel* spoken in their own language. For them to even bother to listen to Peter was due to hearing and understanding The Gospel of Christ in their own languages. This indeed was a **miracle** from God. This gift was given so **the unbelieving** would understand the truth (I Corinthians 14).

Paul, as The Apostle to The Gentiles, spoke in many foreign languages to be able to reach everyone (I Corinthians 14:18). Remember, **signs** are for “**the unbelieving**” and those who “**LACK FAITH**” so they will be amazed at God's powers (I Corinthians 14:22).

That one sermon of Peter ended with three thousand being baptized. From this point Christianity continued to grow rapidly. However, this new growth was causing a Jewish phenomenon which considered another denomination waiting for The Messiah and **the restoration** of the **kingdom**. *The Old Covenant* under Moses, which **was added** to The Torah which was preached, meant the

followers of Christ were known as Messianic Jews. Everyone had to be **circumcised** and keep The Law.

### **James, The Just**

**James**, Christ's oldest brother, **became the head of the family** when Jesus died. When Jesus died, James, as the next firstborn, became the family's overseer or bishop. As a family head, he was "**a church elder**" and as Christ's brother became The Bishop or overseer of The Jerusalem Church.

James, Peter and John became **PILLARS** in **the church**. James was highly respected and was called James, The Just because he was meticulous in following The Torah. James was, also, honored by The Sanhedrin and by the other **priests**.

All followers of Jesus were keepers of The Law of Moses, *The Old Covenant*, with all The Holy Days of God as well as worshippers in **the temple**. As long as **the temple** stood The Levitical Priesthood and *Old Covenant* remained (Hebrews 8:4-13).

All were Jews or proselytes who were circumcised. All were worshippers in **the temple**. The Gentiles were known as **MES-SIANIC JEWS** or followers of Jesus as The Christ. Remember, The Apostles were first commissioned to be witnesses of Jesus in Jerusalem and Judah (Acts 4:33, Acts 5:14-16 and Acts 5:42). In fact, many of **the other Priests** turned to Jesus as The Christ (Acts 6:7).

The believing Jews and proselytes (Gentiles) were isolated from the rest of the world. They couldn't even socialize together and hold festive meals. Everyone had to be circumcised to be a brother, or so they thought. The **promise** was to Judah or Israelites and

proselytes only. It was like most present-day denominations, you were either IN OR OUT. Membership was all based upon physical “**works**” such as circumcision. *The Old Covenant* as administered by Moses was to be strictly followed. However, **each sect**, in the varied groups had varied beliefs like The Pharisees, Sadducees and The Essenes. The Messianic Jews had their own beliefs and their own form of structure. All attended **the temple** and local **synagogues**. They were believers of *The Old Covenant* which included The Apostles and their followers. They all religiously kept The Law.

## The Dispersion

Of all the deacons, Stephen stood up in the **synagogue** and preached about Christ. He told them, they had ignorantly crucified The Son of God. Those who didn't believe in Jesus became irate and stoned him to death. A man called SAUL stood by holding Stephen's clothes as they stoned him to death, but Stephen's reply was, “**Lord lay not this sin to their charge**” and then he died (Acts 7). This act produced a great persecution in The Jerusalem Church and they fled to Judea and Samaria. Only The Apostles remained in Jerusalem (Acts 8:1).

## The Gospel Spreads

Mark called his gospel *The Gospel of Jesus Christ*. It is the exact message Christ commissioned to His Apostles in Acts 1:8. Jerusalem, after hearing “the word” rejected Christ. **Persecution** doesn't really work, but when you hit bottom, it does allow “**believers to manifest their FAITH.**”

At this time, *The Gospel of Christ* was ready to penetrate Judea and Samaria. For about twenty years The Jews persecuted The

Messianic Jews. It was not for doctrinal purposes, as *The Old Covenant* was still in force and worship in **the temple** was continued with everyone in attendance. Everything stayed the same, but what was rejected was Jesus, as The Christ.

## **Saul Becomes Paul**

From Acts 7, 8 and 9 you can read of Saul, who was a zealot and violently opposed to the followers of Christ. On his way to Damascus to imprison Christians he miraculously is called to be an APOSTLE to The Gentiles by a vision sent directly from Jesus. The word "APOSTOLIS" in Greek means "one sent." The "one sent" must be directly called by Jesus for him to be an Apostle. They must, also, do the signs and wonders just as Christ did (II Corinthians 12). The commission as an APOSTLE **cannot be passed on but can only be one directly chosen by Christ**, Himself. Paul was an example of this.

No longer is his name Saul, The Zealot, but now he was to be known as Paul, "**the worker**," which is how the word "Paul" is defined in Greek. The stage is set for the calling of The GENTILES into The Church of God. What is the next major event in *Acts*? The remaining eleven Apostles had to cast lots so Matthias was chosen to replace Judas (Acts 1:23).

## **Peter, The Key Keeper**

Acts 10 and 11 reveals the **apostolic commission** must now go to The Gentiles. Peter, with **the keys to the kingdom**, opens the door of Christianity to **Cornelius**, The Centurion Gentile. Peter defines those whom God accepts as more worthy than The Jews, who rejected Christ. God accepts all peoples; Jew or Gentile who TRULY fear Him and want to SEEK RIGHTEOUSNESS, how-

ever, not the human form of self-righteousness. Not that type of “**foolish righteousness**” **but the righteousness of Christ** (Job 40:8). Now Paul seems to take pre-eminence in *The Book of Acts*. Not because he was greater than the other Apostles but he was The Apostle to The Gentiles and was ready to go to the entire known world.

## The World

What is meant by “**the world?**” There were many other humans on earth besides The Roman Empire. Why, then, is **the world** viewed from the perspective of Rome? It all has to do with PROPHECY.

In *Daniel* there are only **four world ruling empires**. No one has conquered the world since. In addition these four world ruling empires, according to prophecy in *Daniel* and *Revelation*, come out of the sea which is The Mediterranean Sea. They are **the four kingdoms** of **Babylon** – Media, Persia, Greece and Rome and did come forth from The Mediterranean Sea. The **FOURTH BEAST** is the worst and a composite of the first three – lion, bear and a leopard and is full of violence. They carry The Mark of The Beast carrying the number 666 (in *The Book of Daniel* and in *Revelation 13*).

This fourth beast is Rome or its **IMAGE** which Christ will destroy when He returns. But, before Christ's **second coming**, because of **the world's curse**, He will intervene at Armageddon to save the **WORLD** from **SUICIDE**. That is why *The Bible* refers to “**the world**” as The Roman Empire or as **IT'S IMAGE**. When Jesus **returns**, the world will look like or be as The **ROMAN EMPIRE** – **VERY VIOLENT!** Paul was now ready to fulfill his calling and ministry. From Acts 13 to 20 Paul spreads *The Gospel of*

*Christ* to The Gentile **world** until his first imprisonment.

## **A Great Doctrinal Change**

You will see doctrine can and does change. God's "testimony" to **save the world** through His Son, Jesus by making humans Holy and **perfect** like God **never changes**. The **covenants** or **contracts** to achieve **salvation** can and do change. God's **purpose** is to **save the world** (1 John 4:14). God does what HE "WILLS" as stated in I Timothy 2:4. It gives God great pleasure to do His "will" because God is full of love and gets great joy from giving (I John 4:8).

## **The Three Names**

The change from *The Old Covenant* to *The New Covenant* caused Christians to be known or called by three different terms.

## **Sect Of The Nazarenes**

The Jews with their leaders called The Christians, a sect of The Nazarenes. Since The Jews rejected Jesus as The Messiah, they called all Jews who believed in Christ, The Messiah as **Nazarenes**. Why? Because Jesus was from Nazareth and Joseph, as His human father, they referred to the followers of Jesus as The Nazarenes.

When Christ died and his brother James replaced Jesus as the head of the family (after Joseph died), James became the elder son and therefore Bishop or overseer of The Jerusalem Church.

James, "The Just," so named because he strictly adhered to The Law, *The Old Covenant*. The Jews rejecting Jesus as Their Mes-

siah, therefore, recognized the followers of Jesus as another Jewish sect calling them The Sect of The Nazarenes (Acts 24:5).

## Messianic Jews

Christians within their own community were called Messianic Jews. These were Jews who followed The Law zealously and believed in Jesus as The Messiah (Acts 21:20).

## Christians

The Churches of God, as long as they only included Jews or Israelites (that is “**circumcised**” Gentiles) keeping The Law, call themselves Messianic Jews to this very day.

A momentous event was about to take place. God was going to accept The Gentiles, who were rejected before from “**The Commonwealth of Israel**” unless they became proselytes.

Now, God, by The Holy Spirit, was changing His dwelling place from **the earthly temple** to **a spiritual temple**. God would no longer dwell in a physical temple but **within each Christian's** “human” temple (Hebrews 3:1-6). This was the change from *The Old Covenant* to *The New Covenant*. Once God's Holy Spirit dwells in each Christian, whether Jew or Gentile without physical works, but with **faith**, they are all Disciples of Christ and known as Christians or **followers** of Christ (Acts 11:26).

## What Is A Sect?

- 1 **Sects were allowed and accepted within the Christian community. In Greek, the word for “SECT” is “HERESIS” or “one who spiritually disagrees.”**



**However when a “sect” becomes “schismatic” then, after the second admission they must be rejected. To be “SCHISMATIC” the purpose is “to cause division” or “separation.”**

Being of a differing point of view “**spiritually**” or “**doctrinally**” does not put one out of the church. Only if one breaks the commandments and literally sins, can put you out of “the church.” Spiritual growth is a process and the whole church must BE FREE to grow spiritually. Only those who intend to divide the church are, therefore, causing a SCHISM in the church so, those individuals must be excluded from the whole. That is why The Jews accepted The Messianic Jews who believed in Jesus like The Pharisees and Sadducees; although one group believed in a resurrection while the other didn't. They were all still, in the brotherhood or congregation of Israel.

- 2 **Within The Christian community was a SECT of The Pharisees who accepted Jesus, as God's Son, The Messiah and were called The Messianic Jews.**

## **Old Wine To New Wine**

After the death of Stephen, The Jews **persecuted the church** which spread The Gospel to The Gentile areas. They went as far as Southern Turkey (today) and especially Antioch where the followers of **Jesus** were first called **Christians** (Acts 8:4 and Acts 11:19-26). Why were they called Christians?

In Acts 11:20-21 while only speaking to The Jews in Antioch, some Greeks were present and a **great number believed**. Peter had already opened the door to The Gentiles through Cornelius, The Gentile Centurion. Peter also learned *The Gospel* about Jesus

as The Son of God which was to be preached only to The Jews but now was changing. Now God is completing Christ's commission to go to **the world** (Acts 1:8).

A **change of doctrine** is transpiring. God's **chosen people**, Israel, now included The Gentiles without The Letter of The Law. Peter said God now accepts all people as long as they fear (or honor) God and **SEEK RIGHTEOUSNESS** (Acts 10:35).

No longer are they **Messianic Jews** who are of The **Sect** of The **Nazarenes** (Jesus and James) but they are now called **Christians**.

Speaking of The Greeks in Antioch, "**And the HAND of the Lord was with them and a great multitude believed, and turned unto the Lord**" (Acts 11:21). Gentiles became Christians in a **new way**. *The New Covenant* was going from The Old Wine to The New. The Jews, liking The Old Wine, *The Old Covenant*, found it difficult to enter *The New Covenant*. That is why God, only, opened the hearts of "**the remnant**" of Israel (Romans 11).

Remember, The Ten Lost Tribes, called Israel were scattered into **all nations and lost their identity**. **Eventually they were interpersed in all the lands and were known as The Gentiles**.

## Acts 15

Certain Messianic Jews came down from Jerusalem and declared The Gentiles, as other proselytes to their religion, had to be circumcised and keep The Law (Acts 15:5). These Messianic Jews were a pharisaical **SECT** in the brotherhood now called Christians. The Apostles and **elders** of the church came together to discuss the matter. After much disputing, Peter rose and declared how God used him to convert a Gentile, Cornelius, without circumcision or following The Law.

Then Peter said that God gave Cornelius and his household The Holy Spirit without any of the “works.” It was God’s Holy Spirit which Peter said made them a part of The Commonwealth of Israel **without any of the requirements** of The Law.

James, as Bishop of Jerusalem, declared since God gave His Holy Spirit without the “deeds” or the “works” of The Law that no further requirement should be placed upon The Gentile Christians.

This was a major DOCTRINAL CHANGE. Now with so many Gentiles coming into **the church**, The Jerusalem Church decreed Gentiles did not have to be circumcised or keep The Law (Acts 15:24). The Jerusalem Church accepted Gentiles, who were converted with God’s Holy Spirit, **to only abstain from meats offered to idols and not eat blood or things strangled and keep from fornication.**

Though twenty years had passed since Jesus died, *The Old Covenant* with The Jews was in force. **The temple** was still a place of worship. All Jews were still committed to *The Old Covenant*. Now God revealed *The New Covenant* was beginning with The Gentiles. God gave His Holy Spirit to them without the stipulation that they must be circumcised or had to keep The Law. Paul did not bother The Jews concerning the “**works**” or the “**deeds**” of The Law. He only preached **salvation** without the “works” of The Law, only to The Gentiles. So, The Jews no longer persecuted Christians.

## **Paul’s Imprisonment**

Paul, after his trips to The Gentile communities, decided to come back to Jerusalem and was attacked. James warned him and suggested he join the other Jews who were doing the “works” of The Law **while they were under a vow**. Paul joined them and followed The Law but that wasn’t good enough for Paul’s enemies. Paul’s adversaries said

when Paul was preaching to The Gentiles, The Jews were there as well. While The Jews were present Paul told them to forsake Moses and not to circumcise their children or follow the customs of The Law (Acts 21:21). It wasn't Paul preaching *The New Covenant* to The Gentiles but that The Jews were, also, there during Paul's preaching. That was the problem. Paul was taken prisoner, accused and finally sent to Rome for trial where he had to stay for two years.

God had decreed that Paul should go to the headquarters of the FOURTH BEAST (in Daniel) and preach to them. In fact, it was during these two years Paul preached to the household of The Emperor and some of them were converted.

*The Book of Acts* concludes with Paul's first imprisonment preaching to **the fourth beast** with a few more converted.

The transition from *The Old Covenant* to The New was witnessed to Jerusalem, Judea, Samaria and now the uttermost parts of the earth just as Christ commissioned His Disciples (Acts 1:8).

## CHAPTER 24

# JOHN'S SPIRITUAL GOSPEL

**John's Gospel is not synoptic as *Matthew, Mark and Luke*. The synoptic Gospels prove that Jesus is a legal son of Abraham and David. Prophecy, also, substantiates it, as well as, what true Christians believe. The *other Gospel* follows a chronology whereas *John's Gospel* doesn't. Why not?**

### God And Christ Work Daily

John 2 introduces Jesus making wine at The Cana Wedding. This is when Christ turns water into wine. Later Jesus enters **the temple** and casts out the money changers for corrupting God's place of worship. John's gospel now concentrates upon the new spiritual covenant. The **temple** had been destroyed in 70 A.D. Remember, John's Gospel was written after the temple was destroyed.

Chronologically, this **temple** event does not occur until the end of Christ's ministry. John's purpose is all about SALVATION and the work Christ and His Father do. Chronology is not the purpose, but spiritual growth and how He and God do The Work of Salvation.

John, The Baptist then gives you the answer concerning the miracle of making water into wine.

John 3:29 states, "**He that hath the BRIDE is the BRIDE-GROOM: but the FRIEND [Best Man] of the bridegroom,**

**which standeth and heareth him, rejoices greatly because of the bridegroom's voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled."**

The Cana marriage "**miracle**" introduces the new wine, "*The New Covenant*" as a miracle that Christ performs or does "**the work.**" John declares Jesus is The Bridegroom and John, The Baptist rejoices over "**the voice**" of The Bridegroom. Why? Because Christ's "**work**" is to marry His Bride, "**the church,**" which is His **body.** Read Ephesians 5:22-32.

Remember Jesus changes the water into wine. Ephesians declares Christ cleanses **the church,** His **body,** by the washing of the water of "**the word.**" How does He cleanse His Bride by spilling His **blood,** represented by The New Wine or *The New Covenant*? The miraculous "works" Jesus did as a sign to UNBELIEVERS all carried a **spiritual message of** the real WORKS Christ came to do.

## **The Cana Miracle**

At the wedding feast Jesus asked for the servants to bring jars filled with water. These jars were for purification to enter **the temple** where God dwelt. Once the water was turned into wine, the governor or the one in charge of the feast, declared that most people liked the old wine because it tastes better, but Christ's miracle of the new wine was, indeed, far better.

This wedding miracle **spiritually** portrays Jesus as The Bridegroom at His Wedding of His Bride. This better wine was *The New Covenant* as opposed to *The Old Covenant.* It seems people preferred the old wine.

Each miracle, especially in John's Gospel, has **great spiritual**

**significance.** This wedding miracle is recorded only in John's *Gospel* and not the other three. The reason being John's *Gospel* covers Christ's **spiritual purpose**.

After the wedding you find Jesus in **the temple** in Jerusalem. Even though this event doesn't occur before His last Passover, John's *Gospel* has His **temple event** close to the **miracle** of changing water into wine. Why? Jesus becomes furious when He sees His Father's **house, the temple**, corrupted in order to make money. He casts out the money changers.

The reason these events, **the wedding** and **the corruption of the temple**, are together is, spiritually, these two occurrences complement each other.

John, The Baptist announces Jesus is The Bridegroom and at The Cana Wedding gives a sign that The Bridegroom has come to announce a *New Marriage Covenant*. Therefore, turning the water to wine shows this new wine is better than *The Old Covenant*. Christ then goes to **the house** where God dwells and finds it is **corrupted**. Jesus came as **The Bridegroom** and finds His **Bride**, Judah, had transgressed His Father's house where **the wedding** is to take place. This is the **spiritual significance** which takes place in the beginning of John's *Gospel* (John 1-3).

## **The Samaritan Woman**

The next event in John 4 is with the Samaritan woman but again it is not in chronological order as **The Synoptic Gospel**, but **in the spiritual order** as Jesus fulfilled **His spiritual ministry**.

In summary, John, The Baptist announces the coming of Jesus as The Bridegroom. Christ performs the miracle at Cana and chases

out the money changers for corrupting **The House** of His Father. Judah has corrupted herself with an **agreement** made with **the fourth beast**, Rome, in a treaty with Julius Caesar in 67-70 B.C. This, not only allowed Rome to rule over them but their religion also.

Judah, as part of The Roman Empire, now allows Rome to accept control over them by appointing Herod as King and the **high priest** in **the temple**. Judah, God's people, were to be God's **righteous witnesses** to the world, but they were joined with the fourth beast of Daniel 2.

So, Jesus turns to another nation. Christ relates a parable in Matthew 21:32-43 when He reveals The Jews did not believe John, The Baptist and never repented, so He gave this parable. God has a vineyard and left it in care of the stewards. They continually corrupted the vineyard, so God kept sending servants or Prophets for the care of His vineyard. Then, they killed The Prophets, so as a last resort, God sent His only Son and they killed Him as well.

Because Judah has not witnessed **righteousness**, but instead unrighteousness by bribery and corruption, they are under the curse of Malachi. **“Therefore say I unto you, The Kingdom of God shall be taken from you [Judah], and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof”** (Matthew 21:43).

Jesus turns to The Samaritans. Why The Samaritans and not The Gentiles? Remember, the capitol of The Ten Lost Tribes is in Samaria and The Ten Lost Tribes called Israel were taken captive by Assyria.

Once in Assyria, The Ten Lost Tribes of Israel are mixed into all the Gentile nations. Then while in captivity, among The Gentiles,



they eventually lose their identity as Israelites. They no longer knew they were The Bride. That is why Jesus turned to Samaria, the old Israelite capitol, which was now composed mostly of Gentiles. Christ meets a Samaritan woman at the well who was married 5 times and Jesus tells her that her present husband is not her real husband. This is a “**type**” of Israel, The Ten Lost Tribes, who married Gentiles and intermixed. Jesus then tells this Gentile woman He is The Christ. She runs to the town and when they meet Jesus they acknowledge He is The Christ. They, therefore, prove to be more fruitful and faithful by the act of believing Jesus. It is at this time He turns to The Gentiles who are intermixed with The Lost Tribes of Israel. He tells the Samaritan woman, who has no husband, that the day is coming when **the temple** they worship in (in Jerusalem and in Samaria) **will cease**. Ultimately, she will repent and become married to her True Husband, Christ.

### **New Covenant Introduced**

Jesus, The Christ, makes an amazing announcement! In John 4:22-24 he declared, “**Ye worship ye know not what.**” The Ten Lost Tribes of Israel now believed they were Gentiles, not knowing God. “**We [Jews] know what we worship [God’s House – the temple]: for salvation [Christ] is of the Jews.**” Israel is God’s Bride and must become spiritual Israel (Romans 11).

Jesus then shows **the leaving** of God’s “**spirit**” from Judah to The Gentiles which includes The Lost Ten Tribes of Israel. “**But the hour [time] cometh, and now is [a transition], when the true worshippers shall worship The Father in “spirit” and in “truth” for The Father seeketh such to worship him**” (John 4:23).

God is a Spirit and they that worship Him must worship Him “**in**

**spirit**” and **“in truth.”**

Going to a new nation, The Gentiles, where The Lost Tribes of Israel had located, Christ introduces *The New Covenant*. No more **human effort** of The Works of The Law or any religious system of worshipping God as the Samaritans had been doing. Actually, they really didn't know what they were worshipping.

Jesus prophesies the end of *The Old Covenant* when **temple worship** ceases with the destruction of **the temple** in 70 A.D. Judah had 40 years from 30 A.D. Christ's ministry to the fall of **the temple** in 70 A.D. before *The Old Covenant* vanished (Hebrews 8:13). This was Judah's time of testing before **the curse** in Malachi 4.

From this event God only wants worshippers to be Christians who worship God **“in spirit”** and **“truth.”** *The Old Covenant* ceases and now **salvation** could only be attained by God's **“spirit.”**

God dwells **“in you”** through Christ and you are now God's **“temple”** where God dwells through His Holy Spirit.

*The Old Covenant* had The Jews worshipping in **the temple** keeping The Works of The Law, which only pictured Christ. This is the difference between *The Old* and *New Covenant*. The Lost Tribes of Israel were scattered among The Gentiles. Now, *The New Covenant* goes to The Gentiles where the The Lost Tribes were scattered.

## **John 5, John 6 And John 7**

These *gospel chapters* cover **“the very work”** Christ and His Father do DAILY even on The Sabbath (John 5:17). God and Christ, everyday, work **“the work”** of **salvation** (Hebrews 3).

As long as one does good works, to witness Christ, even on The Sabbath, it is permitted. Jesus and His Father constantly do **good works**, seven days a week, to **save the world** (I John 4:14). That is why Christ came into the world, to bring peace on earth and goodwill to all men (Luke 2:9-14).

Jesus can do nothing, but it is God, The Father who does everything and has committed all **judgment** to The Son (John 5).

Christ then discloses **the two resurrections, first at His second coming** and then The White Throne Judgment.

Christ summarizes His “**words**” and states all that He is preaching in John 5, 6 and 7 is God’s “**work**” which is **to believe on Him** (Christ) whom God hath sent. Jesus is God’s Son (John 6:29). Ending the summary of The Son and The Father’s “**works**,” Jesus stands up on the last day of The Feast of Tabernacles, (a type of The New Heaven and New Earth) and states, “**If any man** [“the world”] **thirst, let him come unto me** [Christ], **and drink. He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living waters**” (John 7:37-38). Then Jesus refers to The Holy Spirit which hadn’t been given as yet.

Christ concludes **His spiritual work** with The Father by God’s Holy Spirit and offering His Holy Spirit to **the world** at The Last Day of **the feast**, depicting God’s **kingdom** (Revelation 20-21). Everyone who was ignorant, foolish or wouldn’t keep growing **spiritually**, as God commanded, have their chance of **salvation** on The Last Great Day.

John’s **Gospel** is the only one of the *four gospels* which refer to The Holy Days as Jewish Feasts because by the time of the writing of *The Fourth Gospel*, The Gentiles were excluded from being

circumcised or keeping the “**works**” of The Law. The Holy Days, with **the temple** existing, still sought God in worshipping in **the temple** since *The Old Covenant* was still in force with Judah until **the temple** was destroyed.

John's *Gospel* was a **spiritual gospel** introducing *The New Covenant* to the world. Of a truth, Jesus proved by His living *The Torah* and by doing miracles, the unbelievers would see it as a sign. At the same time Jesus was also teaching His Disciples about God's “**work.**”

In John's *Gospel* Jesus fulfilled “**the works,**” which God called Him to do as a **faithful witness**. John 8 through the last chapter in John, shows the example you must follow when you are called to be a faithful witness (Acts 1:8).

## CHAPTER 25

### DEATH AND LIFE

**Paul said The Letter of The Law leads to death but The Spirit of The Law leads to life (II Corinthians 3). Why does keeping The Letter of The Law lead to death and The Spirit to life?**

#### Can Doctrine Change?

Some believe the word “**doctrine**” is “**holy**” and “**unchangeable.**” In Acts 15 **the church** changed its doctrine and Gentiles no longer had to become proselytes by being circumcised and keeping The Law. They received God’s Holy Spirit without becoming Jews. God revealed Gentiles could become **spiritual** Israelites without “**human works.**” In Christ, no longer is one a Jew, a Gentile, male or female, but a Son of God. The Greek word for “doctrine” is “didache” which means “**a learning.**” “Doctrine” is what one teaches or learns. It is not a holy word, it is a teaching. Spiritual growth requires change.

Different doctrines can be true, false or allow you to grow. You must keep growing in “**the grace and knowledge of our Lord, Jesus.**” “Doctrine” is always “**the truth**” which allows you to grow and have greater meaning.

True doctrine is a process. That is why Isaiah’s prophecy stated Christ would come and magnify The Law (Isaiah 42:21). In Hebrew the word “magnify” is “to enlarge and to make The Law **honorable**” or “to make it superior.”

## Principles Of Christ

The Apostle Paul tells Christians: “**Therefore leaving the PRINCIPLES of the doctrine of Christ, let us go unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God, Of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of the resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment. And this will we do, if God permit**” (Hebrews 6:1-3).

**Biblical** proof allows you to grow from one doctrine of teaching to another. Your spiritual insight becomes deeper and deeper until you achieve **perfection in the resurrection**. Being **holy** like God and Christ is the goal, but “**doctrine**” or “**teaching**” is a process. That is why it is called “**spiritual growth**.” God wants you to become **perfect** like Christ.

## Repentance From Dead Works

The first principle of **the doctrine** or **teaching** about Christ is **repentance from dead works**. What are “**the dead works**” from which you are to repent? When you repent it is because of sin. “**Sin is the transgression of the law**” (I John 3:4). There is something about repenting from sin or breaking The Law which is a “**dead work**.” What is it?

Since The Law is the Hebrew word “Torah” you need to know what *The Bible* means by “**Torah**.”

## What Is The Torah?

The age-old debate among Christians is “do they keep The Law?” There is absolutely nowhere in *The Bible* where it says Christians

should not keep The Law. In Galatians, Paul reveals Christians are not subject to “**the works**” of The Law. That is, they do not keep “**all the legalistic deeds**” of The Law. But that makes it sound like it is ALL RIGHT for Christians to SIN. Does *The Bible* give a definitive answer to the question? And why is The Torah called The Law?

### The Wrong Argument

Abraham kept **the commandments, statutes** and Laws of God (Genesis 26:5). So The LAW was known long BEFORE Moses was born. Paul also makes an astounding statement in Galatians 3:17. “**And this I say, that the Covenant [Abrahamic], that was confirmed before of God in Christ, THE LAW, which was four hundred thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect.**”

This sounds like a contradiction. If The Law came four hundred and thirty years after The Abrahamic Covenant, then how did Abraham know to keep The Law? The Law doesn't seem to make sense. What is the answer? Check *The Bible* further. Then to make matters worse read Galatians 3:19. “**Wherefore then [serve] The Law? It was ADDED because of transgressions [SINS], TILL THE SEED SHOULD COME to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator.**”

The word “serve” in this verse is not found in any of the early manuscripts. It was “**added**” in later translations. The real question being asked in the original is: “**Wherefore then The LAW?**” That is **the real biblical question** or why have The Law at all? How can you “**ADD something**” to “**something that already exists?**” Plainly, Paul states The Law “**was added**” to something. For certain it **could not** have **been added** to itself. The Law can't

be added to “**a law**” already existing. This Law given to Moses had to be added to something which ALREADY EXISTED, but what “**was added**” had to be different. Read Verse 19 again. Whatever **was added, was added** because of sin when Israel built the golden calf. But this addition was only to last **until Christ came**.

Christ was **the promised seed** in The Abrahamic **covenant** to **restore paradise**. Then Paul answers the question about the added part. “**Wherefore the Law was our SCHOOLMASTER to BRING US UNTO CHRIST, that we might be JUSTIFIED by FAITH**” (Galatians 3:24). So, something was ADDED to The Law which was different from what was known about The Law four hundred thirty years **earlier** in Abraham’s day.

## **What Was Added?**

You already read the answer. The part which was ADDED to The Law, which did not previously exist in The Law, was that PART which was a SCHOOLMASTER which would be able to LEAD YOU TO CHRIST. EVERYTHING THAT WAS “SHADOWED” OR LED YOU TO JESUS, THE CHRIST WAS ADDED. IT was a SCHOOLMASTER. Paul calls these additions “WORKS” (“ER-GON”) or “DEEDS” OF THE LAW. So many have attempted to answer, but this time let Christ give you the answer. In Hebrew the word for “**works**” is rendered “**commands**.” If you read or write down whenever Paul used the word “**works**” and inserted “**commands**” then it would read, “**why keep The Commands of The Law?**”

What kind of “**commands**” or “**deeds?**” Those “**commands**” in The Law which pointed to the schoolmaster, Christ. When Jesus came, all those “**legal works**” or “**commands**” ceased. Why?



## Jesus Gives The Answer

In Matthew 5:17 Jesus said, “**Think not that I come to DESTROY THE LAW, OR THE PROPHETS: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill.**”

In Greek, the word “plero” means “to entirely make full.” In English, the one word “fulfill” would be defined as “COMPLETE.” Christ plainly said He did not come to destroy The Law OR THE PROPHETS, but to “**complete**” them. But how? Many read these verses but miss the CONTEXT. Jesus did not refer only to The Law but also The Prophets. So there is something in The Law and The PROPHETS that Jesus was going “to complete” or “bring to its totality.” What was that? If you will allow *the scripture* to interpret itself instead of reading with a pre-set agenda, the biblical answer is **clear**.

Read Jesus disclosing *The New Covenant* in The Law or *Torah* as well as The Prophets. Then Jesus states He came to **complete** The Law and The PROPHETS. “**For verily I say unto you, TILL HEAVEN and EARTH PASS, one jot or one tittle shall in NO WISE PASS FROM THE LAW, TILL ALL BE FULFILLED**” [Fully filled or when all things are completed].

How clear, at the time of The New Heaven and Earth, a certain part of The LAW does “cease.” But how? It ceases when it is “FULFILLED.” In what way does The Law cease?

Remember there is something different about *The Torah* or LAW that is a PROCESS. Something in The Law and Prophets discloses something which happens. Jesus in His parting “**words**” to His Disciples said: “**These are the words which I spoke unto you, while I was yet with you, THAT ALL THINGS MUST BE**

**FULFILLED**, which were **WRITTEN** *in* the Law of Moses, and *in* the prophets, and in the Psalms, **CONCERNING ME**" (Luke 24:44).

There is your **biblical** answer. Jesus tells you everything in The Law, **PROPHETS** and **PSALMS** concerning **HIM** must be **COMPLETED**. **Everywhere you read the word "FULFILL" in *The New Testament***, as in Luke 24:44, "**the word**" or "**FULFILL**" is "**to complete.**" In Greek it is "PLERO" or "PLEROMA."

This is exactly what Paul said The Law was supposed to do in Galatians 3:24. "**Wherefore The Law was OUR SCHOOLMASTER to *bring us unto Christ*, that we might be JUSTIFIED BY FAITH.**" Christ and Paul declared The Law and The Prophets were written to prove Jesus was The Christ. Jesus was God's very Son as The Law and Prophets revealed.

When that part of The Law or **PROPHETS** was **completed**, you no longer could regard it as **PROPHECY**, but it then became **HISTORY**. The Prophets and this part of The Law were "completed" or "fulfilled" and **NO LONGER APPLIED**. The jot and tittle of The Law or Prophets were "**fulfilled**" or "**complete.**" When Jesus was sacrificed as The Paschal Lamb, Christians no longer sacrifice. Jesus already "fulfilled" or "completed" that part of The Law.

Read Paul's answer following The Law's purpose. "**But after that FAITH IS COME [HAPPENS], WE ARE NO LONGER UNDER A SCHOOLMASTER**" (Galatians 3:25).

There is your **biblical** definition for "**under The Law.**" It is **everything** that **pointed to Christ** which was completed. Every **JOT** and **TITTLE** of The Law and **PROPHETS** must be "completed" or

“fulfilled” when it occurs as **prophecy** and then when finished it becomes known as **history**. So declares **God’s “word.”**

Paul, completing Galatians 3, then reveals once you are baptized you are one of God’s children. Now, HAVING PUT “ON CHRIST” and you are no longer Jews or Greeks, male or female, you are not under any Old Covenant. You are now HEIRS according to the PROMISE made to Abraham. You have received **your inheritance** (Ephesians 1:13-14). The Abrahamic **promise of The Law or Torah** must be “completed” or “fulfilled” and Jesus in Matthew 5, 6 and 7 gives the entire answer. Read those chapters how Jesus changes The Letter of The Law to The Spirit of The Law (II Corinthians 3). The letter or written Law produces DEATH but The SPIRIT of The Law produces LIFE, which is SALVATION. How **clear**, how **biblically simple**. The Law is now transferred from *The Old Covenant* to *The New Covenant*, which becomes a **spiritual matter**. The Law is **spiritual and always exists** (Romans 7:14). The part which “**was added**” because of sin reveals Christ. **When Jesus completes The Prophecy, it is over and is history.** *The Old Covenant* never makes anyone “**perfect**” and never “**saves**” anyone. That is why Paul says “**the letter**” gives death. Doing The Letter gives a good, physical life, but The Works of The Law can never FORGIVE SIN (Hebrews 10). Read the full chapter. Only *The New Covenant* gives SALVATION through Christ. Christ completes The Letter of The Law about Him and puts **The Torah Law on a higher standard.**

### **Law Of Moses Added**

**What “was added”** is The Law of Moses and all its “physical works” or legal “deeds.” The Law of Moses cannot be the same Law that Abraham kept in Genesis 26:5. Why not? They could not be the same since Paul said The Law of Moses was *added* 430

years after Abraham. What “**was added**” to The Commandments and Statutes had to be different. What was different with The Law of Moses?

Deuteronomy 5:2-3 states, “**The Lord our God made a COVENANT with us [Israel] in Horeb. The Lord MADE NOT THIS COVENANT with OUR FATHERS, but with us, even us [Israel], who are ALL OF US [Israel] here alive this day.**”

There is your **biblical answer**. This Covenant was not made with Noah, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob and was different in some way than The Commandments and Statutes in Genesis 26:5. The Covenants, in The Law or *The Torah* such as Noah, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob were DIFFERENT than The Law of Moses “**added**” to *The Torah*. All these Covenants are in The Law or *The Torah*. In Hebrew, “*The Torah*” is the “teaching or learning **a pathway**” or “**the way** to Christ.” *The Torah* is far more than *The Old Covenant* “**added**” to *The Torah*. *The Torah* is a **way** to **salvation** or Christ. Christ is *The Torah*. *The Torah* is “**the schoolmaster**” to Jesus. *The Old Covenant* was only “**a shadow**” of good things to come (Colossians 2:6-17).

How was it different? First, it was only made with Israel and not The Gentiles. That is why **the church** in Acts 15 stated The Gentiles did not have to be circumcised or keep The Law. Read all of Acts 15. Secondly, it was *The Old Covenant* that was *added* to *The Torah*. This Old Covenant “**was added**” because of “**sin**” and that is why Paul said The Law was made for the UNRIGHTEOUS (I Timothy 1:9-10).

The Law of Moses was added to The Torah four hundred thirty years after Abraham. *The Torah* is “**a pathway**” or “**the way to salvation.**” Once **the shadows** of good things to come “**occurred,**”

they, then, became the past or history. (That is EXACTLY what Christ said in Matthew 5, 6 and 7).

## The Spiritual Torah

Jesus, The Christ, clearly stated, “**For I say unto you, That except YOUR RIGHTEOUSNESS SHALL EXCEED *the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees*, ye shall in no case enter into the Kingdom of heaven**” (Matthew 5:20). This is very plain! The scribes and Pharisees commanded the keeping of *The Old Covenant* only to Israel and proselytes who were circumcised and kept The Letter of The Law.

Then Jesus defines in the rest of Matthew 5 what being “**more righteous**” really means. The Law of Moses with its **legalistic works** and **commands** could never give you **SALVATION**. Why? Keeping The Letter of The Law **NEVER CHANGES HUMAN NATURE**. It is too weak to be able to change human nature.

## A Higher Standard Of The Torah

To be in **the kingdom** of heaven one must be **PERFECT**, as Christ concluded in Matthew 5:48. The Law of Moses could never make anyone perfect, but as Christ clearly said, *The New Covenant* could.

Now, *The Torah*, that is predicated UPON FAITH like Abraham, makes a Christian **RIGHTEOUS** or **PERFECT**. All the added prophecies which pointed to Christ as better things to come, once they occurred, Christians are no longer commanded to observe them. They are history. Now, it is the **RIGHTEOUSNESS** of *The TORAH* LAW WHICH IS WRITTEN IN THEIR HEARTS (DESIRES) and MINDS (TRUTH).

Christ is Your Passover Lamb. He has made everyone unleavened as long as you are “in Christ” and you have received The Holy Spirit (inheritance) and Jesus has **ATONED** you to God. All The Holy Days and what they shadow are history for Christians. They are not required for salvation.

Does that mean you no longer can memorialize The Holy Days? Of course not! That is why Paul told Gentile Christians (I Corinthians 5) how to keep **the feast** in **SINCERITY** (honesty) and **TRUTH**. The Feast of Unleavened Bread is for Christians to be **SINLESS** and not like the fornicator. That is the context. Christians to be **SAVED** are on a higher standard of **KEEPING THE TORAH LAW** by The Law completed or fulfilled in their **HEARTS AND MINDS!** With Christians all the added deeds of The Law are “completed” in Christ. All the legal shadows are now spiritually kept “in Christ.” Now, in *The New Covenant*, *The Torah* is a spiritual matter and kept on a higher standard in your heart and mind. Christians must be like Christ and that is to be sinless. That is called **spiritual growth**.

## Chapter 26

### PURPOSE OF SPIRITUAL BLINDNESS

**Did you know all Christians who know The True God and His Son, Jesus can also be spiritually blinded? In I Corinthians 13:12, The Apostle Paul, who received more revelations than the other Apostles, declared he was spiritually blind. Paul said, “For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: Now I [Paul] know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known.”**

How clear even Paul didn't have all **the truth**. Peter himself said that in his day they had a more sure word of prophecy than The Prophets of old (II Peter 1:19). All Christians are blind to some truth and therefore, need to grow. That is why John wrote in Revelation 18:4 for God's people to come out of Babylon or **spiritual blindness**.

#### Cause And Purpose

Why does God want any individual to be **spiritually blind**, let alone Christians? What is the reason God allows **spiritual blindness and** what causes a person to be **spiritually blind**? *The Scriptures* will reveal the answer.

#### Truth And Healing

Once someone understands The Truth of God, then **Jesus** must do something. “**For this people's** [Judah] **heart** [desire] **is waxed**

**gross, and *their* ears are dull of hearing, and *their* eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with *their* eyes, and hear with *their* ears, and should understand with *their* heart, and should be converted, and I [Jesus] should heal them”** (Matthew 13:15).

**Once a point of truth is understood**, humans naturally want to change, but only **God**, through **Christ**, must heal them!

As long as humans do not know better, God leaves them alone! Once converted and knowing **the truth** Jesus will save you. All those which God has given to Jesus – not “**one**” is ever lost (John 5). Now you understand why God allows the ignorant or foolish to be blind. If they don't know better and want to stay in that state, God leaves them alone. Why?

Paul reveals God has **an order** or **a plan** in just how He plans to **save** each one (I Corinthians 15:23). God has a plan or strategy as to how He is to **save** the world. Read Ephesians 1.

To discover why God wants so many to remain blind until later, read about how Jesus healed a blind man. The Jews said no one knows who this Jesus is and then let the blind man go. When the blind man, who once could not see, acknowledged that Jesus was The Son of God, this is what Christ said. **“For judgment I am come into this world, that they...which see might be made blind”** (John 9:39).

Wow! Jesus was saying those who understood that God was indeed the One God and The Messiah was His Son, they would become spiritually blind. God intentionally allowed them to be blind again. God is “**the one**” who decides who He will blind and who will understand the truth. So God chose “some” to be **spiri-**



**tually blinded.**

Why would God want to blind so many humans? Here is Christ's answer. **"If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, we see, therefore your sins remaineth"** (John 9:41).

God's **"love"** blinds those who are **"not ready"** to be **saved**, so that when they sin God will not hold them responsible. Oh, the love of God! God removes **spiritual blindness** when a person is ready to be **saved** according to God's **plan** and **order**. What is that order?

## **Spiritual Growth**

When does God know a person is ready to receive more Godly knowledge and be able to grow **spiritually**? What does God say? **"Whom shall he teach knowledge"** (Isaiah 28:9)? The subject God is explaining is **"Godly knowledge"** and secondly **"to whom He will allow it to be revealed."** It is all a matter of **knowledge**. Everyone needs God's knowledge or truth. Since everyone is **spiritually blind**, at least in part, you must be super careful not to determine **"new spiritual truth"** before God actually is ready to reveal it to you. As humans, just like children think, you can do or know something when in reality you may not be **mature enough** to understand what you are learning. How many times have you heard children say, "I can do that?"

How can you know you are ready to grow more and understand more of the truth? God answers, **"Whom shall he [God] teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? [teaching] *them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts*"** (Isaiah 28.9). There is God's answer. Unless you stay childlike or as a baby and only grow from mother's milk you cannot eat meat. This is very plain.

You can not use your own interpretations based on your human heart or desire to be right (Job 40:8). Job, a righteous man, had to learn that lesson!

God's answer to Job may help you, "**Wilt thou also disannul my judgment? Wilt thou condemn me, that thou mayest be righteous**" (Job 40:8)? As long as Christians think they are **right** and have a heart whose desire is to be right, you are not able to seek God's **righteousness**. This truth applies to **ALL HUMANS**.

Whether one be ignorant, a fool or a Christian seeking to be "**self right**," God will not open more of His knowledge.

Read how simply Solomon, a man of wisdom, states it. "**Through DESIRE a man, having separated himself** [self interpretation], **seeketh** [desire] **and intermeddleth with all wisdom**" (Proverbs 18:1). There it is.

Seeking **to be self-right**, because of your desire or your motivation **to be right**, keeps God from giving you His knowledge, because you will misunderstand it because **you want to be self-right**. That is what Paul calls **human imagination or interpretation** (II Corinthians 10:5).

God reveals Christian **truth** only comes from your heavenly mother, Jerusalem, in Heaven. (Galatians 4:26).

It is God's "**milk**" or "**word**" given **by Him** and not your human imagination. Truth or God's knowledge can only come from Him personally, by milk or truth from His breast, right from God's Holy Spirit.

God does not want you to know His truth or knowledge until He knows you are ready. If you understand God's truth and you sin against His "**word**" you are not forgiven unless you repent. You need to be like a

baby, only drinking in or desiring in your heart – God’s **truth**. God does not want you to transgress His “word” because then sin remains with you. You must constantly be in a repentant state or as a little babe who believes God in your heart. Then God reveals more truth of His “**holy knowledge**.” To think you may have had **the truth** while no one else has or you are the only one to have all **the truth** is not like a babe always seeking truth from God in repentance.

That is the Christian dilemma. Spending most of your *Bible* study time just proving **what you may already believe and not seeking to learn God’s truth**. Unless you stay as a babe, God will not reveal more knowledge. **He loves you** and doesn’t want you to be held responsible until you mature enough to be able “**to do**” what **new truth** you are beginning to understand. The worst thing God can do is ask you to do something you are not mature enough to handle. God does not increase your talents until your heart is right. Then God reveals more spiritual truth to you.

Romans 14:23 states, “**Whatsoever is not of faith is sin.**” Whatever you believe in your heart, you had better do. God holds you responsible for what **truth** you do know and not what you do not know. For example, if a Christian believes you are not to drink wine, you should not drink wine around them or push drinking upon them. Even though **the truth** is, Christians can drink wine but only “**in moderation**.” You must not insist others do so when they are not spiritually ready. Whatsoever is **not of faith is sin**. It is all right to drink **moderately** but not for Christians when they are not **spiritually ready**. That is why Christians are not to offend anyone. It is a matter of **personal faith** for each individual. Now to see *The Bible’s* answer as to the cause of **spiritual blindness**.

You are continually to have the **mind** of Christ (Philippians 2:5). What is **The Mind of Christ**? Read the rest of Philippians 2. You will see,

to be able to have Christ's **mind**, you must be **servants to others**. You must always think what is good for the other and not yourself. That is **The Mind of Christ**.

Jesus constantly spoke God's "**words**" only and never His own. Read John 5.

You are now ready to understand why God blinds mankind **spiritually** which includes Christians. Your Father loves you and does not want to pass more Godly knowledge to you until you are mature enough (as Jesus was) to handle it (Ephesians 4:12-18).

## **Cause Of Blindness**

You now understand why God allows you to be spiritually blind, but what is the root cause of a person's blindness?

Jude makes a remarkable statement in Jude 23. Jude is referring to helping people avoid The Lake of Fire or Gehenna. "**And others save with fear, pulling *them* out of the fire**" [How]? "**hating even the garment [our bodies] spotted by the flesh.**" It is your human nature. It is the survival of "the fittest attitude" in your carnal or beastly heart which is the culprit.

Prophetically, John writes in Revelations 19:8, "**the saints**" The Bride of Christ, are clothed when they are no longer human but completely spirit. "**For the fine linen is the righteousness of saints.**" Why linen? Because linen, commanded in The Law to be worn by The Priesthood, are clothes which do not make you perspire. That is the reason. Saints as "spirits" now are Holy like God and His Son, Jesus.

The problem is **the flesh**, which is full of toxins and poisons, especially when your bodies get old or in decay from diseases. Jesus warns if you

try to save your human life you will lose it. If you willingly lose your life you will live eternally. So, human nature causes humans to be **spiritually blind**. Jesus, The Christ, reveals how you will stay spiritually blind.

## **Pulls Of The Flesh**

To have **spiritual growth** you must deny “the flesh.” Your garment must not be defiled by the flesh.

Jesus said there are four types of individuals. Three of them continue being spiritually blind because in living this life they are too involved in this world. The fourth group is different, but how?

The parable of the sower and the seed disclose the cause of spiritual blindness. The four types of individuals are revealed in Matthew 13: 18-30:

- 1 When someone hears the “Word” about God’s kingdom, Satan sees to it they are too involved with their human existence. Family always needs their attention and survival is an issue and always trying to be productive in this life. Then just trying to have fun, attempting to relax from the stresses of life. Satan usually wins and that person isn’t even interested in God or His kingdom.**
- 2 The second type of individual hears and likes what they hear, but others make fun of them and persecution or taunting derails them from seeking God.**
- 3 This person is too involved in the world. Getting married, becoming famous, getting rich, having children**

or spending endless hours attempting to make a business succeed are just too much to deal with. It doesn't take too much to become offended or lose interest in God and His kingdom.

- 4 **This group places God's kingdom above everything in this life. No matter what their earthly desires may be, they want to pray, study their Bibles and do everything they can to be in God's kingdom. Notice what Jesus said, "But seek ye first the kingdom of God and his righteousness; and all these [earthly] things will be added unto you" (Matthew 6:33).**

Please be aware your human desires are not wrong or a sin as long as you keep God and His **kingdom** first!

It is all a matter of **faith**. If you have that **faith**, then God adds those human needs which are **good** for you, just as He blessed Abraham, father of the **faithful**. Hopefully, now you can see the fine line which can cause **spiritual blindness**.

## Jobitis

There is one more human desire which is the most deceptive of all and Satan is a good example.

Jesus warns Christians that those who know **the most truth** are held more responsible in The White Throne Judgment than those who are ignorant or foolish like the first three in the parable of "**the sower and the seed**." What does Jesus warn those Christians? "**And that servant [Christian], which knew his Lord's will, and prepared not *himself*, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many *stripes*. But he that knew not [ignorant and foolish], and did commit things**

**worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more”** (Luke 12:47-48).

This is what **spiritual blindness** is all about.

God’s “**love**” will keep you **blinded** by following your earthly pursuits when you don’t put God **first** in your life. Why? **Because they are not held responsible for their sins!** Atheists and agnostics are safer than Christians in **the final judgment**. That is why those in Sodom and Gomorrah plead their case and might win their case over Christians who do not grow spiritually. God is always just and fair.

God made sure an entire book was written in *The Bible* about one person and that person was Job. Why? Since Job was righteous, he wanted to judge God and God’s justice system. God warned Job not to seek his own righteousness but only God’s righteousness (Job 40:8).

Knowing God’s “**word**” or having **the truth** is a great responsibility, as you will be held responsible for what knowledge was given you in **The Great Judgment**.

God warns you to be careful with His “**word**” and stay as a babe seeking **milk** and not your own interpretations or imaginations based upon your fleshly desire to be right.

God loves all the world and wants to save everyone who has ever been born (I John 4:14). That is why He sent His Son to save you. Make diligent effort (desire) and pray to seek God’s knowledge and not your own.

## CHAPTER 27

### THE MALACHI CURSE

To understand the rest of *The New Testament*, from *Romans* to *Revelation*, you must address the coming curse in Malachi. The Jews rejected The Messiah, Jesus, The Christ and John, The Baptist. Since the hearts of the children did not return to The Fathers of old like Noah, Abraham, Isaac or Jacob, God declared He would curse the earth (Malachi 4:6).

#### The Coming Curse

The entire *Book of Malachi* warns of the **coming curse**. The Jews rejected God, so He had to restore God's Holy and **righteous** Law with **the statues** and **judgments** (Malachi 4:4).

This Law was The Law of Moses which "was added" to *The Torah* because of both John, The Baptist and Christ. Israel was sinning when they built **the golden calf**. This *Old Covenant* was exclusively made only with Israel since they were to be God's righteous witnesses to the world (Deuteronomy 5:2-3). That is why Jesus came to only Israel first and then to The Gentiles.

John, The Baptist, as Elijah, came to prepare **the way** for Christ, the second messenger who was to restore The Law of Moses and cleanse **the temple** (Malachi 3:1). They killed both messengers and the curse was now a **prophetic reality**. From Christ's ministerial commission, God gave Judah 40 years to repent before



the curse would go into force. Those 40 years ended in 70 A.D. with the destruction of **the temple** by Titus. God would no longer dwell with Judah as His people, but turn to a nation more worthy by building a **spiritual temple** in each person growing in Christianity.

God now added Gentiles into **the olive tree** of Israel and only a remnant of Israel would be included as God's **witnesses**. Now Israel and The Gentiles are to be God's witnesses to the world (Romans 11:24).

Judah rejected The Messiah and the opportunity for The Millennium Kingdom of God to begin. The **coming curse** reveals what Christians will have to endure as His witness. "**Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword**" (Matthew 10:34).

This statement by Jesus relates to sending out The 12 Apostles to **the lost sheep of Israel**, instead of bringing peace to the world, which was His purpose (Matthew 10:6). When He comes the second time, He comes as **a refiner's fire** (Malachi 3:2). "**But who may abide the day of his coming? and who shall stand when he appeareth? for he is like a refiner's fire, and like fuller's sope: And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the Lord an offering in righteousness. Then shall the offering of Judah and Jerusalem be pleasant unto the Lord, as in the days of old, and as in former years**" (Malachi 3:2-4).

Now **the curse** of the world is to begin and will last until the earth is purged at The Battle of Armageddon. Instead of **peace** and The Millennium Kingdom, the curse must first cleanse the earth with

all its inhabitants. Then, and only then, will peace come to the earth with God's **kingdom** rule for 1000 years. Jesus describes how this curse begins and what will occur before Christ is **to return** and establish His Father's **kingdom** which will bring peace.

## **Curse Instituted**

Jesus prophetically relates how **the curse** will come about in Matthew 24:1-31, Mark 13:1-31 and Luke 21:1-31. Use the account in Matthew to discover the events which will transpire when the world is being cursed.

Many believe the specific events relate to the future, but **the curse** begins with the destruction of **the temple** in 70 A.D. Read all of Matthew.

The Disciples came to Jesus to show Him the buildings of **the temple**.

- 1 **The first event Christ prophesied is that “in the buildings of the temple, not one stone would be left upon another.” This is the beginning of the curse which started in 70 A.D. by Titus. Exactly forty years was given to Judah to repent or return to The Old Testament fathers.**
  
- 2 **Too many disregard the next prophecy as if this is yet in everyone's future. Notice Jesus warns His Disciples, during their lives, that many shall come in Christ's name, including Christian ministers and shall say or preach Jesus is The Christ, but shall deceive many.**

Jesus was not referring to the far future but He explicitly warned His Disciples, **“Take hold that no man deceive you.”** Who did

He warn about false preachers? Those Disciples, The Apostles of His day that deceptive ministers would exist in **the church** in their day (Acts 20:29-31). The **sign** of the coming **curse** is first the destruction of **the temple**, followed by ministers of the gospel who would be speaking another gospel.

As you continue to read *God's Story*, you will see this second sign of the curse is when Satan infiltrates God's church with deceptive ministers, with some claiming to be Jewish Apostles like the original ones. These satanic deceivers bring heresy into God's **church** and cause SEPARATION OR SCHISM in God's **church**. Later chapters will prove Christ's prophecy.

- 3 **Then Jesus gives a general future condition of the world's curse. Worldwide, there will be violence, famines and earthquakes. Christ states these are merely the beginning of world sorrow. Until The Return of Jesus bringing world peace, everyone will have natural chaos and continual fighting or war. Nation will fight nation and finally kingdom against kingdom or world wars. Notice the cause.**
- 4 **Christianity will be blamed for the world's violence and be persecuted. That is why Emperor Nero blamed The Christians for the burning of Rome. History declares most wars are caused because of religion. Hitler blamed The Jews for the troubles of the world.**

Then Jesus declares if Christians remain faithful to the death, they will receive salvation. Why? Because in spite of persecution *The Gospel* still will be preached to the world.

- 5 **Notice, Jesus returns to His own time and warns His**

**Disciples that, “When ye [disciples] therefore shall see the abomination of the desolation, spoken of by Daniel, The Prophet, stand in the holy place, then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains” (Matthew 24:15-16). This is specific. First, it applies to those alive at the time of Christ, His Disciples and Jews. Secondly, the abomination of desolation is placed in the existing temple of their day in The Holy Place. This all occurred when Titus placed Jupiter Olympus in The Holy Place. Finally, Christ warns those of His day to flee to the mountains or to safety. This is what *The Bible* revealed.**

- 6 After the temple’s destruction and Christians and Jews fled the city, a great tribulation takes place in the world. Jesus declares if this world curse was allowed to continue, no flesh would be saved. God will shorten the days at The Battle of Armageddon; otherwise, the world would commit suicide. Because of the elect’s sake, The Remnant of Israel and The Gentiles, (God’s two witnesses) Jesus makes an astounding statement! “Behold, I have told you before, Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, *he* is in secret chambers; believe it not” (Matthew 24:25-26).**

During this curse, **the great tribulation** starts with the destruction of Herod’s corrupt temple, which was called The Time of World Sorrows. Others, of course, will say He is coming in secret. Many will come predicting **The Return** of Christ, but He declares “**don’t believe it!**” No one, except The Father, knows The Time of Christ’s Return. **Jesus is not coming in secret!** Read how Jesus returns in Matthew 24:27. “**For as lightning cometh out**

**of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be!”**

The world's curse starts with the destruction of Herod's temple and lasts until Christ's **return** as a flash of lightening around the world for all to see!

This **ends the world's curse**. Jesus, The Christ restores world peace which was Christ's original purpose. Read about the end of The Great Tribulation or **curse of the world**.

Read Malachi 3:13-18. In Verse 13 God says, His people, The Jews, have been against Him and they don't understand why. In fact, they say it serves no purpose to follow God. In fact, the proud, the successful are better off than The Jews. They felt they were, and are always, persecuted and blamed for all the world's troubles.

But some Jews and Gentiles kept **faith** in God and feared or honored The One True God. Therefore, God declares, in that day, He will make up His “**jewels**” (Bride) and “spare them (from the curse) as a man spares his own son” (Malachi 3:16-17).

## **Great Tribulation Ends**

**“Then shall ye return [Israel], and discern between the righteous and the wicked, between him that serveth God and him that serveth him not”** (Malachi 3:18). This refers to **the millennium** when Christ returns. **“For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven [heavenly chaos]; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly [mark of beast], shall be stubble: and the day that cometh [Christ's return] shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch (Mal-**

achi 4:1). This is The Second Great Tribulation mentioned in Revelation.

Jesus **returns** blazing with **the angels** and destroys the wicked at The Battle of Armageddon. Only ashes will be under the feet of the righteous during **the millennium**. Notice what occurs to Christians (Israelites and Gentiles, Christ's Bride). "**But unto you that fear [honor] my name shall the Sun [Christ] of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall. And you [The Bride] shall tread down the wicked; for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet in the day that I shall do *this*, saith the Lord of hosts**" (Malachi 4:2-3).

The Second Great Tribulation or the **curse on the world ends**. Now look what Jesus states as He returns. Then Christ refers to the carcasses of Malachi 4. "**For wheresoever [Armageddon] the carcass [wicked] is, there will the eagles [Bride] be gathered together [under Christ's wings]**" (Matthew 24:28). The curse or tribulation is over. In Malachi 4:6 is this Hebrew word for "curse" used. "Cherem" in Hebrew means "total destruction of what was to be holy." This cherem is used to take God's chosen people, who were to be holy and scatter them in the world as a curse.

With the end of the world curse or the tribulation Jesus closes His prophecy when the world curse ends that the heavens will shake and the sun and moon shall not shine and the stars will fall (Revelation 6). Then will appear **the sign of Christ's return** and the world will see The Return of Jesus with power and **glory** and they will mourn. Right at that time **the angels** of heaven will gather **the elect** (Christians) from all the earth (Matthew 24:29-31). **The millennium** of peace on earth begins.

## This Generation

With the conclusion of this prophecy is the account of Luke 21:32. **“Verily, I say unto you [Disciples], this generation shall not pass away, till all is fulfilled.”** The Greek word for “fulfilled” is “pleroma” or in English, its meaning is “to complete.”

**The curse** or the tribulation was completed or in process by that generation which existed at the time Jesus gave this prophecy to His Disciples. Christ states this generation’s curse will not end until all is fulfilled (completed). Jesus answers the first question with the fall of the **temple** in 70 A.D. (Mark 13:1-4).

Now, to read the destruction of Herod’s Temple from *Acts* to *Revelation*.

## CHAPTER 28

### TWO GREAT TRIBULATIONS

**You will find two great tribulations occur during the time of the world curse revealed in Malachi 4. The final tribulation is just before true world peace which starts the millennium (Malachi 4:1-2).**

#### The Curse Defined

The Hebrew word “cherem” in English is translated “curse.” This is a special curse. The Hebrew word means “a holy thing which should be destroyed.” Why? It is destroyed because it is a corruption of what is **not** holy but should be Holy. Specifically, people are worshipping a corrupt idol. What needs to be destroyed? Jesus said one stone would not be left upon another (Matthew 24:2). The **temple** is first to be destroyed when the world curse begins. Why? The **temple**, God’s Holy House, has been made a place of merchandise or a business. This Holy Place had become corrupt and God’s “glory” left just before it’s total destruction between 67 and 70 A.D.

God declares, **“If ye will not hear, and if ye will not lay it to heart, to give glory unto my name, saith the Lord of Hosts, I will even send a curse upon you, and I will curse your blessings: yea, I have cursed them already, because ye do not lay *it* to heart”** (Malachi 2:2).

Because Judah not only has corrupted The House of God, The



Temple, but they, themselves, have been corrupted as well. So, they are cursed, also.

The Hebrew word for “curse” in this case is “meerah” or in English it means “an excretion.” God will stop all their blessings, as well as destroy **the temple**. The Jews will be literally “excreted” from Jerusalem with **the temple’s** destruction. This tribulation starts in 70 A.D. and lasts until the curse ends with the final world tribulation. Then, Christ returns.

Christ told **the faithful** to flee Jerusalem because of the coming great tribulation (Matthew 24:16). With the destruction of **the temple**, Jesus had forewarned The Pharisees and Sadducees, “**Behold, your house, [the temple] is left unto you desolate**” (Matthew 23:38).

Before the desolation of **the temple**, Jesus states His real purpose for His coming. “**O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, *thou* that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathered her chickens under *her* wings, and ye would not**” (Matthew 23:37).

The curse comes with **the temple’s** destruction and those who heeded Christ’s warning had fled Jerusalem for safety in the mountains. Christ warned that destruction of **the temple** and The City of Jerusalem was so bad, there had never been such a demise of a city with its inhabitants before, or ever will be (Matthew 24:21). This “**curse**” truly was an “excretion” of The Jews and their **temple** by Titus.

Jesus’ second warning was of **false preachers** before His **return** (Matthew 24:23-26). Suddenly, after the false ministers

and prophets “**prophecy**” of Christ’s **return**, Jesus brings out the “actual time frame” when He does return.

Too many miss the **false preachings** to start after the temple is destroyed. Then The Return of Jesus is told over and over again during the last two thousand years. Peter warns of this false teaching in II Peter 3:8-9.

Christ’s **return** can last thousands of years from the time of His death because it is God’s **purpose to save everyone**. God wants to give everyone their allocated time to seek Him so no one is lost. God’s “**will**” includes “**potential**” **Universal Salvation** (I Timothy 2:4). After **the false preachings** about The Return of Jesus with **the eagles** gathered together (Christians), there is a time of another great tribulation which ushers in the heavenly signs of Christ’s **return** (Matthew 24:27-29).

Read about this “**second**” Great Tribulation. “**For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble, and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of Hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch**” (Malachi 4:1). Then “**the righteous**” will shine (The Bride) and tread those ashes under their feet.

The detailed account of this day can be read in Zechariah 14:1-7. This is The Battle of Armageddon. Notice what happens immediately after this period of great tribulation. Right after this **second tribulation** the heavenly signs begin and Jesus **returns** with **the angels** and **the saints** (Matthew 24:29-31).

The heavenly signs commence; everyone on earth is aware and acknowledges that God’s Day of Wrath has come (Revelation

6:12-17 and all of Revelation 7).

Revelation 7 reveals that 144,000 from The Tribes of Israel and the **innumerable multitude** of Gentiles from all nations receive **salvation**. One of the **twenty four elders** asks who these 144,000 of Israel and Gentiles are. The answer is these **saved individuals** just came out of The Great Tribulation. This is a **second** Great Tribulation after the **first tribulation**, which occurred back in 70-74 A.D. Can *The Bible* prove to you exactly who all these individuals are?

## Two Persecutions

In Greek the word for “tribulation” is “thilipsis,” meaning “persecution,” “afflicted” or “anguish.” These **two tribulations** are a time of persecution for God’s people. Two times in history persecution of God’s people happens in The City of Jerusalem in 70 A.D. and will happen just before Armageddon (Zechariah 14). This second persecution happens just before **the seventh trumpet** sounds, which is The Return of Jesus.

## Fifth Seal

Just before **the sixth seal** opens **the heavenly signs**, “**the fifth seal**” opens and what happens? “**And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls [lives] of them that were slain for the word of God, for the testimony [witness] which they held: And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth? And white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, until the fellowservants also and their brethren, that should be killed as they *were*, should be fulfilled**” (Revelation 6:9-11).

These are the **two persecutions** or **tribulations** but are **seasons apart** from each other. There are two different time periods for The Great Tribulation. There it is plainly revealed in God's "**word**" as Christ prophesied in Matthew 24.

Jesus prophetically relates how **the curse** will come about in Matthew 24:1-31, Mark 13:1-31 and Luke 21:1-31. You should use the account in Matthew to discover the events which will transpire when this world is being **cursed**.

There are many who believe there are specified events that will first take place, but never forget the curse began with the destruction of **the temple** in 70 A.D.

- 1 Christ stated, when He prophesied about the building of **the temple**, that not one stone would be left upon another. This was the beginning of the curse, which started in 70 A.D. by Titus. Exactly forty years were given to Judah to **repent** or **return** to The Old Testament and their father's faith.
- 2 Some do not fully understand this prophecy was beginning in the lifetime of His Disciples. Notice, Jesus warns **His Disciples** that many shall come in His name, including Christian ministers preaching Jesus is The Christ and yet shall deceive many.

Jesus was not referring to the far future, but He explicitly warned His Disciples, "**Take hold that no man deceives you.**" Who did He warn about false preachers? He warned The Disciples and The Apostles of His day, that deceptive ministers would exist in **the church** during their life until He returned (Acts 20:29-31). The sign of the coming curse happened first at the destruction of **the temple** followed by **min-**

isters of *The Gospel* who would be speaking “**another gospel.**”

Later, you will see this second sign of the curse with which Satan infiltrates God's **church** with **deceptive ministers**, some claiming to be Jewish Apostles just like the original ones.

These **satanic deceivers** bring heresy into God's **church** and cause SEPARATION OR SCHISM in His **church**. This will be proved to you by Christ's prophecy. Then Jesus gives a general future condition of the world's curses. When you see violence, famines and earthquakes worldwide, these are merely the beginning of world sorrow or a curse. Until The Return of Jesus, bringing world peace, there will be natural chaos and continual fightings and war. Nation will fight nation and finally kingdom against kingdom will erupt in world wars. Notice the cause:

- 4 **Christianity will be blamed for the world's violence and be persecuted. Remember when Emperor Nero blamed Christians for the burning of Rome. History tells you most wars are caused because of religion. In recent history Hitler blamed Jews for all the troubles of the world. Then Jesus states if Christians remain faithful to the death, they will receive salvation. Why?** Because in spite of persecution *The Gospel* will be preached to the world.
- 5 Notice, Jesus speaks of His own time-frame when He warns His Disciples: “**When ye therefore shall see the abomination of the desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the Holy Place, then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains**” (Matthew 24:15-16). This is specific. First, it applies to those alive at the time of Christ, His Disciples and Jews. Secondly,

**the abomination of desolation** is placed in the existing **temple** of their day in The Holy Place. This all occurred when Titus placed Jupiter Olympus in The Holy Place. Finally, Christ warns those of His day, to flee to the mountains for their safety.

- 6 After **the temple's** destruction and Christians and Jews flee the city, the **great tribulation** takes place in the **world**. The world "**being cursed**" has continued to this very day. Jesus declares if this world curse was allowed to continue, "**no flesh would be saved alive.**" God must shorten **the days** at The Battle of Armageddon; otherwise, the world would commit suicide. It is because of the "**elects**" sake, The Remnant of Israel and The Gentiles, who are God's **two witnesses** will bring **The Return** of Jesus Christ. Then, Jesus makes an astounding statement! "**Behold, I have told you before. Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, he is in secret chambers; believe it not**" (Matthew 24:26).

The great tribulation of the curse, which was called The Time of World Sorrows, began with the destruction of Herod's corrupt **temple**. Many will come predicting the different times of The Return of Christ or implying He is coming "**in secret.**" Jesus declares you should not **believe it!** No one knows **the time of Christ's return**. The only one who knows is God, The Father. **Jesus is not coming in secret!** "**For as lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be**" (Matthew 24:27). So, Jesus will not come in secret.

The world "**curse**" starts with the destruction of Herod's Temple and

lasts until Christ's **return**, which will be as a flash of lightening around the world for **all to see!** Only then does this end "**the world's curse.**" Jesus, The Christ restores world peace. This was Christ's original purpose.

In Malachi 3:13 you see God relates how His people, The Jews, have been against Him and they just don't understand or want to follow Him. In fact, they say it serves no purpose to follow God. They feel the proud and the successful are better off than The Jews. They never forgot they have always been persecuted and blamed for the world's troubles.

But some Jews and Gentiles kept **faith** in God between each other and feared and honored The One True God. God declares, "**And they shall be mine, saith the Lord of hosts, in that day when I will make up my Jewels [Bride]; and I will spare them [from the curse], as a man spares his own son**" (Malachi 3:16-17).

## **Great Tribulation Ends**

"**Then shall ye return [Israel], and discern between the righteous and the wicked, between him that serveth God and him that serveth him not**" (Malachi 3:18).

This refers to **the millennium** when Christ **returns**. "**For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven [heavenly chaos]; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly [mark of beast], shall be stubble: and the day that cometh [Christ's return] shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch**" (Malachi 4:1). This is The Second Great Tribulation mentioned in Revelation.

Jesus **returns** blazing with **the angels** and destroys the wicked at The

Battle of Armageddon. Only ashes will be under the feet of the righteous during **the millennium** with world peace. Notice what occurs to Christians, both Israelites and Gentiles who are, Christ's Bride: "**But unto you that fear [honor] my name shall the Sun [Christ] of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall; and you [The Bride] shall tread down the wicked; for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet in the day that I shall do *this*, saith the Lord of hosts**" (Malachi 4:2-3).

Then The Second Great Tribulation which ends the **curse** of the world. Christ is referring to the carcasses of Malachi 4, being under the feet of **the righteous**. "**For wheresoever [Armageddon] the carcass [wicked] is, there will the eagles [Bride] be gathered together [under Christ's wings as you read in Malachi]. The curse or tribulation is over** (Matthew 24:28).

With the end of the world **curse** or **the tribulation**, Jesus closes His prophecy that when the world curse ends, the heavens will shake and the sun and moon shall not shine and the stars will fall. Then, will appear the sign of Christ's **return** and the world will see The Return of Jesus coming with power and **glory** and they will mourn. **Right at that time the angels of heaven will gather the elect [Christians] from all the earth** (Matthew 24:29-31). The millennium of peace on earth **begins**.

## **This Generation**

With the conclusion of this prophecy in the account of Luke 21:32, Jesus states, "**Verily, I say unto you [Disciples], this generation shall not pass away, till all is fulfilled.**" The Greek word for "fulfilled" is "pleroma" or in the English, the word means "to complete." The curse starts with Christ's generation and doesn't end until all takes place or is completed.



The whole **curse** or **the tribulation** was completed or in process by the generation which existed at the time Jesus gave this prophecy to His Disciples.

Now, you are ready to read from *Acts* to *Revelation* about the destruction of Herod's Temple.

## CHAPTER 29

# THE TWO MYSTERIES

*The Bible* is the story of two different mysteries. One is called The Mystery of God (Colossians 1:25-26). The other is called The Babylonian Mystery ruled by Satan, the god of this world (II Corinthians 4:4 and Revelation 17:5). Christ said, “You shall know them by their fruits.” Both mysteries have different outcomes. What are the differences?

### In The Beginning

From the time of The Garden of Eden these two mysteries come from two different trees. One, The Tree of Life which leads to **salvation** and the other, The Tree of Good and Evil leads to death. Both of these trees contain mysteries and is secretly known by those who eat one tree or eat of the other tree.

It is very easy to tell which tree produces good fruit and which tree produces evil fruit. The Tree of Life produces eternal life and the other produces death. One is based upon **world peace** and the other **world violence** or death which culminates at Armageddon by a world war.

What needs to be understood is these two trees include the entire history of the world. From *Genesis* to *Revelation* it is prophesied and with *The Books of Acts* to *Revelation*, it becomes evident these two **mystery systems** are at play. Specifically, it affects God’s

two witnesses, Israel and The Gentiles who have been grafted into the olive tree which is no longer wild (Romans 11).

## God's Two Witnesses

In Revelation 7 and 14, God defines His two witnesses as 144,000 of Israel and The Innumerable Gentile Multitude.

Romans 11 reveals at one time the only witness was Israel – known as **the natural olive tree**. This included The Ten Lost Tribes as “Israel” and The Jews as “Judah.” Zechariah 4 reveals they were God's **two witnesses**. Then, because of sin, The Ten Tribes were taken captive and mixed into all The Gentile Nations.

Only Judah was left as God's witness to the world. Then, Judah becomes corrupt, which includes The Priesthood in **the temple** and they go into captivity in 70-74 A.D. This includes the destruction of the temple.

So, God turns to another nation, The Ten Lost Tribes, who always thought they were Gentiles. Now, part of Israel and The Gentiles become God's two **witnesses** to the world.

Paul in Romans 11 reveals The Gentiles, represented as a wild olive tree being grafted into the **natural** olive tree, Israel. These are God's **two witnesses** to the world. Read *Revelation Uncovered* for details.

The olive tree represents **The Tree of Life** and produces the right fruit through God's Holy Spirit coming from the olive tree or Christ. Jesus, The Christ is The Tree of Life whereby Christians receive **salvation**. This is **the mystery** God spoke of in Colossians 1:27.

The Tree of Good and Evil is The Mystery System which exists at Armageddon where **world suicide** is about to take place. World annihilation would be the outcome if it were not for Christ's intervention for the "**elects sake**" or "**the two witnesses.**"

### **A Nation More Worthy**

The word "curse" is defined as "destroying something Holy." Judah had corrupted themselves by rejecting The Messiah and God's Holy Spirit. Christ, therefore, decrees that God has left their **house** – Judah and **the temple**.

The Jews have eaten from The Tree of Good and Evil and by doing so have followed **the way of the flesh**. Jude 23 reveals it is your flesh which makes spots on your garment. Being human and following their human desires of survival, Judah had already corrupted themselves. In 70 – 74 A.D. the curse, through the tribulation, destroys them as a nation, along with **the temple**. Christians fled to the mountains and other places of safety.

Masada is the final destruction where The Jews committed suicide rather than be taken by The Romans. This occurred in 74 A.D. Then the tribulation was complete and The Jews no longer were a nation being scattered. The **great tribulation** is over and now God chooses His witnesses from a more noble nation, The Ten Lost Tribes (including The Gentiles).

### **Satan's Deception**

Satan has caused the destruction of God's two witnesses, Israel (Ten Tribes) and Judah and now God chooses **new witnesses** based upon those who have been seeking righteousness by fearing and honoring God (Acts 10:34-35).

God seeks those who (through **faith**) want this **righteousness** and not their own. Just as Israel was tested in the wilderness, Christians will be tried **in the wilderness** of the world with Satan as their **god**.

Satan, by deceiving Eve, **in the garden**, will become the devil to all of Adam and Eve's children. Satan, from this point, nips constantly at the heels of Adam and Eve's progeny to poison them by fooling them into eating of The Tree of Good and Evil.

With a **new witness**, The Church of God, Satan immediately begins his deception just as he fought Christ for 40 days in the wilderness. Satan had his battle with Jesus, The Christ, **the very Son of God**. Now **judgment** begins with The Household of God (I Peter 4:17).

At the end of the trial period, which will last thousands of years according to II Peter 3, the question is, who are God's real **faithful witnesses** and who aren't. Some need to be tried and tested in a second great tribulation just like The Jews had been in 70 A.D.

## **Last Days And End Days**

Hebrews 1:1-3 states that Jesus came in "**the last days**" and "**the last days**" started with The Roman Empire. It was **the fourth beast** of Daniel 2, when Jesus came in the **flesh**, the first time. If The Jews would have accepted Christ as The Messiah then, **the millennium** could have started and the world could have avoided the **curse** or The Great Tribulation.

Jesus was asked three questions in Matthew 24, Mark 13 and Luke 21. One was, "**When shall these things be?**" (temple destruction); the second was, "**What will be the sign of His com-**

ing?” and third, “**When will be the end of this world or age?**” (Matthew 24:3). “What will be The Mark of The Beast?” merely asks, “When the sign of **the temple’s** destruction would happen?” (Mark 13:4).

In Luke 21:7 they ask “when will these things be” – the destruction of **the temple** and when will it come to pass? That is why Jesus said, “**this generation shall not pass away till all be fulfilled.**” What should be fulfilled? The end of **the temple** is when the whole process takes place within that generation. However, Jesus was asked in *The Book of Matthew* when He would come and would that be the end of the world?

These are **the last days** since Christ was human, in the flesh, until this present day. The other question that needs to be answered is “when will the end of the world come with **His return.**”

Now Christ refers to His second coming and the end of the world. The point is not about **the last days**, but **the end of the world**. This is the end of days or **this world’s end**? Where can you find the answer?

Daniel 12 clearly prophesies **the end of days**. Notice what **the angel** tells Daniel: “**And at that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which standeth for the children of the people [latter-day Israel]: and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation *even* to that same time: and at that time thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the book**” (Daniel 12:1).

This is **the second tribulation** or destruction upon God’s people, but this time those written *in the book* are saved. This tribulation does not destroy everyone. The first tribulation with **the temple**

destroyed all of Jerusalem and **only** those who fled to the mountains ahead of time **were saved**.

Zachariah 14 reveals only one-half of Jerusalem is taken captive and then Christ intervenes. This is a **second great tribulation** or part of the **curse**. Also, this time all nations of the world, not merely The Roman Empire, are there. This is a world war. Malachi 3:16-17 reveals a *Book of Remembrance* which saves everyone written in it who will make up God's "**jewels**." Daniel 12:2-3 states this is a **time of resurrection**. This is definitely another great tribulation. Daniel, then, is told to seal up these words until "**the time of the end**." This is the end of the world. In Daniel 12:7 he is told that within a certain time, (times and an half) this end-of-days tribulation will take place. Then, all will be finished.

This answers the questions in Matthew 24, Mark 13 and Luke 21. The end of the world comes after 3½ years of tribulation and, then, Jesus **returns**.

Why are there two great tribulations or curses upon God's people? One happened in 70-74 A.D. with The Jews, but the second is prophecy, **yet to come**, which includes the whole world. Originally, Christ was to only come **once**. Christ was rejected and God went to another generation. This necessitated a **second coming**.

In Revelation 18 and 19, The Babylonian Mystery is revealed and Babylon is destroyed, but not God's people. This great tribulation terminates Babylon, **the great whore**.

This covers much of the future where the world follows the dictates of The Tree of Good and Evil in wanting to be their own "**god**" and not following The True God with The Tree of Life and

God's Holy Spirit.

The rest of *The New Testament* from *Romans* to *Revelation* reveals this future time of God's "**curse**" in Malachi 4, which includes the whole world.



## CHAPTER 30

### PROPHECY FAILS!

**If The Jews would have believed John, The Baptist, (who was Elijah to come), they would have accepted Jesus as The Messiah and “the curse upon Judah and the world” would not have happened. Instead, almost two thousand years ago, Jesus would have been crucified in Rome and at His resurrection the saints and angels would have destroyed the fourth beast in Daniel 2, and The Millennium would have become a reality. Then, there would not have been a need for Christ to come a second time.**

### Can Prophecy Fail?

The Apostle Paul relates the **only lasting gift** of God is “**love.**” The word “love” in Greek is “**agàpè.**” Then The Apostle makes an astounding statement, “**Charity never faileth: but whether *there be prophecies, they shall fail***” (I Corinthians 13:8). All other gifts **will** also vanish. Then Paul states, “For we [Christians including the preaching ministry] **know in part**” (I Corinthians 13:9). No one has all the truth. Some Christians may understand one part of “**faith**” while others may understand another part of “**faith**” (Romans 14).

But what does Paul mean when he says “prophecy will fail?” The Greek word for “fail” is “katargeo.” Its definition carries several values of meanings. Some are “to make useless,” “cease,” “abol-

ish,” “destroy” or “to render idle.” It conveys the meaning of “to stop” or “pause.” Paul is stating prophecies can and will be stopped but only for a specific reason.

It is very close *in definition* to what is known in English grammar as “an aorist subjunctive mood.” It states “the subject cannot occur” or “be happening until all conditions are met.” If any of these conditions do not occur, then **the process** stops (in this case the prophecy stopped). The Greek word “all” cannot be translated into a simple definition in English. The best we can do with the translation is “when all conditions are met,” Paul said prophecy, then, can continue. An example can try to explain when you might say, “I would have come, had you been here. Then, if you were here when I came, both of us could have met.” In this case, **if not all conditions are met** (the situation stops) and cannot continue.

Many times the English translation for the word “all” has used the same grammatical meaning. Jesus refers to The Law and Prophets that no change will occur in The Law until “all” is fulfilled (Matthew 5:18). The English translation of “all” is grammatically “**in the subjunctive mood.**” For The Law “**to change**” or “**be fulfilled**” “all” of The Law must take place. Another example is I Corinthians 15:22. The word “all” is in “the aorist subjunctive mood.” Until every **required condition occurs**, Christ cannot **save** “all” of Adam and Eve’s children.

For prophecies to fail or become **idle**, God’s “will” or “goals” must have been followed through. If not, the prophecy cannot and will not be fulfilled.

## Examples

A few **biblical** examples of failed prophecy are as follows: (1)

When God had determined to destroy Sodom and Gomorrah, He decided to let Abraham know about it (Lot was Abraham's relative). Abraham pleads and tries to get The Lord to put a stop to this prophecy. When God considers Abraham's request and decides if Abraham can find ten righteous men, He will concede and not allow the prophecy to be fulfilled. (2) An extraordinary example is when Israel sinned by building the golden calf and God was going to kill everyone with the exception of The Levites. Moses fearfully asked Him not to kill them because he felt God's name would be tarnished. God did, indeed, change His mind and allowed them to live, but only by establishing *The Old Covenant*, The Law of Moses by adding it to *The Torah*. (3) Another case is when Israel was supposed to enter God's promised land or God's rest. Because they lacked "**faith**" God would not allow them to enter His "**rest**." God felt because they lacked **faith** in Him and had a **wrong heart**, they could not enter His "rest" (Hebrews 3:10-11). They had to take "a test" for a period of 40 long years. In the end, only Joshua and Caleb were found **faithful** and passed the test.

Because The Israelites "**tried**" God ten times, the entire generation had to die as God planned on doing in the very beginning. Read Acts 7. Of that generation only Joshua and Caleb entered "**the rest**" but it took forty years to weed out all **the unfaithful** ones or allow them to die out. Once again prophecy failed or did not come to fruition until Israel, in their hearts, were ready to enter God's "**rest**." Over and over again, God has caused prophecy "**to fail**" or "**cease**" until all the required conditions were met or came to pass.

## Christ's First Coming

One of the most meaningful and greatest failings of prophecy was

concerning the first coming of Jesus, The Messiah. In *The Old Testament*, no second coming of Christ was necessary or deemed to be needed. Yeshua's **first coming** was to bring "**world peace**" and "**forgiveness of sin.**" At that time The Millennium could have begun. Why did Jesus have to come to the earth in the flesh? When Christ was born, what did **the angels** declare? "**Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men**" (Luke 2:13-14). The angels declared Jesus was born to bring **world peace**.

It was only as an adult did Jesus proclaim, "**But whosoever shall deny me *before* men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven. Think not that I come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword**" [war] (Matthew 10:34). There is your answer. When Jesus came, first, in the flesh, He came to bring peace on earth. But they denied Jesus, as The Christ. When He comes again, He will be bringing **the sword** (war). How clear! Jesus first came to bring world peace but they denied Him and the prophecy failed or did not need to be completed, because certain conditions were not met. What was this prophecy that failed in *The Old Testament*? Putting the two scriptures together in Luke 2:14 and Matthew 10:34, you are going to see that with Christ's first coming, He was to bring world peace. When that didn't work out, it became necessary for Him to come, yet, again. But with it – came a curse. Prophecy had to cease or **was stopped** because of this curse. World peace is delayed for thousands of years before Christ comes a second time and brings world peace when The Millennium can begin.

## Hezekiah's Death

King Hezekiah of Judah was told he would die. The Prophet Isaiah told this prophecy to the king. Hezekiah pleaded with God to

let him live longer because he had been obeying God. Since Hezekiah was a righteous king, God heard his prayer. God changed His mind and gave Hezekiah an additional 15 years. Here God again changed His mind and gave Hezekiah a sign **as proof** he would live longer. God changed prophecy by moving the sun back ten degrees. By moving time, God was giving Hezekiah 15 years longer to live. Wow! Prophecy was actually changed by God. Isaiah then told Hezekiah to place a fig upon his boil so he got better and lived for 15 more years. Also read Ezekiel 38, Isaiah 38 and 39.

As time goes on, God defeats The Assyrian army of 185,000 but Hezekiah makes a major mistake. When The King of Babylon hears of Hezekiah's healing, he sends emissaries to congratulate him. Hezekiah got carried away with himself and showed all his treasure and riches in **the temple**. God tells Isaiah to let Hezekiah know he should not have boasted and showed all his wealth. God prophesies Babylon would take Judah captive and take all **the temple's** riches. However, this prophecy did not occur until Hezekiah's death, so Hezekiah is pleased there will be peace, at least while he yet lives. God's future prophecy is: "**Let them bring forth, and shew us what shall happen: let them shew the former things, what they be, that we may consider them, and know the latter end of them: or declare us things for to come**" (Isaiah 41:22). This prophecy is in hindsight, but applies to the future also.

## A Failed Prophecy

Isaiah had a prophecy about The Messiah and His first coming as The Savior (Isaiah 40-45). No second coming had been prophesied. Only "**one coming**" of The Messiah was mentioned. What is the problem? The difficulty and answer is, " that particular

prophecy **failed.**” King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon came and took Judah captive by fulfilling the Hezekiah prophecy given by Isaiah and all **the temple** riches were taken to Babylon.

As revealed by Daniel, this captivity of Judah was to last 70 years before **the temple** could be restored waiting for The Messiah. Notice what Jesus had to say about God's **kingdom and world rule**: “**And from the days of John, The Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force. For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John**” (Matthew 11:12-13). This is exactly what occurred.

By rejecting Judah, Nebuchadnezzar, King of Babylon, took by violence God's **heavenly kingdom**. The Time of The Gentiles **begins**. From this point on, God allows Gentiles to rule the world on God's behalf (Daniel 2). Jesus will come when The Times of The Gentiles is **fulfilled or completed** and takes back **The Kingdom of God**. Jesus will, at that time, restore God's government (Daniel 2:44).

Nebuchadnezzar lost sight that it is God, in heaven, who decides who is going to rule His **kingdom** even though He allows Satan to do his damage. God even sets up the basest (most evil) of men according to His discretion to rule governments. This is the reason Nebuchadnezzar had to be a wild man in the wilderness for seven years. He had to learn it is God, in heaven, who runs the **kingdom** according to His plans and not “**mere men**” (Daniel 4). This statement by Christ has been so since the time of The Garden of Eden. However, something different is prophesied from the time of John, The Baptist.

Jesus declared, “**And if ye will receive it, this is Elijah [Elias], which was for to come**” (Matthew 11:14). John, The Baptist is

Elijah. This prophecy of Isaiah's is from "**the time of Elijah to come**" who is John, The Baptist. "**Comfort ye, comfort ye my people, [Judah] saith your God**" (Isaiah 40:1). God is about to declare a time of peace with no more war. This speaks of The Millennium in prophecy: "**Speak ye comfortably to Jerusalem, and cry unto her, that her warfare is accomplished, that her iniquity is pardoned: for she hath received of The Lord's hand double for all her sins**" (Isaiah 40:2).

There will be no more violence or warfare in God's **kingdom**. This doesn't mean forgiveness of sin (which is not included) but is only **a pardon**. Only Christ, by His sacrifice, is able to forgive sin. Jesus first came to forgive sin by His sacrifice, but as **the angel** said, it is also to bring peace to the world (Luke 2:14). The first coming of Jesus was to bring world peace and forgiveness of sin. The Millennium was to start with The Messiah's first coming. It wasn't actually **intended** or there wasn't any need for Jesus to come a second time according to the prophecy (Luke 19:39-47).

Notice: "**O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often I would have gathered thy children [Judah] together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not.**" [Now the question is when was Judah's and Jerusalem's "end of warfare" to occur]? "**The voice of one [him] that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of The Lord, make his paths straight**" (Mark 1:3). Wow! This is right out of Mark 1:2-3. John, as Elijah prepared "**the way**" of The Lord, Christ, The Messiah. Read the entire prophecy from Isaiah 40 to Isaiah 45.

The end of war for God's people was to come when John, The Baptist was preparing The Coming of The Messiah, Jesus, The Christ. You can read all of Malachi concerning this prophecy.

Not only had Judah corrupted God's way but **also corrupted the temple** as well. That is why Jesus cast out the money changers in **the temple** and said, **"You shall not make my fathers house a place of merchandise."**

Back to Malachi. **"Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me [Messiah]: and The Lord, whom ye seek shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant [Abrahamic], whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come, saith the Lord of Hosts [armies]"** (Malachi 3:1-4).

There it is. This is the prophecy of **"Christ's first coming."** There are **two messengers**. One is Elijah, who is to prepare the way for the second messenger, The Messiah. Jesus comes to God's **temple** and finds it is as corrupt as The Leaders of Judah.

What caused this prophecy to fail? Why did it become necessary for a **second coming** of The Messiah? Notice what Jesus would have done if the prophecy had been completed: **"But who may abide the day of his [first] coming? and who shall stand when he appeareth? for he is like a refiners' fire, and like fuller's sope: And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the Lord an offering in righteousness"** (Malachi 3:2-3). This refers to The Messiah's first coming. That is why Malachi 4:1-3 reveals The Day of The Lord. **"For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch** (Malachi 4:1-3). Always remember, this prophecy was to take place during **the first coming of Jesus**.



If Judah would have accepted Jesus as The Messiah, then Christ would, at that time, have been killed by The Romans, **resurrected** and **established The Millennium's rule**. Peace would have come for Jerusalem and brought forgiveness of sin. What happened to cause the failure of this prophecy? The Bible is very clear. **“Remember ye the Law of Moses my servant, which I commanded unto him in Horeb for all Israel, *with the statutes and judgments*. Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet [John, The Baptist] before the coming of the great and dreadful Day of The Lord. And he shall turn the heart of the fathers [Abraham, etc] to the children, and the heart of the children [Judah] to their fathers [Abraham, etc] LEST I COME AND SMITE THE EARTH WITH A CURSE”** (Malachi 4:4-6).

There is **the biblical** answer. Christ came to Jerusalem riding a colt and the people **declared** Jesus was The Messiah, their King (Zechariah 9:9-10). What actually happened when He came? The Nation of Judah rejected The Messiah who they had been waiting for, and instead, had The Romans put Him to death. Matthew 23 relates the state of the religious leaders of that day and the state of **the temple**. Why did **the prophecy** fail, which, then, required Jesus to come **a second time**? First, they rejected John, who was Elijah, **“to come”** and they had Jesus killed because they didn't **return** to The Law of Moses as Jesus preached. So, the curse was to fall upon the world.

Why didn't The Messiah's coming, the first time, bring world peace with The Millennium, as prophesied? By rejecting Jesus, The Christ and Elijah, the whole world was cursed. Matthew 24, Mark 13 and Luke 21 declared this curse.

II Peter 1:19 states, The Apostles now have a more **“sure”** or **“certain word of prophecy.”** They knew the world was under a curse.

Peter also knew the curse could last for thousands of years (II Peter 3:7-9).

The prophecy in Isaiah failed because God's people rejected the prophecy and caused a world curse to fall upon mankind. A new people had to be called who accepted Jesus as The Messiah (Matthew 21:43).

Prophecies do fail because certain conditions aren't met, but finally a sure word of prophecy makes "**the final cut**" to be in God's **plan** as prophecy predicted.

## CHAPTER 31

# WHAT IS THE CURSE?

The word “curse” in *The Bible* carries various meanings. The Hebrew or Greek generally use the appropriate Hebrew or Greek word denoting the context and meaning intended. To understand God’s “curse” you need to explicitly define what God is revealing.

### Malachi 4:6

In this verse the word “curse” refers to “a curse upon the entire world.” **“And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse.”** This applies to the entire earth. Also, this English word for “curse” is used sparingly in *The Bible*. The word is “cherem.” Its meaning is “something holy which needs to be destroyed.”

This curse, therefore, applies to The Day of The Lord when God steps in to save the world from suicide. Those who have God’s **righteousness** are saved while the rest are destroyed. Malachi’s answer: **“For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch. But unto you that fear my name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall”** (Malachi 4:1-2).

This prophecy is conditional. If the children had turned to **the fathers**, there would not have been a world-wide curse.

If Judah accepted Christ, **the millennium** would have started and there would not have been a world curse. Since they rejected The Messiah the world curse is sure to happen. It is now a prophecy, yet to be fulfilled.

Notice this is not The White Throne Judgment as some think, but Christ **returns** with “**healing in His wings.**” The millennium begins and this curse is The Battle of Armageddon when nations come together to fight in The City of Jerusalem (Zechariah 4:1-4). Then Verse 4 explains Jesus’ **return** to establish peace (Malachi 4:2). Those with The Mark of The Beast in the world are destroyed. Only the righteous are saved. This is the time of The Wrath of God.

This is the “world curse” or “cherem.” If the hearts of the children as preached by John, The Baptist and Christ would have obeyed, there would never have been a curse. Now, that which was to be Holy, Judah, and finally, the whole world, has corrupted themselves, so they have been cursed and will be destroyed.

### **Malachi 3:9**

Another **curse** is declared only against The Nation of Judah. This curse is enjoined because The Jews were not paying tithes to The Levites, The Priests in **the temple**.

In this case the Hebrew word for “curse” is “meerah.” This Hebrew word denotes “excrement.” This is not “cherem” meaning “to destroy” – but “excrement.” The other word in Malachi 4 “to destroy” is referring to two different prophecies.

The word “curse” in Malachi 3:9 is “to get rid of corruption or waste and you will be blessed.” In Malachi 4:6 “the curse” means “it is too late.” Corruption has come to also complete violence and what was to be Holy must be destroyed. This is what happened with the flood in Noah’s day. Since every thought of humanity was to do evil, it was time to destroy the world except for Noah and his family. This time “**the righteous**” are spared, but not those with The Mark of The Beast. Complete destruction or God’s **wrath** explodes. This is the winepress in Revelation 14:20.

## Two Tribulations

Matthew 24, Mark 13 and Luke 21 actually reveal **two tribulations**. Some believe there is only one but you will see there are two tribulations in those scriptures.

Many do not realize in the above three accounts of Christ’s second coming, Jesus answers, in private, **three different questions**. Matthew 24 is the only account referring to three different questions asked by His Disciples. “**And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world [Age]?**”

This scripture is the only one that answers these three questions for The Disciples:

- 1 **Destruction of Herod’s Temple.**
- 2 **Signs for the second coming of Christ.**
- 3 **End of the world or age.**

Mark 13 and Luke 21 only asks one question. When will **the temple** of Herod be destroyed? Jesus only answers this one question in *Mark* and *Luke*. The other events are mentioned, but only “**the destruction of the temple**” of Herod needs to be answered. That is why in Luke 21:32 it states, “**This generation shall not pass away, till all be fulfilled.**”

A generation is forty years or the exact time from Jesus' commission to fulfill His **ministry** in 30 A.D. until 70 A.D. when Herod's Temple was destroyed. Christ was answering the question as to when will **the temple** be destroyed. It was destroyed in that generation after 40 years of trial for Judah to stop the curse in *Malachi*, but they did not change. The curse began (but with two tribulations). The first, Luke 21:20 declares, “**When ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies [not nations], then know that the desolation thereof is nigh.**” What desolation? Matthew 23:28 reveals **the desolation of the temple**. To understand Matthew 24 you must read and understand Matthew 23.

Luke's account of **the desolation of the temple** is the exact question asked in Luke 21:7. Also, it isn't the nations of the world gathered around Jerusalem at the end time but **only armies**. There is even more. Luke 12:21-23 prophesies when this tribulation or desolation takes place, they are not to enter Jerusalem, but flee to the mountains and woe to those with child or leaving on The Sabbath. What desolation is this and which tribulation? Luke 21:24 clearly reveals two tribulations. “**And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations. Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.**”

This is **not** The Great Tribulation of Christ's second coming. Clearly this tribulation only refers to the time when Herod's Tem-

ple is destroyed. This tribulation only refers to Judah going into the captivity and being scattered into all nations. That is history.

The Great Tribulation at the end of days is discussed in Daniel 12 which lasts 3½ years. This is **the end of days** and the time of world rule by Gentile nations **is over** and **Christ returns**. Plainly, Luke 21:24 said this occurs when The Time of The Gentiles **is completed**. That is why after **the fulfillment** of The Gentile's rule in Luke 21:25 refers to heavenly signs as stated in Revelation 6 and in Revelation 7. Christ returns to bring world peace and to begin **the millennium**. This is the second tribulation or The Great Tribulation to conclude the curse of the world in Malachi 4:6.

That means in Matthew 24:15-26 the first tribulation of **the temple** is destroyed by Titus and the abomination placed in The Holy Place by Titus, which is Jupiter Olympus. This is all past history and no longer prophecy. Remember *Luke's* and *Mark's* account answers the question of the destruction of Herod's Temple only. Matthew 24:29 states, "**Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken.**"

This is not the first tribulation of Herod's Temple being destroyed, but when Christ **returns** the second time. Why? Because Luke 21:27 reveals the time of Christ's second coming. It is as lightning coming out of the east. Then the eagles, Christ's **saints**, meet Him in the clouds. There is **no secret** about His coming. Matthew 24:26 warns you should not believe when someone states Jesus is coming **in secret**.

Matthew 24 answers all three questions asked, but in *Mark* and *Luke*, one question is asked as to when **the temple** will be

destroyed.

## **Prophecy Fulfilled**

These three prophetic accounts give the complete requirement of God as revealed in Daniel 9 and Christ's life. Daniel 9:27 prophecy requires 70 X 7 days or years to take place before **the temple's** destruction.

Seventy times 7 is 490 years. From the decree to rebuild **the temple** by Cyrus, The Great and finally fulfilled with the building of the wall in Artaxerxes' day until Masada lasts 490 years. The Jewish nation no longer exists and the temple is destroyed. The last stronghold at Masada ended in 74 A.D.

Jesus was born about 3 B.C. and weaned two years later. That is why Herod killed all children from two years and younger. That leaves 70 years for Judah to repent. This ended in 70 A.D. with the destruction of **the temple**.

John, The Baptist and Jesus at His baptism in 30 A.D. allowed one generation, or 40 years for Israel, to become God's people and follow God's Laws of Moses. This brings you to 70 A.D. with the destruction of **the temple** and the first tribulation of the scattering of The Jews into all nations as captives. The second tribulation affects the whole world because they became totally corrupt and violent.

God's **wrath** is vented with the seven last plagues and Christ **returns**, immediately after this **world tribulation**, with heavenly signs before the **seventh trump**.

The curse of Malachi 4:4 is a destruction of the world's system of



The Mark of The Beast, which brings **the second great tribulation** thousands of years after the destruction of **the temple** in 70 A.D. Notice Peter's words: "**The Lord is not slack concerning his promise** [salvation], **as some men count slackness; but is long suffering** [patient] **to us-ward** [Christians], **not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance**" (II Peter 3:9).

Since God "**wills**" not to lose anyone, how long does it state God allows this world to continue? "**But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day**" (II Peter 3:8).

## Coming World Curse

The rest of *The Bible* "story" from *Romans* to *Revelation* relates how The Church of God stays **faithful** to Christ. Jesus said since The Jews rejected their Messiah He would go to a nation more noble or able to bring forth "**the fruits**" (Matthew 21:43).

In *The Book of Acts* Christ gave The Apostles their worldwide commission to witness He was The Messiah. This was The Church of God's purpose to fulfill this mission (Acts 1:8).

*Acts* begins with Pentecost and ends with The Apostle Paul's first imprisonment in Rome. Rome is where the world government of The Roman Empire is headquartered. For the two years he is in '**house arrest**' – he preaches *the gospel* to those in the palace (Acts 28:30-31).

The Apostle Peter, in Acts 2, preaches Christ on Pentecost in Jerusalem. *The Book of Acts* covers Jerusalem, Judah, Samaria to Rome the very headquarters in Rome. Act 1:8 is being fulfilled to

the world of The Apostle's day.

Now, you have read this preaching of **the gospel** to the world, according to Peter, in II Peter 3, is to last for thousands of years so God's patience, to bring everyone to **salvation**, can and will happen.

There it is, **the curse** of Malachi 4:4 is thousands of years away and the first tribulation of the temple ended in 70 A.D.

*Romans to Revelation* reveals why The Great Tribulation is thousands of years away from Christ's first coming since the first tribulation of **the temple** destruction and captivity of Judah is history. It is all dependent upon the *true gospel* of Christ being preached to the world by **the church** as a faithful witness. If not, the world is cursed.

## CHAPTER 32

# ROMANS – CORINTHIANS – GALATIANS

**The world’s future curse, The Day of The Lord, is predicated upon how well the world responds to the churches witnessing *The Gospel of Christ*. The rest of *The Bible Story – Romans to Revelation* reveals how the church preaches *The Gospel of Christ* to the world.**

### Romans

*The Book of Romans* addresses **the churches’ “first problem.”** From Pentecost onward, The Jews persecute this “**new Jewish sect**” called **Christians**. Since Christianity was regarded as a Jewish sect the circumcision party in “**the church**” tried to get Christians circumcised. Why?

First and foremost, those not circumcised could not go into God’s **temple** which was still there. They couldn’t even enjoy feasting together as brothers should (Read *Galatians*).

Most of all, being circumcised made them a debtor to keep the entire Law of Moses (Galatians 5:3). Now, you can understand why circumcision was such an important act to those from “**the circumcision party.**”

Those who believed Gentiles had to be circumcised in order to be saved and therefore had to keep The Law of Moses didn’t understand *The Torah*. You must understand the meaning of *The Torah*

and The Law of Moses in regard to **salvation**.

## What Is The Torah?

The age-old debate among Christians is “do they keep The Law?” There is absolutely no place in *The Bible* where it says Christians should **not** keep The Law. In Galatians, Paul reveals Christians are not subject to “**the works**” of The Law. That is, they do not keep “**all the legalistic deeds**” of The Law. But that makes it sound like it is ALL RIGHT for Christians to SIN. Does *The Bible* give a definitive answer to the question? And why is *The Torah* called The Law?

## The Wrong Argument

Abraham kept **the commandments, statutes and Laws of God** (Genesis 26:5). So The LAW was known long BEFORE Moses was born. Paul also makes an astounding statement in Galatians 3:17. “**And this I say, the Covenant [Abrahamic], that was confirmed before of God in Christ, THE LAW, which was four hundred thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect.**” This sounds like a contradiction. If The Law came four hundred and thirty years after The Abrahamic Covenant, then how did Abraham know to keep The Law? The Law doesn't seem to make sense. Then, to make matters worse read this scripture: “**Wherefore then [serve] The Law? It was ADDED because of transgressions [SINS]. TILL THE SEED SHOULD COME to whom the promise was made, and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator**” (Galatians 3:19). What is the answer? Check *The Bible* further.

The word “serve” in this verse is not found in any of the early manuscripts. It **was added** in later translations. The real question

being asked in the original is, “Wherefore then The LAW?” That is the real **biblical** question or why have The Law at all? How can you “ADD something” to “something that already exists?”

Plainly, Paul states The Law “**was added**” to something. It certainly **could not** have **been added** to itself. The Law can’t be added to “**a law**” already existing. This Law given to Moses had to “be added” to something which ALREADY EXISTED, but what “was added” had to be different. Read Verse 19 again. First, whatever **was added, was added** because of sin, (when Israel built the golden calf). But this addition was only to last **until Christ came**. Thirdly, Christ was **the promised seed** in The Abrahamic **covenant to restore paradise**. Then Paul answers the question about the **added part**. “**Wherefore the Law was our SCHOOLMASTER to BRING US UNTO CHRIST, that we might be JUSTIFIED by FAITH**” (Galatians 3:24). So, something was ADDED to The Law which was different from what was known about The Law four hundred thirty years **earlier** in Abraham’s day.

### **What Was Added?**

You already read the answer. The part which was ADDED to The Law, which did not previously exist in The Law, was that PART which was a SCHOOLMASTER which would be able to LEAD YOU TO CHRIST. EVERYTHING THAT WAS “SHADOWED” OR LED YOU TO JESUS, THE CHRIST WAS ADDED. IT was a SCHOOLMASTER. Paul calls these additions, “WORKS” (“ER-GON”) or “DEEDS” OF THE LAW. So many have attempted to explain, but this time let Christ give you the complete explanation and answer. In Hebrew the word for “works” is rendered “commands.” If you read or write down whenever Paul used the word “**works**” and inserted “commands” you, then, would read “why

keep **The Commands of The Law.**” What kind of “commands” or “deeds?” Those “**commands**” in The Law which pointed to the schoolmaster – Christ. When Jesus came, all those “legal works” or “**commands**” ceased. Why?

### **Jesus Gives The Answer**

Jesus said, “**Think not that I come to DESTROY THE LAW, OR THE PROPHETS: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill**” (Matthew 5:17). In Greek, the word “FULFILL” means “to entirely make full.” In English this one word “fulfill” would be defined as “COMPLETE.” Christ plainly said He did not come to destroy The Law OR THE PROPHETS, but “**to complete**” them. But how?

Many read these verses but miss the CONTEXT. Jesus did not refer only to The Law but also to The Prophets. So there is something in The Law and The PROPHETS that Jesus was going “to complete” or “bring to its totality.” What was that? If you will allow *the scripture* to interpret itself instead of reading with a pre-set agenda, the biblical answer is **clear**. Jesus discloses *The NEW COVENANT* in The Law or *Torah*, as well as, The Prophets. Then Jesus states He came to **complete** The Law and The PROPHETS. “**For verily I say unto you, TILL HEAVEN and EARTH PASS, one jot or one tittle shall in NO WISE PASS FROM THE LAW, TILL ALL BE FULFILLED**” [completed].

At the time of The New Heaven and Earth a certain part of The LAW does “cease.” But how? It ceases when it is “FULFILLED.” In what way does The Law cease? Remember there is something different about The Torah or LAW which is a PROCESS. Something in The Law and Prophets discloses something which happens. Jesus in His parting “**words**” to His Disciples said. “**These**

**are the words which I spoke unto you, while I was yet with you, THAT ALL THINGS MUST BE FULFILLED, which were WRITTEN in the Law of Moses, and *in* the prophets, and in the Psalms CONCERNING ME”** (Luke 24:44).

There is your **biblical answer**. Jesus tells you everything in The Law, PROPHETS and PSALMS concerning HIM must be COMPLETED. Everywhere you read the word “FULFILL” in *The New Testament*, as in Luke 24:44, “**the word**” or “FULFILL” is “**to complete.**” In Greek it is “PLERO” or “PLEROMA.”

This is exactly what Paul said The Law was supposed to do in Galatians 3:24. “**Wherefore The Law was OUR SCHOOLMASTER to bring us unto Christ, that we might be JUSTIFIED BY FAITH.**” Christ and Paul declared The Law and The Prophets were written to prove Jesus was The Christ. Jesus was God’s very Son as The Law and Prophets revealed.

When those parts of The Law or PROPHETS were **completed**, you no longer could regard it as **PROPHECY**, but it then became **HISTORY**. The Prophets and this part of The Law were “completed” or “fulfilled” and NO LONGER APPLIED. The jot and tittle of The Law or Prophets were “fulfilled” or “complete.” When Jesus was sacrificed as The Paschal Lamb, Christians no longer needed to sacrifice a lamb (sheep) or any other animal. Jesus already “fulfilled” or “completed” that part of The Law.

Read Paul’s answer following The Law’s **purpose**. “**But after that FAITH IS COME [HAPPENS], WE ARE NO LONGER UNDER A SCHOOLMASTER**” (Galatians 3:25).

There is your **biblical** definition for “**under The Law.**” It is **everything** that **pointed to Christ** which He **completed**. Every

JOT and TITTLE of The Law and PROPHETS must be “completed” or “fulfilled” when it occurs as **prophecy** and then, when it is “finished” or “completed” or “fulfilled” it becomes known as **history**. So declares **God's “word.”**

Paul, completing Galatians 3, then reveals once you are baptized you are one of God's children. Now, **HAVING PUT ON CHRIST** and no longer are for Jews or Greeks, male or female, because “**in Christ**” you are not under any Old Covenant but are now **HEIRS** according to the **PROMISE** made to Abraham. You have received **your inheritance** (Ephesians 1:13-14). The Abrahamic **promise of The Law or Torah** must be “completed” or “fulfilled” and Jesus in Matthew 5, 6 and 7 gives the entire answer. Read those chapters how Jesus changes The Letter of The Law to The Spirit of The Law (II Corinthians 3). The letter or written Law produces **DEATH** but The **SPIRIT** of The Law produces **LIFE** which is **SALVATION**. How **clear**, how **biblically simple**. The Law is now transferred from *The Old Covenant* to *The New Covenant*, which is a **spiritual matter**. The Law is **spiritual** and **always exists** (Romans 7:14). The part which “**was added**” because of sin was instituted to reveal Christ. **When Jesus completes The Prophecy, it is over and is history.** *The Old Covenant* never makes anyone perfect and never could save anyone. That is why Paul says “**the letter**” gives death. Doing The Letter gives a good physical life, but The Works of The Law can never **FORGIVE SIN** (Hebrews 10). Read the full chapter. Only *The New Covenant* gives **SALVATION** through Christ. Christ completes The Letter of The Law about Him and puts **The Torah Law on a higher standard.**

## Law Of Moses Added

**What “was added”** is The Law of Moses and all its “physical



works” or legal “deeds.” The Law of Moses cannot be the same Law that Abraham kept in Genesis 26:5. Why not? They could not be the same since Paul said The Law of Moses was added four hundred thirty years after Abraham. What “**was added**” to The Commandments and Statutes had to be different. What was different with The Law of Moses?

Deuteronomy 5:2-3 states, “**The Lord our God made a COVENANT with us [Israel] in Horeb. The Lord MADE NOT THIS COVENANT with OUR FATHERS, but with us, even us [Israel], who are ALL OF US [Israel] here alive this day.**”

There is your **biblical answer**. This Covenant was not made with Noah, Abraham, Isaac or Jacob and was different in some way than The Commandments and Statutes in Genesis 26:5. The Covenants in The Law or *The Torah* made with Noah, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob were DIFFERENT than The Law of Moses which was “**added**” to *The Torah*. All these Covenants are in The Law or The Torah. In Hebrew, “*The Torah*” is “the teaching” or “learning a **pathway**” or “**way**” to Christ. *The Torah* is far more than *The Old Covenant* “**added**” to *The Torah*. *The Torah* is a **way to salvation** or Christ. **Christ is “The Torah.”** *The Torah* is “**the schoolmaster**” to lead to Jesus. *The Old Covenant* was only “**a shadow**” of good things to come (Colossians 2:16-17 and Hebrews 10:1).

How was it different? First, it was only made with Israel and not The Gentiles. That is why **the church** in Acts 15 stated The Gentiles did not have to be circumcised or keep The Law. Read all of Acts 15.

Secondly, it was *The Old Covenant* that was **added** to *The Torah*. This Old Covenant “**was added**” because of “**sin**” and that is why Paul said The Law was made for the UNRIGHTEOUS (I Timothy.

1:9-10). The Law of Moses was added to *The Torah* four hundred thirty years after Abraham. *The Torah* is a **pathway** or **the way** to **salvation**. Once **the shadows** of good things to come “**occurred**” they, then, became the past or history. That is EXACTLY what Christ said in Matthew 5, 6 and 7.

## The Spiritual Torah

Jesus, The Christ, clearly stated, “**For I say unto you, that except YOUR RIGHTEOUSNESS SHALL EXCEED *the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees*, ye shall in no case enter into The Kingdom of Heaven**” (Matthew 5:20). My, how plain!

The scribes and Pharisees command the keeping of *The Old Covenant* made only to Israel and proselytes who were circumcised and kept The Letter of The Law. Then Jesus defines in the rest of Matthew 5 what being “**more righteous**” really means. The Law of Moses with its **legalistic works** and **commands** could never give you **SALVATION**. Why? Keeping The Letter of The Law NEVER CHANGES HUMAN NATURE. It is too weak!

## A Higher Standard Of The Torah

To be in **the kingdom of heaven** you must be **PERFECT** as Christ concluded in Matthew 5:48. The Law of Moses could never make anyone perfect, but as Christ clearly said, *The New Covenant* could.

Now, *The Torah*, that is predicated UPON FAITH as the faith Abraham had, makes a Christian RIGHTEOUS or PERFECT. All the **added** prophecies which pointed to Christ once they occurred, Christians are no longer commanded to keep them. They are **history**. Now, it is the **RIGHTEOUSNESS** of *The Torah*

*Law* WHICH IS **WRITTEN** IN THEIR HEARTS (DESIRES) and MINDS (**TRUTH**).

Christ is Your Passover Lamb. He has made everyone unleavened as long as you are “in Christ” and you have received The Holy Spirit (inheritance) and Jesus has **ATONED** you to God. All The Holy Days and what they **shadow** are history for Christians. They are not required for salvation.

Does that mean you no longer can memorialize The Holy Days? Of course not! That is why Paul told Gentile Christians (I Corinthians 5) how to keep **the feast** in **SINCERITY** (honesty) and **TRUTH**. The Feast of Unleavened Bread is for Christians to be **SINLESS** and not like the fornicator (I Corinthians 5). Christians to be **SAVED** are on a higher standard of **KEEPING THE Torah Law** by The Law “completed” or “fulfilled” in their **HEARTS AND MINDS!** For Christians **all the added deeds of The Law are completed in Christ**. Now, in *The New Covenant*, “*The Torah*” is a **spiritual matter** and must be kept on a higher level in **your heart and mind** and not by “deeds” or “works.”

Christian’s very nature must become like Christ – **sinless**. That is called **spiritual growth** (Ephesians 4). This is *The Old Covenant* and The Law of Moses. The written Law of Moses is in **the letter**, or written, to tell what **righteousness is to all unconverted, carnal people** (I Timothy 1:9). Paul in Romans said it is a **matter of faith** that God **saves** you and not by The Law of Moses. Therefore, circumcision was not and is not required.

## Corinthians

The Church of God in Corinth was just the opposite. They were primarily Gentiles and idolaters. They were **babes** “in Christ”

and still carnal (I Corinthians 3:1-2). They were so carnal they were beginning to become divided into their own denominations by choosing their particular favorite minister. Paul had to warn them against this practice. In fact, Paul covered many basic Christian subjects in his letters to The Corinthians. They just couldn't or wouldn't follow Christ.

## Galatians

In *The Book of Galatians* once again the subject flares up by “**the circumcision party**” over “**table-fellowship.**” Peter and others succumbed when some came from Jerusalem and wouldn't feast with The Gentiles. This was part of The Acts 15 Doctrinal Dispute over Gentiles being circumcised and keeping The Law (Acts 15:5).

Once James declared The Holy Spirit given to The Gentiles **without circumcision** or **keeping** The Law of Moses, it would then prove God now accepted The Gentiles in fellowship with Israel (Romans 11). Therefore, it was not necessary for Gentiles to be circumcised or keep The Law of Moses (Acts 15:24). Since The Gentiles received The Holy Spirit they were **heirs** along with **converted Jews** and no longer servants or slaves under *The New Covenant* to *The Old Covenant* (Galatians 4).

## Servants And Heirs

At times, a certain **biblical** subject may be difficult to comprehend. This may be so, especially when you try to understand the differences between *The Old* and *New Testaments*. First, you must understand both are based upon *The Torah* or The Law, which is *The Old Covenant*. *The Old Covenant* is where you must keep everything in The Letter or by “**physical commands.**” On the

other hand, *The New Covenant* is a matter of keeping The Law by allowing God to write His **commandments** in your heart and mind. *The Old Covenant* makes you a “**servant**” while *The New Covenant* makes you an “heir.”

There is even a simpler and even easier way to know the difference between a **servant** and an **heir**. Both keep the same Law but in different ways. Let *The Bible* give you the answer.

## Servants

Paul makes an astounding statement concerning The Law. “**Now I say, That the heir, as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be Lord [master] of all**” (Galatians 4:1).

Even a prince, in order to be “**an heir**” to a throne as king, is still a child and therefore like any other **servant**. In this verse the word for “servant” in the Greek is “doulos.” This is a different Greek word for “servant” than “diakonos” or “a waiter who serves others.” “Doulos” used for servant applies to “a slave.” They are owned and in bondage to someone or something.

Paul is telling you even if one is a **prince** but still a child in heart, the prince is regarded as a **slave**. That is why Paul states, “**But is under tutors and governors until the time appointed of the father**” (Galatians 4:2). This royal child is treated like a slave and must do all he is told by others in authority. Until the father decides this child should receive his inheritance, he continues **in bondage as a slave**.

This can’t be any clearer! You will see The Law of Moses was designed with all its legalistic deeds or works to keep Israel, as a

nation, sinless. They had to keep every part or works of The Law and therefore were in slavery or bondage to *The Old Covenant*.

Paul then declares, “**Even so we [Christians], when we were children, in bondage under the elements of the world**” (Galatians 4:3). Christians were slaves or servants to elements of the world. What are the elements which make Christians slaves?

The Greek for “element” is “stoicheion” which means “something orderly in arrangement.” It is **of this world**, as done by humans, which has a set physical system. If one is speaking of religion then it is a religious or “**a physical system of worship.**”

It is what you would follow **over and over** but in “**an orderly manner.**” It is your religion and you are **slaves** or **servants** to it. Does *The Bible* relate to what Paul is referring to? Yes, it does! It is so descriptive you cannot deny its meaning if you will be honest with yourself.

## An Allegory

Paul, out of concern, reveals the answer. “**My little children [slaves], of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you**” (Galatians 4:19). “**Tell me, ye that desire to be under the Law, do ye not hear the Law**” (Galatians 4:21)?

Paul, in this case, defines “**under The Law**” not as a penalty but exactly what it literally says. The Law tells you, “**Tell me, ye that desire to be under the Law, do ye not hear the Law**” (Galatians 4:21)?

The Apostle said if you want to be under The Law, then listen to what The Law reveals. “**For it is written [The Law], that Abra-**

**ham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid [servant slave], the other by a freewoman [heir]. But he *who* was of the Bondwoman [servant] was born after the flesh [carnal] but he of the freewoman [heir] was by promise [a gift]**” (Galatians 4:22-24).

The subject is the difference between being “**a servant**” as the **bondwoman** or **the free woman** as “**an heir**” to a promise (as in a will). God defines the difference between a servant, slave and an heir. Now for the answer! “**Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants [old and new]; the one from the Mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage [slavery], which is Agar [Hagar]**” (Galatians 4:24).

Paul clearly separates *The Old* and *New Covenants* (Law of Moses and Law of Christ). One is to bondage or slavery.

In Greek the word “allegory” means “what to do” or “a constant harangue.” It signifies “one is a servant” or “in slavery and needs to be told everything and how to do it.” That is why James 2:10 states if one keeps *The Old Covenant*, (The Law of Moses) then they must keep every part of it. Why? Because to keep *The Old Covenant* you are in bondage as a servant or a slave. You must do everything without the slightest infraction. These are servants!

Now read Galatians 4:25 which simply defines *The Old Covenant* Law of Moses. “**For this Agar [Hagar] is Mount Sinai in Arabia [The Law of Moses], and answered to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage [slavery] with her children [Jews].**” This refers to The Apostle’s time period before the destruction of **the temple**. It is why Jesus said, “**The Pharisees and Sadducees sit in Moses seat.**” [This was *The Old Covenant*, The Law of Moses and Christ said] “**do what they tell you**” (Matthew 23:1-2). This was for **unconverted carnal people** (I Timothy 1:7-10). This was

The City of Jerusalem in bondage to The Law of Moses, they were in bondage (slavery) to Rome.

## The Heir

Paul states Christians are not under **bondage** or **slavery** to do everything The Law of Moses reveals. Why? Because Christians are from The Spiritual Jerusalem “**in heaven**.” That is why in *Hebrews* there is a profound statement concerning *The New Covenant* and its Priesthood (Galatians 4:26-31). With The Priesthood being changed there is “made of necessity” a **change also of The Law** (Hebrews 7:12).

*The Old Covenant* with Moses in The Letter is bondage or required to be kept perfectly without a single omission. When you follow The Law of Moses, you are in slavery and bondage. This refers to physical Jerusalem on earth and *The Old Covenant*.

In *The New Covenant*, you, as a Christian, are now **an heir** and **no longer in slavery**. *The New Covenant* through Christ and His **administration** changes your nature by writing God's Law in your heart and mind (Hebrews 8:10). However, this Priesthood does not come from Jerusalem on earth but Jerusalem “**in heaven**” where Jesus administers The Law **spiritually**. You are no longer servants or slaves to The Letter of The Law but have liberty by Christ making you perfect through God's Holy Spirit. The change to Melchizedek in heaven makes the heavenly Jerusalem **the mother** of all Christians.

As heirs, you are free from **the demands** of The Letter in order to get salvation. Now The Law becomes a **spiritual matter** dependant on Christ by The Holy Spirit. It gets down to one accomplishment, you must become like Jesus (Ephesians 4).



No longer are your sins passed over or covered for another year from one “**atonement**” to another. Now Christ has atoned you and “**your sins are not only forgiven but forgotten.**”

Hebrews 7 in no way states that any human ministers **on earth** are now Levites. Read *Hebrews*’ answer concerning The Priesthood. Hebrews 8:4-5 reveals, “**For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest, seeing that there are priests that offer gifts according to the law.**”

There is no minister who can claim he is a Levite on this earth. Jesus is High Priest only in heaven. If Jesus, Himself were on earth, He would **not be a Priest**. On earth **only** The True Levites can serve in **the earthly temple**. When Christ returns He will have Levites, not Christian ministers, serving in **the temple** and The Levites will receive the tithes.

Christians, as **heirs**, worship God in the heavenly temple, a spiritual matter and are no longer in bondage to The Letter of The Law. The Law is spiritual (Romans 7:14). Christian’s sins are forgiven through Christ. You are in God’s **kingdom** as His sons and, therefore, no longer servants.

Then, Hebrews 8:13 ends the matter of *The Old* and *New Covenant* by saying *The Old* is aging and ready to vanish. Christians are now heirs and no longer **servants** in God’s **kingdom**. This heavenly Jerusalem is free and not under **bondage** or **slavery**.

Then Galatians 4:30 declares you cannot be under **two covenants**. If you believe you are to keep The Law of Moses and have God’s Law written in your heart and mind, it is an impossibility. You cannot put old wine and new wine together. Plainly, Paul said, “**Cast out the bondwoman** [servant and her son].” *The Old Cov-*

**enant of The Law of Moses cannot make a person an heir. The Old Covenant can only make one a servant and therefore can never be an heir!**" How clear and simple! Then Paul solidifies this point in Galatians 4:31. **"So then, brethren, we are not children of the bondwoman [slave], but of the free [New Covenant]."**

Paul issues a warning to those who want to be circumcised. Why is this? **"Behold, I Paul say unto you [Christians], that if ye be circumcised, Christ profits you nothing."** Your sins are not forgiven and you cannot be an heir. This is as simple as it gets.

Now to put the final end to *The Old Covenant for Christians*. **"For I testify [witness] again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law."** There it is! Christians are **not** required to be circumcised and do the whole Law because, then, you as a Christian cannot be an **heir** to Christ. It is The Holy Spirit only, which can write God's Law in your heart and mind.

*The Old and New Covenants* are **two separate and different contracts**. You cannot combine them. One makes you a servant and can never make you an heir. The "Old" tells you what to do, as "a harangue" and the other gives you God's **"righteousness."** *The New Covenant* cleans your nature to be like Christ and God, The Father. As your Father makes you His sons, like Christ, you become an **heir** of God's **kingdom**.

Galatians 4:5 reveals now, under *The New Covenant*, you are adopted from flesh to be **"spirit"** as God's very sons and **heirs** to His Glorious Kingdom.

With the conclusion of The Acts 15 **"doctrine changes,"** The Jewish persecution ceased. The Jews were no longer a Christian

problem after 50 A.D. Now a new persecution entered The Church of God.

## **False Teachers**

In Matthew 24 Jesus warned The Disciples that many false teachers or ministers would come into **the church**.

Christ said, “**For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive you**” Matthew 24:5. Jesus is talking to His Disciples warning them not to be deceived.

These false teachers admitted Christ was The Messiah but would deceive many. This isn't concerning the future. This warning was directed to Christ's Disciples.

The Church of God was now attacked by new teachings not of Christ. Paul warned the same thing in Ephesus (Acts 20: 29-31). This prophecy becomes significant later in *The Book of Revelation*. Some in Corinth were even claiming to be Apostles but were false Apostles (II Corinthians 11:13-14).

As you read the rest of *The Bible*, Christianity is constantly attacked by people like Simon Magus and many others who were Gentiles, claiming to be Jews (Revelation 2:9). A falling away from the truth escalated especially from 50 A.D. onward.

## CHAPTER 33

# THE GOSPEL OF CHRIST

*After **The Epistle of Galatians** settles the question of **The Old Covenant**, then in **Ephesians**, **Colossians** and **Philippians** Paul concentrates on **The New Covenant**. These **epistles** were written while Paul was in prison.*

### FAITH DELIVERED TO THE SAINTS

*The Book of Jude* issues a warning. “**Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you...and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.**” (Jude 3).

In Jude’s day Christianity was under such attack and deception that Jude had to plead to fellow-Christians **to return to the faith** originally delivered to **the saints**.

Paul, being imprisoned, was also concerned about *The Gospel of Christ*. In *Ephesians*, *Colossians* and *Philippians*, he writes he is deeply worried about the original faith he had delivered to the saints.

Ephesians 1:1: Paul directs this *epistle* to **the saints** and **faithful**. Paul continues and reminds them that God had predestined or pre-determined a plan to adopt everyone from human parentage and make everyone His children. Making you God’s very sons. Why? Because God is love (I John 4:8) and therefore gives Him great

pleasure (Ephesians 1:4-5). This is God's very purpose. It is God's **will** or **testimony**. This is God's **promise** or "**written will**" that you become Holy and without blame before Him (Ephesians 1:4). God is love and therefore has put this pre-planned "**will**" in force, which God, also, stated in The Abrahamic Covenant. God's purpose is to be "all and in all" (I Corinthians 15:28). Christians are to be Holy and without blemish "in Christ."

Even though God makes mankind His sons, like Christ, His purpose is **for everyone** to be like him. That is why Ephesians 3:15 declares that the entire family in heaven and earth is named after God. The Greek for "family" is "patria" or "father." God is your Father and everyone will eventually carry His name, God, just as children carry their earthly father's name.

What is the requirement in order to be a Christian? You must be Holy and without blemish with God's "love." When does this occur? Paul relates this truth of God's "will" or "testament" is a mystery (Ephesians 1:9-12). It is only revealed to His **saints** and **faithful** ones. This is the faith Jude was referring to in his *epistle*. When does this predestined plan take place? It comes to fruition, when in the dispensation of times, when all things in Christ takes place in everyone (in heaven and earth). Paul wrote of this time and the process in I Corinthians 15:21-28.

The word "dispensation" in English merely means to "dispense" or "give something." God's "**will**" or "testament" in Greek conveys "everything in God's household." God intends to give everyone all the riches of His "**glory**" ("doxa" in Greek) and riches in God's house. Wow!

As heirs, you receive these spiritual benefits by Christ with the seal of God's Holy Spirit. This Holy Spirit is the "**earnest**" or

“**down payment**” of your inheritance (Ephesians 1:11-14).

This is the **faith** delivered to the **saints** and **faithful** ones. It is “**a given**” or “**a promised right**.”

How do you become Holy and without blame with “agapè love?” Paul finalizes the answer to being Holy in *Ephesians*. “**Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, into the measure of the stature of the fulness [completeness – wholeness] of Christ**” (Ephesians 4:13).

This is **the faith of what a Christian is**. Regardless, whether you are a woman or a man, or an Israelite, Gentile or whatever, you are all to be like Jesus, as a Son of God (Galatians 3:28-29).

This is why Paul wrote *Ephesians*. He wanted to be sure, while he was in prison, that they remained faithful to Christ as was delivered to **the saints**.

## The Mind Of Christ

While in prison, Paul continues the subject of being “*in Christ*.” Paul declared he didn’t care what the internal motive of a preacher was as long as he preached Christ “in you” (Philippians 1:18).

Then Paul reveals what Jesus is like. He brings up The Mind of Christ. Many misunderstand Paul’s meaning. Paul was revealing, Christ chose to be a servant and help to heal all mankind. Jesus, being The Son of God, lowered Himself to **servitude**. This is The Mind of Christ (Philippians 2:5). He came not to be served, but serve. Even though He was God’s Son and had all authority from God, He always chose to be a servant (Hebrews 1:9). Christ loved

**righteousness** and, therefore, He chose to be a **servant**. Jesus Christ has the same “agapè love” His Father has (Hebrews 1).

*Philippians* reveals the true nature of Christianity. You are to give your body as a living sacrifice, as Christ did. You must mature to the measure and stature of Jesus (Romans 12:1). This is “**the faith**” and “**requirement**” of “**Christianity**.”

### A New Problem

Once you come to *Colossians*, Paul is in prison and hears of a new problem taking hold in **the Christian faith**. Epaphras, their pastor and fellow servant with Paul, delivers a warning concerning The Colossians but especially to Laodicea. Because of false preachers bringing a faith, not delivered originally to “**the saints and faithful**,” people were being **mised**. Paul refers to these preachers as “**any man**” (Colossians 1:7-10). What were they preaching?

### Christ In You

First and foremost Paul reveals the subject or theme in his *Colossian Epistle*. Paul covers Christ's history of being the one who forgives sin and is the fulfillment of Christianity. *Ephesians* and *Philippians* cover this truth of Christian faith. You must be “**in Christ**” to be **saved**. Paul explains The Mystery of Christ in Colossians 1:27.

Christ “**in you**” or becoming like Christ, is God's **purpose** to be “all and in all.” Then Paul clearly relates what Christianity is. “**Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom; that we [ministers] may present everyman perfect in Christ Jesus**” (Colossians 1:28). This is Paul's warn-

ing to “**any man**” preaching; they had better be preaching **the Christian requirement** to have Christ “in you” and that is all that is required. This is the entire message to The Colossians and Laodicians. The Laodicians had lost this truth in Revelation 3. What did The Colossians and Laodicians loose sight of in relationship to Christianity?

Paul reiterates, “**For I would that ye knew what great conflict I have for you, and for them at Laodicea** (Colossians 2:1). Paul, while in prison, was seriously worried about those who had not known him personally. What was he worried about? “**That their hearts [desires] might be comforted, being knit together in love [agàpè], and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgement of the mystery of God [Christ “in you”], and of The Father, and of Christ**” (Colossians 2:2). Then he concludes the subject of *Colossians* with this statement: “**In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge**” (Colossians 2:3).

The main subject of Paul’s warning is written in Colossians 2:4. “**And this I say, lest any man should beguile you with enticing words.**” There it is. Paul concludes his warning in Colossians 2:6, “**As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him.**” Since all riches and wisdom is Christ “in you” it is the only Christian requirement. To be like Christ.

## **Any Man**

Why does Paul call these misleading preachers “any man?” In Greek, the word used for “man” is “anthropos.” This is “man in his natural state of the animal kingdom.” Rather than inspired preachers with God’s Holy Spirit, these are preachers merely teaching Christ from their own human ideas. Paul warns about



this type of preaching, even referring to himself and other Christian ministers, lest they falter. Paul declares, “**For other foundation can no man (anthropos) lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ**” (I Corinthians 3:11). How clear and simple!

The Corinthians were breaking up into individual denominations by picking their favorite minister. Some preferred Appolos and Paul said he was glad he hadn't baptized them. Paul, including himself, said that “**no man**,” the natural man, can preach any requirement for Christianity, **other than** Christ “**in you**,” which is God's **mystery**. Paul warns if anyone preaches anything else besides Christ “**in you**,” they will end up in The Lake of Fire and be tried, but eventually, they, too, will be saved (I Corinthians 3:12-15). What were these fake carnal men preaching?

### **Three False Preachers**

The first false preaching was a man advocating human philosophy requiring “**human efforts**” in religious rituals that were man-made ideas of the world (Colossians 2:8).

The second false preacher was of “**the circumcision party**” commanding the keeping of The Holy Days, Sabbaths and new moons which were only meant to be shadows or a prophecy concerning Christ. That is why Paul reminded them that the body was only of Christ (Colossians 2:14-17). These days were never required for salvation.

The third false preacher was “**beguiling them by “will” worship**” or “**punishing the flesh**” and, also “**worshipping angels.**” This was the penetration of Agnostic “**teachings.**”

Paul had to warn about “**this misleading teaching**” by concluding

in Colossians 2:9, “**For in him [Christ] dwelleth all the fullness of the Godhead bodily.**”

All three *Epistles* – *Ephesians*, *Philippians* and *Colossians* cover “**the faith once delivered to the saints**” which is Christ “**in you.**” *Colossians* introduces a **new deception** concerning salvation. *Romans* and *Galatians* settle the problems of circumcision and keeping The Law of Moses in Acts 15. Some of “**the circumcision tried**” to steer Christians back to the works of The Law by requiring Sabbaths, Holy Days and new moons upon Christians for salvation and attempting to replace Christ “**in you.**” However, two new false doctrines were being taught as Christian requirements, replacing Christ “**in you**” – The Hope of Glory. One was “philosophical” and the other “will worship” or “denying the flesh.” Both were **worldly** and devised by human ideas or logic. Paul stated all the riches are “in Christ” who inherited all from The Father (Hebrews 1:1-3). Now, to examine *The Gospel of Christ*.

## I Corinthians 15:1-28

Paul declares in I Corinthians 15:1, “**Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you the Gospel [good news] which I preached unto you, which also ye have received and wherein ye stand.**” What *gospel* is this? Mark 1:1 states, “**The beginning of the gospel [good news] of Jesus Christ the Son of God.**”

Mark relates *the gospel* or good news of God’s **kingdom** begins with Jesus Christ. Let Paul explain how Christ establishes God’s **kingdom**.

## Purpose Of Christ

In Matthew 18:11 Jesus said He came to restore what was lost.

What was lost? Genesis 3:24 reads: **“So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the Garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.”** [Why]? **“And the Lord God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the Tree of Life, and Eat, and live forever”** (Genesis 3:22).

Jesus came to restore **salvation** with His death. Who is to be restored to life or salvation? I John 4:14 reveals the answer. **“And we have seen and do testify that the Father sent the Son to be the Savior of the world.”** Jesus, The Christ, The Savior came to restore **salvation to the entire world**. How does Jesus do it? How does Christ save the world? Paul explains The Gospel of Christ in I Corinthians 15:1-28.

After Christ's resurrection everyone was expecting God's **kingdom** to come very soon. That is why The Disciples asked Him if God, at that time, would restore **the kingdom** as Malachi prophesied. Jesus said only The Father knew when **the kingdom** would come (Acts 1).

In I Corinthians 15 Paul included prophecy because some thought there was no resurrection. Paul explains the entire **order of salvation** by Christ to restore what was lost. To answer those in doubt of the resurrection Paul declared, **“But now is Christ risen from the dead [Paul witnessed it], and become the firstfruits [Tree of Life] of them that slept “[are dead]”** (I Corinthians 15:20).

Then Paul prophesies in an amazing statement. In fact, this statement shakes the Christian world, but it is **The Word of God**. **“For as in Adam all die, even in Christ shall all be made alive”** (I Corinthians 15:22).

Since many do not wish **the salvation** of the world to be true, an argument with God's "word" begins over the word "all." Does it really mean "all?" After all, I John 4:14 states that is why Jesus came to restore **salvation** to the world. Don't you believe God through His Son, Jesus, can do it?

Does "**all**" mean "**all**" or not? If "**all**" does not mean "**all**," then what does "**all**" mean? You have been given proof in the previous chapter what "all" means. The word "all" in Greek is defined as "being in the aorist subjunctive mood." There is no grammatical English words to convey this meaning into English from The Greek language.

"All" certainly does not, **only**, mean "all." Its definition is **far more powerful**. The word "all" carries the meaning of "an order" or "conditions to be met." If these conditions occur, **the prophecy** is "**absolute**" and, therefore, **guaranteed**. This statement by Paul clarifies if the prophecy fails, God ultimately guarantees it will, eventually, come to reality. "All" doesn't just mean "all," but it is guaranteed in the future even if the prophecy fails. Paul explains the exact order, whereby, each and every man is **saved**. Didn't Paul in I Corinthians 15:23 just state that **every** man would be saved? He certainly did. "Every man" is the context of Paul's subject. "All" or "everyone" who died from the time of Adam and Eve will be **saved**. Paul goes into greater detail that "**all**," meaning "**everyone**," will "**be saved**" in Christ! However, certain conditions must be first met.

After that, Christ's **resurrection**, then the first resurrection of Christ's Bride, and, then – **comes "the end."** Paul, in context, is explaining how Christ gives **salvation** to **everyone**. You must follow the context or subject in every chapter you read. "**Then cometh the end, when he [Christ] shall have delivered up the**

**kingdom to God, even the Father; when he [Jesus] shall have put down all rule and all authority and power”** (I Corinthians 15:24). Christ cannot turn God’s **kingdom** back to Him until all powers, in the world, are put down, including death.

Read carefully and stay with the subject of “an orderly resurrection” of **everyone being saved**. The next verse is vital to the subject of **the resurrection**. Read it carefully and prayerfully. **“For he [Christ] must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet”** (I Corinthians 15:25). Do you get what Paul is telling you? Until every enemy of God is destroyed, Jesus cannot give **the kingdom back to God, The Father**. The next verse answers when **“all”** of Adam and Eve’s children will be saved which is why Christ came in the first place (I John 4:14). Jesus will not fail. That is why Jesus said of the ones God has given Him, that none will be lost, except Judas who was prophesied to be condemned (John 5:37-39). Jesus states when God turns over a person, they will be **resurrected at the last resurrection**. God has no need to burn them and have them destroyed. God is not The God of **the dead** but of **The Living**. Satan is “the god” of the dead.

Jesus will not fail to save the world, but it is also, His Father’s (God’s) **“will.”** **“Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth”** (I Timothy 2:4)?

It is God’s **“will”** to **save everyone**. God also **wills** that **everyone** will come to **the knowledge of the truth** or **repent**.

Christ will succeed and so will God, The Father succeed. If their decisions, plans or **“wills”** do not come to pass or succeed, then **“not one prophecy”** can be meaningful.

I Corinthians 15 absolutely answers the order or conditions by

which “**all**” will be **saved** “in Christ.” “**The last enemy *that shall be destroyed is death***” (I Corinthians 15:26). This does not mean from this point on, there is no death. Remember, Jesus must continue to reign until “**all death**” is destroyed. No death can remain. If one person is dead, then, Jesus cannot turn **the kingdom** back to God. Until all death is removed – God’s **kingdom** cannot come. That is the context of I Corinthians 15. The resurrection to life must happen to “**all**” of Adam’s children “in Christ.” How loving and wonderful is God, The Father and His Son, Jesus, The Christ. Now, Paul concludes stating God’s real purpose. Paul declared when all of God’s enemies are destroyed, “**including death, those who are made alive in Christ,**” **then, and only then, Jesus turns all authority back to The Father. Then God can be “all and in all**” (I Corinthians 15:27-28). The Gospel of Christ is completed and The New Heaven and New Earth can begin (Revelation 21 and 22).

## **God’s Purpose**

Some believe God’s purpose is to build a family. I Corinthians 15:28 reveals that this is not so. God’s **kingdom** is much more. God does build a family to rule His **kingdom**, but God’s real purpose is to be “**all and in all.**” Unless God is “**in everyone**” as His Son is, then you cannot be Holy and without blemish. With God and Jesus being “in you” then God can be “**one**” with “**all.**” That is God’s beautiful and loving **plan** and **purpose** for “all” His creation. God can then give salvation because everyone will be like God and His goodness.

That is why Paul said in Romans that **the entire creation groans** for the manifestation of The Sons of God. “**God may be “all in all.”**”

## CHAPTER 34

# MYSTERY OF INIQUITY

*The Epistles of Thessalonians* are credited with being older than any of Paul's *epistles*. The subject is **The Return of Christ** but Paul states to let "no man" deceive you for Christ cannot come until a great falling away occurs and "the man of sin" (anti-Christ) is revealed (II Thessalonians 2:1-3).

### The Right Time

**"And now ye know what withholdeth that he might be revealed in his time"** (II Thessalonians 2:6). This man of sin is held back "in time" until the appropriate day when The Father decides when The Son returns.

Remember, only God, The Father knows or will decide when Christ returns. This is exactly what Jesus told His Disciples before He was resurrected (Act 1:7).

This **man of sin** will not be made manifest until God decides it is the right time, but Paul continues by making an amazing statement. **"For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way"** (II Thessalonians 2:7).

Paul warned *a deceptive gospel* was already being taught. This *false gospel* teaches the resurrection **"has already happened"**

and therefore, God's **kingdom** was already here!

Shocking as it may seem, **the faith delivered to the saints** had already begun to be distorted. Through the rest of *The New Testament* the remaining *epistles* and *pastoral letters* deal with **false teaching**. This false teaching did not come from The Jews but from The Gentiles.

Paul in I Thessalonians 2:14 made a clear distinction between The Jews persecuting Jewish Christians as opposed to Gentiles persecuting The Gentile Thessalonians. "**For ye, brethren [Thessalonians], became ye followers of the churches of God which in Judaea are in Christ Jesus: for ye also have suffered like things of your own countrymen, even as they have of the Jews.**"

This was not a Jewish persecution, but from The Gentiles. It is The Gentiles bringing in "**false teachings.**" The **sin of iniquity** is of Gentile origin.

The rest of *The New Testament* focuses on **the man of sin**. Remember, Jesus warned His Disciples, after the destruction of **the temple** by Titus in 70 A.D., false preachers claiming to be of Christ would deceive many Christians. Paul warned this Mystery of Iniquity already was in progress.

Paul in his letters, to Timothy and Titus, had to warn his true fellow-Christians to remain **faithful** and not to digress from what they were originally taught. In Timothy's case he was an Evangelist who had been "**prophesied**" as to his commission.

Paul told him to study *the scriptures* that he had known from his childhood which are inspired of God (II Timothy 3:15-17). By following Paul's instruction the man of God is furnished in "all



good works.”

Speaking to Titus, Paul commands him to appoint elders who will keep each city in Crete so they will not lack in **any truth**. Paul reiterates the specific qualifications of a Bishop or Overseer of the **churches** who will be **faithful in the truth**.

Finally, *The Epistle to The Hebrews* gives a summary of Christ’s superior Priesthood over The Levitical Priesthood. The Levitical Priesthood could not change human nature, which was weak, but *The New Covenant* of Christ “in you” can change human nature.

Hebrews 12 sends a warning that if *The True Gospel* isn’t followed, God will bring His **wrath** upon you. *Hebrews* concludes warning Christians to remain **faithful** because God is “**a consuming fire**” (The Lake of Fire) and chastises every son He loves (Hebrews 12:29 and Hebrews 12:6-11).

### **James, Peter And John**

All three pastoral letters dealt with **the falling away from the truth** or **the faith** delivered to **the saints**. What was that faith? It’s as simple as God making mankind into His image so He can be “all and in all” (Genesis 1:26 and I Corinthians 15:28).

James was concerned some were teaching “faith without works” and it was **all right** to sin. This was an **Agnostic teaching** telling The Christians “the more sin – the better” and “if you sin – it didn’t matter.”

The truth is, The Law, in *The New Covenant*, is on a higher level or has a superior standard. Rather than The Letter of The Law which cannot bring salvation because the weakness in the flesh

only results in death. The Spirit of The Law demands that human nature keep The Law within their hearts. **Not having any sin** is the goal.

Under Christ, The Law is magnified and is a **spiritual matter** (Romans 7:14 and Isaiah 42:21). James demands “**faith with works.**” This is a **circumcision of the heart** and not merely “**the flesh.**” James then declares that “**faith with works**” is **true faith.**

## Peter

Peter's two *epistles* deal with “**a more sure word of prophecy**” (II Peter 1:19). In Greek, the word “sure” signifies “certainty.” II Peter 1:20 warns God's “**word**” in prophecy should not be interpreted by personal or private interpretation. Why? Because prophecy or God's “**word**” is inspired by God's Holy Spirit. That is why in II Corinthians 10:5, Paul warns all human imaginations are to be cast down. Subject yourself to The Mind of Christ. *Scripture* is not to be interpreted since it is “**God-breathed**” and its mystery will be revealed to you as you pray, study and grow in God's maturity.

Peter declares you should stick to what The Holy Prophets and The Apostles of Christ teach. “**Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last day [Roman Empire] scoffers, walking after their own lusts, And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation**” (II Peter 3:3-4). When is Christ coming? Peter gives the answer. “**The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance**” (II Peter 3:9).

The previous verse in II Peter 3:8 states “a day” to God, can be “a thousand-year period.”

Remember, Peter stated that in his time they had “a more certain word of prophecy.” Peter relates that Jesus can come thousands of years later because God intends to have “all” come to repentance. Never forget, Christ came to save the world (I John 4:14).

These *epistles* written between 60 to 66 A.D. reveals the condition of **the church** before the destruction of **the temple** in 70 A.D. Before **the temple** was destroyed, The Church of God was under attack by many false preachers. The falling away from **the faith** once delivered was in great jeopardy.

By the end of The First Century, The Christian Church was in confusion concerning **the faith** of Christ.

### **John To Jude**

By the time *I, II and III John* were written, The Christian Church fell into deception when The Gnostics were teaching Jesus was not a human being when He came in the flesh. Christology became important to Christianity instead of **the faith** delivered to **the saints**.

Now the theological question was – who, and what, was Jesus? Was He human or not? Christology remains a cardinal point in **schools of theology**, today. Christianity has become secondary to who was The Son of God. Same question Satan asked of Christ in Matthew 4. Here is John’s answer: “**Hereby, know ye the spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God**” (I John 4:2). God’s Holy Spirit reveals to Christians, Jesus, when He was in the flesh, was indeed human.

John declares in I John 4:3, “**And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh [human] is not of God: and this is that *spirit* of an anti-Christ, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.**”

**The spirit of anti-Christ** was already present in John's day. The first century wasn't even over and **the spirit of anti-Christ** was already being preached in The Christian Churches. The Christian Church was headed for Babylon.

It was getting so bad that Diotrefes was kicking true Christians out of **the church**. In fact, the name Diotrefes is a synonym for “friend of Zeus.” Paganism was entering The Churches of God.

## Jude

By the time Jude wrote his *epistle*, “**demons within**,” false preachers started to totally mislead Christians away from **the faith** delivered to **the saints**. Read all of *Jude*.

Christians were being deceived by ego-driven preachers filling their own pockets. The Churches of God were becoming very **lucrative** for their leaders. The Pharisees, Sadducees and Priests bilked The Jews the same way.

Jude said “**true**” Christians should try to save some of those who were deceived by pulling them out of The Lake of Fire. In other words, if you try to help others, they can escape The Lake of Fire. Those, “**too far gone**” should be disfellowshipped and be left to their own penalties which meant, after The Lake of Fire, they would be wandering stars being tormented in darkness.

From The Day of Pentecost to the end of the first century, **the**

**church** was being deceived and corrupted.

The last *New Testament Book*, *Revelation*, caps the issue of church corruption. It became so bad that John, the last serving Apostle, is told to write *The Book of Revelation* by Jesus, Himself through **an angel**.

### Warning By Christ

Without *The Book of Revelation* being in *The Bible*, Christians would not know when Christ would **return**. Because multiple doctrines denying The True Messiah had taken possession of Christianity, Jesus Himself warned The Seven Churches in Southern Turkey (Asia Minor). These **seven churches** were all Christ's Churches (Revelation 1:4).

Then, in Revelation 1:7, **the angel** sent from Jesus to John issues this warning: “**Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindred's of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen.**” Jesus reveals this **revelation** to His **seven churches** and issues this warning against everyone who is His enemy. This prophecy is written to all Christ's enemies, as well, as a warning to His **seven churches** which remain until His second coming. This book is a prophecy written to His **seven churches**, as well as, Israel and everyone with The Mark of The Beast. This prophecy is a warning to all who do not heed “**the words**” of this prophecy (Revelation 22:19).

### The Seven Churches

By the end of The First Century, Christian Churches were each holding to a diversity of doctrines. Some even allowed Jezebel

or Baal worship. Christianity by 100 A.D. was a mixture of **the truth plus agnostic and pagan teachings**. Nevertheless, all these churches were Christian and Jesus, The Christ, was dwelling in their midst (Revelation 1:13).

Not one of **the churches** was gifted by God, as in the days of The Twelve Apostles. The most faithful of the seven churches was The Philadelphians who only had a little strength (Revelation 3:8). The Churches of God were corrupted just as Israel was. Only 144,000 of The Tribes of Israel are considered God's servants just before The Return of Jesus. Read Revelation 7.

The remnant of Israel, **the seven churches** and the innumerable multitude of The Gentiles are "**mixed doctrinally**" and in Babylon. Romans 11 reveals Israel, as a nation, will not be saved until Christ **returns**. Only a remnant will be saved, as well as the innumerable multitude of The Gentiles. These are Christ's two servants in Revelation 7 and 14.

Then Jesus decrees a warning to His **servants**, Israel and The Churches of God in Revelation 18:1-3. Christ declares all nations and the entire world have become drunk with the wine of Babylon. Here is His "**command**" in Revelation 18:4 to His two servants, His people: "**And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, come out of her [Babylon] my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.**"

Sadly, it takes The Great Tribulation for **The 144,000 Israelites** to be saved as well as **the innumerable multitude of The Gentiles** to be saved (Revelation 7:4).

At the end of *The Book of Revelation*, Jesus again warns, "**And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give ev-**

**ery man according as his work shall be”** (Revelation 22:12).

As Jesus concludes this prophecy to the world, He warns He is ready to come quickly, at anytime. You had better heed this **prophecy of the seven seals, the seven trumpets and the seven last plagues.**

By the end of The First Century after Christ’s death, The Christian Churches, as well as Israel, and the whole world (of those) who have The Mark of The Beast are in Babylon. Read *The Great Apostasy*.

Jesus is ready to return, but **when will that be?** What must happen before The Second Coming of Christ? It is time to conclude *God’s Story* – from *Genesis* to *Revelation*. You are about to witness **God’s One Story**, *The Bible* and discover the story is actually all about **a marriage.**

## CHAPTER 35

### THE WEDDING FEAST

**Did you know Jesus, The Christ summarized the entire story of *The Bible* in one parable? This parable is written, so many cannot quite make sense of it. God purposely blinds people so as not to hold them responsible for their sins which they do not completely understand (John 9:41).**

In Ephesians 5:25 Paul declared “husbands, love your wives.” The word for “love” in this case is “agàpè” which is a special type of “love.” Paul describes this love is so strong, one would give their very lives for them, as Christ did for all mankind. Paul states, “**For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church**” (Ephesians 5:29). Finalizing, Paul relates, “**This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and The Church**” (Ephesians 5:32).

#### The Great Mystery

*God’s Story, The Bible*, is purposely written as a **mystery** or **puzzle** (Isaiah 28:9-13). He keeps many individuals blind so as not to hold them responsible for sins they do not understand until they are ready to repent (Matthew 13). It is time in this story to put this **Mystery of God** together. All, you have previously read, is brought together by solving this Mystery of A Marriage. *God’s Story of The Bible* is **all about a marriage**.

Marriage in Israel had three components. The marriage is insti-



tuted by a contract between the parents of **the groom** and parents of **the bride**. At this point the marriage is not finalized but begins the engagement period. The engagement period is a time to get ready for The Marriage Feast. During this time both the groom and the bride must prepare for The Wedding Feast, which allows the bride and groom to consummate the marriage after The Wedding Feast.

There is usually a best friend of the groom, the best man, who is responsible to inform the guests concerning The Wedding Feast and how to prepare for the feast.

The best man reveals how to dress for this wedding. This occurs during the engagement period. The groom and the bride are, then, accepted as husband and wife by society, who hear their vows, which is followed with a feast. They are then married and then come under God's huppa or protection.

Paul said this type of marriage is a Great Mystery and is the story of Christ and The Church. This is *God's Story* from *Genesis* to *Revelation* and will be proved **biblically**.

## A Royal Marriage

This parable is about a marriage which is a Royal Marriage. This marriage is instituted by a King-God Almighty. This parable is written in Matthew 22:1-14. Do you really perceive how wonderful this marriage really is?

The King, God, The Father has a Kingdom to share with His Son, Jesus and His Bride. Christ is a Prince and His Bride a Princess. This marriage is beyond Salvation. This marriage lasts forever. This marriage constitutes a Royal Marriage, "**eternally**," where

The Prince and Princess share The Father's Kingdom forever in Paradise, or God's **rest**. God has a great and wonderful **plan**. This marriage, which is in the future, is prophetic and will one day become history. This marriage begins in The Garden of Eden and ends in Paradise, a new Garden of Eden. This is God's "**rest**." The consummation of this marriage is The Wedding Feast or God's "rest" where The King, The Father has prepared this paradise for His Son and His Bride. This marriage covers the entire *Bible* from Genesis 1 to Revelation 22. It is truly *God's Story*.

### Three Invitations

Matthew 22:1-14 manifests there are three times in world prophecy when God announces His invitations to the world. Finally, the entire world is invited to The Wedding Feast. Matthew 22:2 reveals God's **kingdom**, which is presently in heaven, is like a Royal Marriage:

- 1 Then, God sent His servants, The Prophets, to call them to the feast, but those bidden would not come (Matthew 22:3). This invitation covers the time from Adam and Eve until Noah's flood.
- 2 The next invitation to The Wedding Feast is after the flood until Christ's birth, as a human being (Matthew 22:4).
- 3 Finally, a third announcement is made concerning The Marriage Feast, but this time there is no special or chosen group to invite. This announcement covers all humanity, The Israelites and The Gentiles. No conditions are set but even the bad are invited to The Wedding, as well as, the good. This means The Whole Christian World. The King sends invitations by His servants, The Apos-

bles, to all they find, the good and bad. At The Wedding Feast those attending had to have “the proper wedding garment” (Matthew 22:9-14).

One guest was not properly dressed for The Wedding and was thrown out into outer darkness where there will be **weeping** and **gnashing of teeth**. The parable concludes with this statement. **“For many are called, but few are chosen.”**

This applies only to The Wedding Feast where **“only a few”** of all who are invited will be allowed to attend. The invitation to The First Resurrection will be for The Bride. Why? Others who are left out of New Jerusalem will be wailing and weeping because they missed the invitation to The Wedding Feast. Christianity had corrupted itself by the end of the first century and was a mixture of **“good”** and **“bad”** just as **“the marriage parable”** explains. Now, to examine these prophetic invitations to The Wedding Feast, individually.

## **God's Marriage**

The first marriage, which was a Godly marriage, started in The Garden of Eden. Adam and Eve were married by God, but the wedding feast as yet, had no invitations. As yet, Adam and Eve had no children. In fact, Adam and Eve themselves weren't ready for **the marriage feast**. That is why they were both naked and didn't even realize it.

The Pharisees asked Christ, **“Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife?”** [for any cause] (Mark 10:2). Jesus inquired by asking, **“What did Moses command you?”** (Mark 10:3). The Pharisees answered, **“Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put her away”** (Mark 10:4). Jesus retorts, **“For the hardness**

**of your heart he wrote you this precept**” (Mark 10:5). This was an amazing answer by Jesus.

Moses clearly states, according to The Letter of The Law, a divorce is permissible in Deuteronomy 24:1. The Pharisees wanted to know if one can divorce for any reason, whatsoever. Christ follows stating that in the beginning, “ marriage was different” (Mark 10:6-12).

Moses allowed divorce because of **a wrong heart**. Adam had to have a right heart in his marriage because Jesus said that first marriage between Adam and Eve was different from modern-day marriages before divorce was lawful. What is the difference?

## **The Original Marriage**

God, in the first marriage, took Eve from Adam’s very bones. This marriage was a natural union where Eve came out of Adam. That is why they were called by the man’s name because Adam and Eve were of the same bone and flesh (Genesis 2:21-25). They both came from Adam.

Paul, in Ephesians, reveals, “**no man hates his own flesh.**” Adam and Eve were bound “**till death do them part.**” Paul states this is “**a great mystery**” concerning Christ and The Church. Adam was not deceived, but Eve was deceived when she ate of The Tree of Good and Evil, so Adam is misunderstood by so many Christians. At this point, Adam could have said, “Eve, I’m not going to eat of the fruit of The Tree of Good and Evil because I know I will die as God said. I am going to eat of The Tree of Life.”

Why then did Adam follow Eve and eat the fruit which he knew would kill him? Romans 5:14 answers the question. “**Neverthe-**

**less, death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression, who is the figure of Him that was to come.**" This refers to The Christ. Adam died for his wife, Eve – just as Jesus died for His Bride, The Church. This is The Great Mystery.

Both Adam and Eve were of the same bone and flesh just as Jesus and His Bride – The Church, are of Christ's "**body.**" No man hates his own flesh. This is the answer concerning divorce.

The wrong heart in Moses' day allowed him to allow or permit divorce. Why? Because "**a real marriage**" made by God has the man and woman bound as "**one flesh.**" That is why they have "agàpè" **love** for each other.

The trouble with divorce is Moses allowed it because they had a wrong heart. The question was, "could they divorce for any cause?" Contemporary psychology of today falsely believes people can stay married based upon passion and compatibility.

In Greek there are three Greek words for "love." "Eros" is "a love based upon passion or sex." "Philia" denotes "friendship" or "compatibility." Then "agàpè" love is of such concern that one dies for the other because they have grown together as if of the same flesh. They are inseparable. Only death can part them. That is why Adam chose to die for Eve and Christ chose to die for His Bride, His "**body.**" "**What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder**" (Mark 10:9). If God has joined "two together as one flesh," then only death can separate them. Now, the question is, how does God join a man and woman together?

If those who have grown to have "agàpè" love for each other, they cannot divorce (Deuteronomy 24:1). Only death can separate

them. That is the real answer for divorce. Passion and compatibility just will not hack it.

That is the way Godly marriage originated and the only marriage which can be eternal – without death. This is the answer by Christ to The Pharisees. Now understand what God really requires of Christians to become Christ's Bride.

### **One Must Be Worthy**

To be worthy you must have “**a right heart.**” What is a right heart? I John 4:8 reveals God is “**agàpè**” **love**. This is God's heart. Every desire and thought, as well as God's actions, are motivated by “**agàpè**” **love**. That is why John states in the beginning of I John 4:8, “**He that loveth not, [agàpè love] knoweth not God!**” Until a Christian's life has grown to have agàpè love, that Christian doesn't even know the **true God!** Wow! That is frightening. That is why **continual spiritual growth** is necessary to begin to have “**agàpè**” **love**. You may believe you are doing all God requires of you for **salvation** and still not be allowed into The Wedding Feast, which is God's “**rest**” for eternity.

### **I Corinthians 13:1-13**

Paul explains God's gifts in I Corinthians 12 to 15. In ending I Corinthians 12:31, he announces, **of all** the gifts God gives to Christians, there is “**one** that is more excellent than any other gifts He can give.” What is this gift?

“Gift” in Greek is “charis.” This is where you get the word “charisma.” God grants all humanity some “gifts” or “abilities.” Gifts are presents. No one has earned them. At times you may say it was the way that person was born. God gives “**gifts**” by birth

and also bestows **spiritual gifts** or His riches upon Christ's **body**, "**the church**." Paul reveals one particular spiritual gift above all the other spiritual gifts! Why are these riches of Christ more excellent than any other? The first few verses list all the human activities a human can do. The ability to speak in various languages (or angelic) or whether one understands prophecies, mysteries, knowledge, faith, giving to the poor or giving your body to be burned. Some may have these gifts, but without "agàpè" **love**, you have **nothing**. Why is "agàpè" love so special? You are about to find out.

Finally he answers why this gift from God is more excellent than any other. In I Corinthians 13:8 Paul declares, "**love never fails!**" "Agàpè" love is forever. "Agàpè" is eternal. "Agàpè" love never ends. "Agàpè" is what God is (I John 4:8).

That is why Adam died for his wife and that is why Christ died for His Bride, The Church. This is The Great Mystery, "agàpè" **love** gives **salvation!** Read *the scriptures* to prove it. Colossians 3:14 reveals, "**Put on charity, [agàpè love] which is the bond of perfectness!**" Jesus said, "**be ye perfect as your Father in Heaven**" (Matthew 5:48).

What makes God perfect? God is "**love**" (I John 4:8). Perfection comes from God because God is "love." How can Christ "**in you**" save you? Prove it scripturally. It is written in Romans 5:5, "**Because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit which is given unto us.**" This is God's "gift" given to The Bride.

What The Israelites lacked in keeping God's commandments is "**a right heart**" (Deuteronomy 5:29). It is what the rich man lacked when he only kept **the commandments** in The Letter (Matthew

19:21).

Salvation can only be given when God's "agapè" **love** is in your heart. Kind after kind, God is making man in His image, to be exactly like Him (Genesis 1:26). God would never give this gift of **eternal life** unless you become exactly like Him. This is God's **purpose**. God is to be "all in all" (I Corinthians 15:28). God would never approve a marriage of His Son unless His Bride is exactly like His Son and as He is.

That is why Moses permitted divorce in The Law (Deuteronomy 24:1). The Letter of The Law was written for "**unrighteous sinners**" (I Timothy 1:7-10).

This is the reason Jesus told The Pharisees and His Disciples that Godly marriage did not permit divorce except for "fornication." They replied in shock, "then why should anyone marry?" They did not have "agapè" **love** at that time. The Holy Spirit wasn't given till Pentecost (Matthew 19:10).

God's Law is perfect Holy and **good**. That is why *The Old Covenant* permitted divorce – they had a wrong heart. That is why God, in The Garden of Eden, had two trees. The Tree of Life to receive God's Holy Spirit, which is God's **love** and The Tree of Good and Evil. In Genesis 1:31, God saw everything He created in the six days was very good!

The Tree of Life led to salvation and if a wrong choice was made, The Tree of Good and Evil (man's work) led to **confusion** and **spiritual blindness**. Being blind, God did not hold them guilty when they sinned (John 9:41).

Everything God creates, whether allowing **evil** or **good**, is the re-



sult of God's love and goodness. Are you beginning to understand God's Wedding Feast and what is required?

God's "agapè" **love** is imperative for **salvation**. To have God's love "in you," you need to continue to **grow spiritually** until you love God with all your heart, your mind, your body and your **inner being**. You must be willing to die for God. You are to love your neighbor, as yourselves. This was the same for Israel or Christianity (Deuteronomy 6:4 and Matthew 22:37-40).

This is why Christians are to be a living sacrifice, just as Christ was (Romans 12:1). The Wedding Feast cannot commence until The Groom and Bride have "agapè" **love**. Christ cannot, therefore, **return** until God's **love** is manifested for The Groom and Bride.

## **When Will Christ Return?**

Many have attempted to predict the time of Christ's "**second coming**." When Jesus returns He resurrects His Bride (those who are asleep and those alive). There is **no time** or **date** for Christ's **return**. Jesus will only return after a certain event occurs, but has no date attached to it. When will Christ and The Bride commence God's **kingdom** and rule upon the earth?

Before Jesus was ready to go to heaven, He taught His Disciples for forty days. They asked Him a question. "**Will God, at this time, restore The Kingdom to Israel?**" Instantly, they wanted to know when Christ would **return**. Jesus said it is not in His power to know when God's **kingdom** will be restored to Israel. Only God, The Father knows when that will happen (Acts 1). Why is The Father the only one to know when Jesus **will return**? The answer is in The Marriage Feast.

Many, since then, have attempted to predict The Return of Christ. Is that possible? In *The Epistle of Thessalonians* some were saying **the resurrection** was already **past**. In 1000 A.D. the Christian community went into a frenzy waiting for Christ to come. Now, in this day, two thousand years later, many still are saying Jesus is about to come.

In 1844, The Millerites thought they knew when Christ would come so they prepared to meet Him, but were wrong. Once again they recalculated and admitted they made a mistake, but they were also wrong the second time. Another Christian Group prophesied Christ was coming in 1975. They, too, failed.

Why does anyone try to predict the second coming of Christ when Jesus said only His Father knows when Christ will come for His Bride? **Biblically**, there is no set date for Christ's second coming. Man is not God nor can he out-think God. You are about to prove the second coming of Christ only occurs because of **an event** and not some **specific date!**

## **Bride Of Christ**

You know who The Groom is. He is The Son of God, Jesus, The Christ. But who is The Bride? Israel believes they are The Messiah's Bride. Christians believe The Church is The Bride. Who is right?

It is true, Israel is The Bride of Christ, but she was divorced because Israel committed fornication. According to The Law, once the woman is divorced, she cannot return to her first husband. How does God solve this problem? Read Deuteronomy 24.

Those who believe The Church, is The Bride, are also, confronted

with another problem. In Matthew 25, The Church is likened to Ten Virgins. None of them have committed fornication. Both are prospective Brides. Half, however, are “**wise virgins**” and the other half are “**unwise virgins.**”

The wise virgins keep their candles lit because they have sufficient oil to watch for “**the coming**” of The Groom. The unwise virgins run out of oil and they cannot see when The Groom comes. Why not?

All Ten Virgins are pure and can be married. The problem is “**half**” The Church, during the engagement period, refused to keep growing in God’s Holy Spirit to be prepared for The Wedding Feast as The Bride. Half The Church isn’t acceptable as The Bride because she refuses to keep growing in God’s Holy Spirit and come to the maturity of Christ, which is in “agapè” love with Him, as He is with her. That is why **the entire** Church of God is **not** The Bride of Christ.

That is why Ephesians 5:26-27 states, “**That he might sanctify [make Holy] and cleanse it [no sin] with the washing of water by the word [The Holy Spirit]. That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be Holy [complete] and without blemish [pure].**”

Just like Israel, only a remnant of Israel becomes *The Bride*, as well as, only a part of The Church of God is The Bride of Christ. Read all of Romans 11. There is *The Bible* answer as to who is The Bride.

Until Israel, who is a remnant and part of The Church of God, becomes **spiritually ready** with “agapè” love, they cannot be The

Bride of Christ! However, the unwise virgins can come to The Wedding Feast. Forever a bridesmaid but never a bride.

Romans 11:26 reveals during The Millennium, The Nation of Israel will be **saved**. The remainder of Israel who do not become The Bride are invited to attend The Wedding Feast, just as those who are not The Bride in The Church of God.

How can Christ remarry Israel since He divorced her? The Law doesn't permit it (Deuteronomy 24)?

When Jesus died for the sins of the world it also involved all of Israel. Paul said when Jesus died for your sins He reconciled you to God and therefore, all of Israel and the **unwise virgins** as well, can once again be guests at The Wedding Feast (Romans 5:10). Those Israelites, who are The Bride of Christ, can be remarried to Jesus because once Christ died; that first marriage dissolved. The remnant of Israel can now remarry Jesus, The Groom (Romans 7:2).

The Bride of Christ can only be those, whether of Israel or The Church of God, who continue to grow **spiritually** till they mature to have Christ "**in them**," which is "agapè" **love**!

## Wedding Feast Invitations

Who can come to The Wedding Feast becomes the question now that you have resolved who The Bride is. The Bride includes only those Israelites and an innumerable number Gentiles who grow **spiritually**, having "agapè" **love**. They must become spiritual Israelites, like Christ.

All others must first become as "**sheep**" to be guests at The Wed-

ding Feast. Goats cannot be **guests**. They must first go into The Lake of Fire (Matthew 25:30-46). Those written in The Book of Life include The Groom, The Bride and **the guests**, just as in any *Marriage Registry*.

There are three periods of time when The Wedding Feast invitations are sent out into the world. That is why Jesus came to **save** the world (I John 4:14). What three periods in history and in the future are included in these invitations?

- 1 Matthew 22:3 merely states only those bidden to The Marriage Feast are invited. Nothing is said that the feast is ready to take place. When was this? Jude 14 answers the question. **“And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints.”**

Enoch, The Prophet of God, was God's servant to announce the coming of Christ with **the saints** or Bride. It states he was the 7th from Adam. This discloses the time frame for this wedding invitation.

Who are the seven Prophets, Jude is relating to in Enoch's prophecy? Genesis 5 lists the genealogy of Adam to Noah. In this genealogy, Adam looked like God and each progeny looked like the other. This isn't Adam's chronological genealogy, as Cain is excluded along with Abel. Why?

This genealogy includes all of Adam's children who look like God and call upon **the name** of The Lord (Genesis 4:25-26). These are all God's servants announcing *The Gospel* of Christ. They are Prophets, with Noah being the eighth **preacher of righteousness** (II Peter 2:5).

Now you know those first bidden to The Wedding Feast are those who call upon God. The Wedding Feast, however, was not ready. By the time Noah preached, the world had forgotten God and only had evil thoughts in their hearts. No “agapè” love. God destroyed that world with a flood except for Noah and his family. That concludes the first wedding invitation.

The second invitation is quite different:

- 2 Matthew 22:4-7 reveals the next invitation was also only sent to “certain ones bidden.” But, this time The Wedding Feast is ready to take place. **“Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings *are* killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage.”** [Can’t be any clearer. This is Christ’s first coming when He became human on earth. Jesus came the first time to marry His wife, Israel, after He would die for her and then Israel would be reconciled to God.]

Notice the event in Zechariah 9:9-10: **“Rejoice greatly, O daughter [Judah] of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee: he is just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass. And I will cut off the chariot from Ephraim, and the horse from Jerusalem, and the battle bow shall be cut off: and he shall speak peace unto the heathen [Gentiles]: and his dominion *shall be* from sea *even* to sea, and from the river to the ends of the earth.”**

This is prophecy regarding Christ’s first coming. When Jesus came, He brought **salvation** and world peace as previously covered. There was to be **no second coming**. The Marriage Feast, as

the parable reveals, was being prepared for the marriage.

After Christ's death, if Judah would have accepted The Groom, Jesus would have defeated The Fourth Beast, Rome and **the millennium** would have started. Christ and The Bride, Israel, would have invited the rest of the world (Gentiles) to The Wedding Feast. That is what **the millennium** is all about. It's very close to the time to have Christ save the world (I John 4:14).

Now to read how this prophecy played out! Matthew 21:1 gives Zachariah's very same account of Jesus riding the colt into Jerusalem and hailed as their King. The Jewish hierarchy reprimanded the people for proclaiming Jesus, The King. The people fearing their leaders rejected their King, who was to bring world peace and salvation. Here is Christ's reply in Matthew 21:42-43: "**Did ye never read [prophecy] in the scriptures, The stone [temple] which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner [New Jerusalem]: this is the Lord's doings, and it is marvelous in our eyes? Therefore I say unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you [Judah] and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits [agapè] there of.**"

This is **the second wedding invitation** when the actual marriage could have taken place, but Judah rejected their Messiah, The Groom. Now the curse upon the world begins as prophesied in Malachi 4:6.

- 3 **Now for the third and final wedding invitation. This invitation is totally different than the other two. When The King hears they rejected His Son and that the invitation to The Wedding Feast was also turned down, God was full of wrath (Matthew 22:7).**

In 70 A.D. God allowed Titus to come into Jerusalem and destroy **the temple** and Jerusalem. From this time a new invitation was sent out which was completely different than the previous two invitations. In Matthew 22:3 God told His servants (Apostles), The Wedding is ready (time had arrived), but when they which were bidden (Judah) were not worthy.

They still had a wrong heart. So the new invitation went out, **“Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage”** (Matthew 22:9).

Instead of **“a select chosen group”** God extends The Wedding Feast invitation to anyone who desires to come (Acts 10). Read Romans 11 where The Gentiles (the world) are grafted into the natural olive tree.

Meanwhile **who was intended to be first is now last**, except for **“a remnant”** of Israel (Matthew 22:10). God’s Apostles go to the world as Jesus told them in Acts 1:8. Notice, this time both the **“good”** and **“bad”** are invited.

Christianity is a mixture of good and bad as opposed to everyone being at the same level of faith. Just as Judah is filled with differing faiths or groups, so is Christianity. Even Muslims are split between terrorists and non-terrorists. The three majority religions of the world are divided between good and bad. God calls this Babylon or confusion. This third Wedding Invitation goes out to include the whole world.

When The Wedding finally occurs and during **the feast, if** one enters The Wedding with improper attire – what happens? He is thrown out into outer darkness and the parable concludes with the following: **“For many are called, but few chosen”** (Matthew



22:14). Now to answer the question when will Christ **return** and be with His Bride.

### **Purpose Of *The Book Of Revelation***

*God's Story, The Bible*, is the story of God's "**will**" to be "all and in all" by and through His Son, Jesus. Christ fulfills His Father's "**will**" by His Godly marriage to His Bride. Both The Groom and The Bride must be worthy or have "agàpè" **love**.

To sum it up, *The Book of Revelation* concludes *The Holy Scriptures* as to how The Son of God concludes His Father's "**testament**" or "**will**." History and prophecy of the world always results in chaos or violence when God is not included. Finally, The Church of God and Israel are confronted with the final **battle** before Christ's **return** to save them and all humanity from **world suicide**. Some of God's **church** and **the remnant of Israel** must go through The Great Tribulation to become worthy, to become Christ's Bride. The theme of *The Book of Revelation* opens with the following announcement: "**Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen**" (Revelation 1:7).

The entire world **repents** – including those who killed Him. But first Christ must come "**in the clouds**." Now to find **the biblical answer** as to when Christ **returns**.

This *Book of Revelation* is written to Christ's **seven churches** who have corrupted themselves by the end of The First Century with one exception, The Philadelphians. Notice, The Philadelphian Church, a church of brotherly love (Philia), has only a little strength. *Revelation* is written as a warning to Christianity and the remnant of Israel, who are one of God's two servants and Prophets

(Romans 11).

What is the warning? Jesus warns His two servants about Babylon and tells them to come out of it (Revelation 18:4). To come out of Babylon they must spiritually grow in God's "agapè" love.

Revelation 5:1-9 prophesies that Jesus, as The Groom, must prove Himself worthy. How? Revelation 5:9 declares that Jesus became worthy by dying for His Bride and by **redeeming** Her. Because Christ is worthy, having "agapè" love, He can open **the seven seals**, the world's curse, plus the **seven trumps** and **God's wrath** of **the seven last plagues**. By so doing, **the time** of The Wedding Feast is ready and now there is only one question to answer before Jesus, The Messiah **returns**. Revelation 19:1-8 answers the question when Jesus **returns** for His Bride. Prior to Revelation 19, Revelation 18 announces the destruction of Babylon. Then Revelation 19:7 declares, "**Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath MADE HERSELF READY.**"

When does Christ **return**? It is not a date or time. What is "the event" which triggers Christ's **return**? **When The Bride is ready!** This is plain and very simple!

That is why Peter said in II Peter 1:19 that The Apostles had a more **sure word of prophecy**. What was this certain **word of prophecy**? The answer is in II Peter 3:8-10. Peter's prophecy declares Christ's **return** is not predicated on a date or time. It is an event and that event could be thousands of years away, because God **will wait** until none should be lost but all come to repentance! God's "**will**" is to have Jesus, The Groom **save the world** (I John 4:14). How?

First Jesus proved He was worthy, then The Bride had to get prepared and be ready – or worthy just like her Husband. God, The Father would not give the ultimate gift of **salvation** until God is “all and in all” (I Corinthians 15:28).

Once Jesus **returns** and His Bride is ready, The Millennium begins, which is the conclusion of **the engagement period** when the world is invited to The Wedding Feast. Read about this feast in Revelation 21 and 22. Read the books *Revelation Uncovered* and *The White Throne Judgment* for more details.

Jesus gives these final words in *The Bible*: “**And he said unto me, These sayings are faithful and true: and the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to shew unto his servants the things which must shortly be done. Behold, I come quickly: blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophecy of this book**” (Revelation 22:6-7).

John concludes *Revelation* and *God's Story* with, “**The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen**” – so be it!

# **HISTORY OF REVELATION**

**PROPHECY – VOL. IX**

**PART 4**

**BY  
ART MOKAROW**

## Copyright Pending – *Book*

### Puzzles – Vol. I

God's Puzzle Solved

God's Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God's Mystery Fulfilled

### Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ's Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

### Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

### Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God's Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God's Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

### Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God's Law

The True Churches Of God

Paul's Religion

### Temple– Vol. VI

History Of God's Law

The Christian Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

### Deception – Vol. VII

God's Old And New Covenant

What's It All About?

Morality And Economics

The Times Of The Gentiles

Satan's Deception

### Worship – Vol. VIII

God's Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God's Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

### Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God's Story

History Of Revelation

### Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God's School

God's Science Vs. Human Science

### Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don't Bury Your Talents

God's Work Vs. Man's Work

### End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon's Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God's Gift Of Inheritance

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

### Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God's Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God's House

Bible Study God's Way

Biblical World History

### Basic Truth – Vol. XIV

Simplicity In Christ

Beginner's Bible Study

Christ In You

Competition

Visions, Dreams And Friends

Seeking God

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.

# CONTENTS

<b>PREFACE</b>	<b>v</b>
<b>INTRODUCTION</b>	<b>vii</b>
<b>PURPOSE OF REVELATION</b>	<b>1</b>
<b>WHO ARE THE CHRISTIANS?</b>	<b>7</b>
<b>THE SEVEN CHURCHES</b>	<b>11</b>
<b>CHRIST IS WORTHY</b>	<b>17</b>
<b>THE BOOK OF RUTH</b>	<b>23</b>
<b>TOWER OF BABEL</b>	<b>29</b>
<b>THE BEAST WITH SEVEN HEADS</b>	<b>35</b>
<b>TIME OF THE GENTILES</b>	<b>43</b>
<b>TRUMPETS AND WRATH</b>	<b>51</b>
<b>HISTORY OF GOD'S WITNESSES</b>	<b>57</b>
<b>THE GREAT WHITE THRONE</b>	<b>63</b>
<b>THE BRIDE UNVAILED</b>	<b>71</b>

## PREFACE

What makes *The Book of Revelation* so hard to understand? Is it “**the symbolism**” and “**the mysterious dialect?**” Can there be some key to opening the truth to understand its mystery? In a beginning statement you will find a key which unlocks this book. Through The Word of God, Jesus, The Christ makes an unusual statement, “**I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending**” (Revelation 1:8). What a bold verse! It seems to imply a consummation of a historical event. An event which starts at a beginning and is about to conclude, “**Behold, he comes with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they *also* which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen**” (Revelation 1:7). *The Book of Revelation* covers world history dealing with its beginning to its conclusion. This book is vital in understanding The Word of God.

Comments and criticisms are welcomed. As usual, no monies are accepted for these books. All books are absolutely **free**. We are not a church and are non-denominational. Our job is to spread The Word of God (freely received – freely given).

Art Mokarow

email: [art@mokarow.com](mailto:art@mokarow.com)

Box 1197

website: [www.godspuzzlesolved.com](http://www.godspuzzlesolved.com)

Montgomery, TX 77356

download all books free of charge

*God's Puzzle Solved*

*God's Sabbath And Holy Days*

*The Mark Of The Beast*

*God's Work*

*God's Will*

*God's Two Priesthoods*

*Revelation Uncovered*

*Satan's Image*

*The Christian Sabbath*

*Christ In You*

*God's Plan Of Salvation*

*What Is Idolatry?*

*The Great Apostasy*

*Spiritual Growth*

*Truths Creeds And Doctrines*

*The White Throne Judgment*

*Faith That Saves*

*The True Church Of God*

*The Original Bible*

*God's Kingdom*

*Sons Of God*

*Discovering God*

*The History Of Revelation*

*The Eighth Head Of The Beast*

*Faith With Works*

*The Wedding Feast*

*The Temple Of God*

*God's Story*

*History Of God's Law*

*The Mystery Of God*

## INTRODUCTION

Muslims state *The Bible* is a Book of the people. Amazingly, you can read **all of mankind's history and purpose** in *The Bible* (Revelation 1:1 to 1:6). The beginning verse announces it is Jesus (The Word of God), who makes this astounding prophecy. It is a “**revelation**” or in Greek “**apocalypse**” which means “**an unvail-ing.**” What is “**an unvail-ing?**” It is explained in II Corinthians 3:10-15. Israel needed *The Old Covenant* because they did not understand their hearts were not **right**. Then, in *The New Testament*, *The New Covenant* (under Christ) you have **the unvail-ing**. It is the unvail-ing of The Mystery of God and The Bride (Revelation 10:7 and Revelation 19:7-8).

### Sin Of Eden

When Adam and Eve sinned in The Garden of Eden, they were residing in an eternal **Paradise** – The House of God – The Kingdom of God. Everything was very good (without any sin) (Genesis 1:31). Sin entered and when humanity began to sin, it meant death would end everyone's life (Romans 5:12).

Adam had an opportunity to have his progeny live in The Kingdom of God – God's Sabbath **Rest** (Romans 5:14). After Adam and Eve sinned, one of their future children would have to come to **save the world from death** (I Corinthians 15:26 and Genesis 3:15). Christ had to come as a **Son of Man (human)** to become **the body** that God accepted as a sacrifice. It had to be from a human being because “**the life...is the blood thereof**” (Genesis 9:4). It is human blood where life is. “**For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins**” (Hebrews 10:4) God allowed Him to die, so sin and death could be destroyed. Only because of Christ, could sin or death end. When death is gone, **Salvation** is available for everyone who decides to **repent** (Revelation 1:1-6).



## End Of First Century

By the end of The First Century while John, The Apostle, was still alive, he completed *The Book of Revelation*. This **revelation** came from Jesus to John (through an angel) when he was on The Isle of Patmos (Revelation 1:9-10). John, through Christ, had an extremely important Christian **problem** to resolve. What was that problem? John received this prophecy on Patmos about 66 A.D. while The Temple was still standing. The Temple was destroyed in 70 A.D.

The days of The Roman Empire were “**the 4<sup>th</sup> part**” of Daniel’s Great Image in Daniel 2. 1) The Babylonian Empire under Nebuchadnezzar was “**the head of the image.**” 2) The Media-Persia Empire was the upper body of the image. 3) The lower mid-section was Alexander, The Great. 4) The iron legs were The Roman Empire when Christ will return. Those were truly **The Last Days**, but not **The End of Days** (Daniel 12). In **The Last Days**, Jesus, not The Prophets, gives you The Word of God. It is Jesus, in **The Last Day’s** prophecies, representing His **return** and The Coming of **The Kingdom of God**. Christ is about to **disclose His return**. This is the **key** to understanding *The Book of Revelation* and its unvailing. These prophecies were about to happen (Revelation 1:1 and 19).

Starting about 55 A.D. when Paul wrote many of his *Epistles*, he related to **the beginning** of an unusual event which will take place in The Christian World. Paul announces **The Mystery of Iniquity** was already penetrating The Christian Churches (II Thesalonians 2:7-8). He said this **anti-Christ** would go on, until a **proper time** would occur (when Christ would return). Later, you will understand from *The Book of Revelation* when this will be. By the time of Jude, in **the late** First Century, Christianity lost **the faith** which was “**once delivered**” to **the saints** (Jude 3). Jude explains certain false teachers had already crept into **the church**

(unawares) who were previously ordained to corrupt Christianity. They would take God's **grace** and turn it into **sin**. They even **denied The True Christ** (Jude 4). They ended up making a **business** out of The Church of God (Jude 11). By the end of The First Century, Christianity was in **spiritual chaos**. They had a multitude of doctrinal beliefs, especially when The Gnostics penetrated **the churches**. This was the historical backdrop of Christianity in the days of *The Book of Revelation*. Very likely, *The Book of Revelation* was first given to John by an angel about 66 A.D. before The Fall of The Temple in 70 A.D. John was told not to conclude his prophecy until it was time for him to go before many people, nations and kings (Revelation 10:11). Before the seventh trumpet, everything already had occurred by the end of The First Century (Revelation 11 to Revelation 22). The rest of the chapter talks about future events (Revelation 10:4). In Paul's day, some preached that The Resurrection had passed (and they missed it); or, there was **no resurrection at all** (I Corinthians 15). Satan was attacking Christianity in every way by infiltrating **with deceitful** teachers. They were killing and persecuting Christians as in Nero's day. *The Book of Revelation* was vital for them, to receive The Truth of God – **His word**. Only The Smyrna Church is promised to be in **the first resurrection** as The Bride of Christ (Revelation 8:2-11).

## Seven Churches

John was told to write *The Book of Revelation* to **the seven churches** of his day who had good understanding (**spiritually**) but had **corrupted** themselves (Revelation 1:4-5). On the other hand, The Philadelphian Christians only had a **little strength** and were told to hold to **the truth** they had (Revelation 3:11). Only The Smyrna Church (those martyred) will be The Bride. The others had serious spiritual problems and needed to change. One other group, **The Remnant of Israel**, is also included as God's **people (Christians)**. When Jesus was on this earth, they were

**all Messianic Jews**; but with the conversion of Cornelius (which included all Gentiles) they did not have to be circumcised or keep The Works of The Letter of The Law (Acts 15:1-9). The Gentile Christians were called **God-fearers** and The Christian Jews were called Messianic Jews. In actuality, there were about 28 differing Jewish **sects**, as well as The Apostles. Besides The 144,000 Israelites, there was an innumerable amount from all other nations who will be given **Salvation**. So, besides The 144,000 Israelites, The Gentiles and all who have repented will be included in **the first resurrection** (Revelation 7:9). Those who will come out of **Great Tribulation** will be The 144,000 Israelites along with **the great multitude** of The Gentiles (Revelation 7:14). Later, you will understand these are **the two witnesses** that *The Book of Revelation* is written to. They will, eventually, come out of Babylon (known as The Great Whore) (Revelation 18:4).

Now to explore **the unvailng** of Revelation written to Israel (The 144,000) and **The Seven Gentile Churches** (Revelation 2 and 3). These **seven churches** remain until **The Return of Christ**. All exist at **The Return of Christ**. They are **the two witnesses**. “**The Menorah**,” is a way of “**representing God’s light to the world** [Christ is The Light]” (John 1:9).

## **Coming Of Christ**

For two thousand years, starting with The Apostles, the question has always been “when will Jesus **return** and establish **The Kingdom of God?**” *The Book of Revelation* answers this question. Two important events determine the outcome. First, it has to do with The End of The Times of The Gentiles which must be **fulfilled** and, secondly, **the unvailng** must take place. The introduction of John in *The Book of Revelation* is The Return of Jesus, “**Behold, he comes with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindred [people] of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen** [so be it]” (Revelation 1:1-7).

*The Book of Revelation* begins with The Return of Jesus and **covers the complete prophecy** from Christ's **return** up to The New Heaven and The New Earth. It's ironic, that the last book of *The Bible* is like a **summary of the history of the world**.

# CHAPTER 1

## PURPOSE OF REVELATION

**A warning is given from The Word of God and the testimony or witness by Jesus Christ of all things that John saw (Revelation 1:2). This book is given by Christ to His servants (Christians). Why? To settle the issue as to when Jesus will return. By reading its history and future prophecy, you will understand why so many have tried to guess when Christ will return.**

Since Jesus Christ's **resurrection**, Christians have been looking for His **return** almost every 1,000 years. But plainly, Christ said no one knows that day (Matthew 24:36). In fact, Jesus said, "**For the elect's sake those days shall be shortened**" (Matthew 24:22). If no one knows the day or hour and, if the time can be shortened – why would anyone, in their ego, think they can know that date? In fact, Jesus warns you, the time is at hand. From the days of John, Christ could have returned at anytime (Revelation 1:3). It isn't a set date for Christ's **return**, but a series of events which must take place, coupled with specific conditions.

### Day Of The Lord

Nowhere in *The Bible* does it say The Day of The Lord is Sunday or any other day of the week. Some in **the church** believe John received this revelation on a Sunday, because they believe Christ was resurrected on Sunday. *The Bible* does not call **the first day of the week** The Day of The Lord or **The Lord's Day**. Among

scholars there is much discourse over whether Jesus rose Sunday morning or on The Sabbath, The Seventh Day, ending as the sun went down. You must search history and compare it with *The Bible*. It is true it was early on the first day that Mary Magdalene went to the tomb at dawn (the first day of the week) but Jesus had already risen (Matthew 28:1). Mark, Luke and John all say the same thing (Mark 16:1-2, Luke 24:1 and John 20:1). In fact, it was still dark on the first day when she came with spices (John 20:1). The answer of **The Lord's Day** will give you biblical proof. It is vital for biblical understanding to study in context, according to the subject being discussed. You have found Revelation begins with the announcement of **The Return of Christ**. *The Book of Revelation*, also, ends with a warning, "**Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus**" (Revelation 22:20). The context of the entire *Book of Revelation* concerns **The Return of Jesus** and the establishment of **The Kingdom of God**. The subject of Revelation discloses **the events and conditions** which need to be completed before He returns. You are going to find Christ's **return** has nothing to do with a date, but rather a series of **events and conditions**.

There is no biblical evidence that John was on The Isle of Patmos on the first day of the week, Sunday. It is totally of human interpretation. It has nothing to do with the context of the book, which is only about The Return of Christ. You will read there is greater significance to the subject of Christ's **return**, as opposed to any day of the week. John was on The Island of Patmos in vision on **The Lord's Day**. It is the day on which **Jesus returns** to establish **The Kingdom of God**. John was merely stating that he was on Patmos having **a vision** as to **when Jesus will return**. Much of this is a **prophecy** which has transpired during these 2,000 years. No one knows the date, but clearly as Peter said, it could be thousands of years away (II Peter 3:8-9). It all has to do

with the people's **repentance**. The Day of The Lord is not "**a day of the week**," but "**a time of destruction**" by God (Joel 1:15). The precise event takes place on The Day of The Lord (Zechariah 14:1-4). All nations of the world will be gathered against Jerusalem to battle. Then, Christ arrives to fight against those nations. **The Lord's feet** will stand upon **The Mount of Olives** (Zechariah 14:4). Jesus said this in Matthew 24, Mark 13 and Luke 21. That is **the biblical proof** of The Lord's Day. John's vision was concerning **The Return of Christ** and follows, exactly, the context of **The Return of Jesus** and all its events. John told **the seven churches** that he is a brother and companion of all **the seven churches**. He explained he also goes through **the tribulation** (in his lifetime) just like they do (Revelation 1:9). They must have **the patience of Jesus**, as He died for everyone. John witnessed all this on The Island of Patmos, .

## History Of Seven Churches

By the end of The First Century, Christians were in **spiritual chaos**. Besides their persecution from Rome, they were **persecuted spiritually** "**for the faith which once was delivered to the saints**" (Jude). They, also, had been so effected by these false teachers, they were in confusion as to **the truth**. They were confused, specifically, about **The Return of Christ**. Remember, the subject of *The Book of Revelation* is when Jesus does return. He can return at anytime, but **certain events** and **conditions** must **transpire first**. There was great confusion and questions about Jesus, such as: 1) Who was He? 2) When will He return? 3) Was there really **a resurrection**? This is just part of the problem with The Christian Church as depicted by The Seven Churches. John warns that Jesus, in vision, was **in the middle of seven golden candlesticks**, much like **the menorah (seven churches)**. The menorah, the seven candlesticks, in The Holy Place, were to be

His **witness**. First, Israel was to be His **witness**. Later God added other **witnesses**. Israel was replaced by The Gentiles (called The Church of God). The Seven Churches of God, “**the candlesticks**,” represented Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamos, Thyatira, Sardis, Philadelphia and Laodicea. These seven churches are the candlesticks, representing God’s **witnesses** at the time. “**And he [Jesus] had in his right hand seven stars: and out of His mouth went a sharp two-edged sword: and His countenance was as the sun shining in His strength**” (Revelation 1:16). This **sword** was **The Word of God** which cuts asunder (Hebrews 4). This is Christ’s **appearance** on **The Day of The Lord** at His **return** on The Mount of Olives. When He returns, He is ready to battle against God’s **enemies**. Christ then calmed John, telling him who He was. Chapter 1 ends by defining **the seven stars** as angels over **the seven churches** and **the seven candlesticks**. “**The Menorah**” represented **the seven churches** to be “**the lights**” to the world (God’s **witnesses of the truth**). “**The Menorah**” are the seven candlesticks in the holy place of the temple. They are **God’s churches**, with **Christ**, in their midst, but **they were and are in spiritual chaos**. That is the reason Christ is shown with **the two-edged sword**, to **judge the world** at His **return**. *The Book of Revelation* is a **dire warning** to Christians of its **history** from the time of **the spiritual problems the seven churches** had in John’s day. At that time, He chastises God’s **enemies** and **the seven churches** to heed His **warnings**.

Christianity is not one particular group who are the only ones who have **the truth**, as some falsely believe. In reality, **all Christians** are at **different levels of spiritual understanding**. Christ is in **the midst** of all these **seven churches** and **loves them all**. Jesus will finally **end correcting His seven churches**, “**As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent. Behold, I stand at the door and knock: if any man hear my**



**voice and open the door, I will come in to him and will sup [feast] with him and he with me”** (Revelation 3:19-20).

Jesus **loves** all **seven churches**, even though they are **doctrinally** and **spiritually** “**in confusion**” (**Babylon**). The purpose of *The Book of Revelation* is to **warn** Christianity to **spiritually** understand His **words** – **The Word of God**. Why? Because Jesus is prepared to **come at anytime**. In the meantime, God’s **churches** are to be **true witnesses** of Christ. They are not to be in **spiritual confusion** (**as they are today**). You will **clearly** learn why Jesus cannot return until **The Churches of God** become **the true witnesses** of Christ (no matter what **tribulation** they must **endure** for their **good**). This is why *The Book of Revelation* had to be written. **God will not** allow **His Son** to take **His Bride** (all Christians) until she is worthy to be **The Wife** (Revelation 19:7-8).

## CHAPTER 2

### WHO ARE THE CHRISTIANS?

**To understand the state of Christianity at the end of The First Century, you need to ascertain what is the true definition of a Christian. Then, you will understand what was happening to The Christian Churches.**

#### **A Clean Heart Is Summarized**

Surprisingly, it isn't *The New Testament*, but *The Old Testament* which first defines a Christian. King David, who committed two of the worst **transgressions** against God's **Law**, explains about Christianity. You can learn, step-by-step, exactly what spiritual growth is (Psalm 51:1-12). This Psalm is given right after Nathan, The Prophet, confronts David about his sins. David is guilty of two capital crimes – **adultery** and **murder**. Both are worthy of **death**. David earnestly prays for **repentance** (Psalm 51). This Psalm can be an outline for your own repentance. First, he prays for **mercy**, asking God to **blot out his sin**. Then, he asks God for whatever it takes to thoroughly cleanse him from his **sin**. He immediately acknowledges his sin and **the evil** he has done. David throws himself on **the mercy** of **God's court** and His **judgment**. He acknowledges his **sinful** nature from the time of his **birth**. Now, David describes what steps he must take for God to accept him. David begins by declaring a Christian requires **inward truth** (within one's nature and conscience). There should not be any agendas or personal **desires**. By being **honest** with oneself, only then, can God **give anyone wisdom**. Read the book *God's*

*Plan of Salvation* and prove to yourself “**the seven pillars of wisdom.**” David pleads, “**Purge me with hyssop and I shall be clean: wash me and I shall be whiter than snow**” so he could be completely honest within himself. **The unconverted** always lie to themselves and justify all they do, even when it comes to **murder**. David cried, “**Hide your face from my sins and blot out all mine iniquities.**” Read what a Christian, growing **spiritually**, must do to become **sinless**, “**Create in me a clean [honest] heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me**” (Psalm 51:10). Now, you have **the scriptural answer** which explains why you **cannot** change yourself with your own deeds and **works**. A Christian is one who, within themselves, has **an honest or pure heart**. Then you can be **forgiven your sins** and **grow spiritually**. **No law, no doctrine or any human effort can produce Salvation.**

The difference between *The Old Covenant* and **The Letter of The Law**, with all its **legal demands of works and deeds**, could never and **will never save you**. Only God can change you by **adopting you from human parents** so you can become **Spiritual Sons of God** (Ephesians 1). Only through *The New Covenant*, where God **writes His Law in your heart and mind**, can you **receive Salvation**. *The Old Covenant* only tells you what “**sin**” is (I John 3:4). *The New Covenant*, through Christ, will **destroy sin** (I John 5:17). You must become **perfect** like Christ and God (Matthew 5:48). **The Law of God** is not destroyed or **done away** with but raised **to the highest spiritual standard**. This points to The Letter of The Law which no longer applies (by command). Instead, you must keep **The Law, spiritually**, in your heart. You can’t even think of lying or stealing. It becomes a part of your desire changing your heart of stone to a heart like **God’s**. Then, you can’t help but **keep God’s Law**. Salvation is a **spiritual matter** and not achieved by **The Works of The Law** or any other human effort. Only God, through Christ, by The Holy Spirit changes you from human par-

ents (by circumcision), but, now, God makes you His **Sons, like Christ**, by **The Holy Spirit**. King David had **God's heart** because he was washed **spiritually**, to have an **honest heart** and grow in **God's love** (Romans 5:5). Love **fulfills** The Law because God has given you the power of **His heart**. That is **True Christianity**. Jesus said **the same thing**. Once you have **God's heart**, then, **the fruits** reveal **The Truth of God** – “**In You**” (Matthew 7:20). No longer do you need any **Law** explaining what **sin** is. Now, with a **right heart**, **The Law of God** is written in **your heart, spiritually** (Hebrews 10).

### **It Is All About Choosing**

God gave Adam and Eve a **choice**. They could eat the fruits of **The Tree of Life**, which gives **Salvation**, or eat of **The Tree of Good and Evil**, which would kill them. Humans with their human nature do not have the ability to be **Holy** and **perfect**. Everyone is a mixture of **good** and **evil**. God can never give **Salvation** in **Paradise** until you are **Holy** and **perfect** like God. Everyone in The Kingdom of God must have a **clean** or **honest heart**. Once Christians try to attempt to be **Holy** and **righteous** by human efforts, they end in confusion (**Babylon**). This is exactly why God confused **the languages** at The Tower of Babel. The people decided, themselves, how to worship God with their human nature (which is a **mixture of good and evil**). **You cannot be perfect with a human heart**. Jesus said, “**Enter you in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leads to destruction**” (Matthew 7:13). The Gate to **The House of God** is **narrow** and **straight**. There is only one way to get into **The House of God**. Christ summarizes Christianity by stating **The Golden Rule**. “**Therefore all things whatsoever you would that men should do to you, do you even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets**” (Matthew 7:12). This is **not** what humans

have **the innate ability** to do. Only by choosing **the right tree** – The Holy Spirit of God – can your heart be changed (Romans 2). You then, can live in **the spirit** and no longer in **the flesh** (your human nature). Now, **circumcision** is of the heart and not by fleshly **circumcision** from earthly parents. You are to become a **Son of God, like Christ** (Ephesians 4:13-14). Then, are you no longer in confusion with different human **doctrines** tossing you **to and fro**. Christianity, being like Christ, is not of a person's doing. All human systems or human imaginations of how to **worship The True God** cannot change anything. Rituals, praising or singing about God's **greatness** or whatever **works** or **deeds** you may do, will never change anyone. You would still be **carnal** or **beast-like humans**. **Only God can give you "the gift of eternal life."** Once you understand this, you will be ready to read *The History of Revelation* where Christ warned The Christian Church not to follow their human nature in worshipping God. Christ loves His **churches**, in spite of their shortcomings. It is appropriate that God chose **the unveiling** of world history as the last book of *The Bible* for you to understand "**what it's all about.**"

## CHAPTER 3

### THE SEVEN CHURCHES

**In Revelation 2 and 3, Christ tells His Witnesses they are not getting the job done. With His love, He describes their state. Christ warns them what they must do. They remain, in type, until The Return of Christ. It all has to do with the unvailing.**

#### Churches At Ephesus

This Church of God has a very special history. Jesus reveals they were a very fruitful church. They labored much and had great patience. They could not stand evil and made sure they tested The Apostles as to whether they were false or not. They had been true to the faith, but as time proceeded, they forgot their **first love**. They are reminded to be as diligent as in their earlier years. If not, their candlestick will be removed from being a **Light** or a **Witness of Christ** (Revelation 2:1-5). Examining the earlier years of Ephesus, Paul called those in the church “**saints – The Holy Ones (faithful and righteous)**” (Ephesians 1:1). They understood The Mystery Of God. They knew God’s **will**, His **truth** (Ephesians 1:9). They knew the **real Christ**.

Paul stopped at Ephesus, on his way to Jerusalem (before he was arrested and taken to Rome). He wanted to warn The Church that after he was gone, there would be **wolves** and **false teachers not sparing the flock**. He told them to be diligent because men would arise **speaking false or perverse things** and drawing “**away dis-**

**ciples after them**” (Acts 20:29-30). They lost their **first love**, and, no longer were **The True Witnesses of Christ**. A significant fact is, when Jesus returns, He will **remove their candlestick** unless they repent. The theme of Revelation, **historically**, is that The Churches’ responsibility is to be a **Witness of Christ**. This is the commission Jesus gave The Original Apostles (Acts 1:8).

The entire *Book of Revelation* has to do with The Two Witnesses of God (**The Churches of God** and **The 144,000 Israelites**). Jesus closes His **discourse** to Ephesus declaring those who **overcome** will live on The New Earth and have a right to eat of The Tree of Life. They will be living in **Paradise**.

### **Church Of Smyrna**

This **church** is physically poor, yet, **spiritually rich**. Some falsely claimed to be Jews. Instead, they were of Satan’s congregation. This **church** is persecuted and thrown into prison and suffers **tribulation** for a short time. If they stand **faithful** to their death, they will receive **Salvation**. They will not be thrown into The Lake of Fire when and if they overcome. Of **the seven churches** they are guaranteed Paradise. They are a **spiritually rich church** (Revelation 2:9).

### **Church Of Pergamos**

This **church** is located close to Satan’s seat, Pergamos, but they remained diligent even when Antipas (a **martyr** of Christ) was slain. They were under severe attack by Satan. They had a cardinal problem. They made a business out of the church, just like Balaam, who taught Balak to stumble. They also held to the false teachings of The Nicolaitanes, which Christ **hated**. Remember, Jesus said He had a **two-edged sword** (The Word of God). He

said when He returns, He will fight against them and judge them through God's "**word**" (Hebrews 4). In the end they will be a white stone in New Jerusalem and have access to The Tree of Life (with a new name). This new name is not known but it may be connected with The Priesthood.

### **Church Of Thyatira**

This Church of God is unusual. Their last **works** as a **Witness of Christ** is **better** than when they began as Christians. They became more **spiritual** as they grew older as a church. They were **charitable** and **faithful**. But in spite of their **works**, they allowed the false teaching of Jezebel, a prophetess, to teach and seduce some of their members. They were into "**paganism**." Yet, they were one of Christ's **churches**. This church, therefore, will have to go into **The Great Tribulation**, unless they repent of their **false teaching**. Some, however, in **The Church of Thyatira** do not hold to their **pagan doctrine** and will not have any other **burden**. If they continue to hold to **the truth**, Christ will give them power, or rulership, in The Kingdom of God when **He returns**. They will be with Christ, The Morning Star (Revelation 22:16).

### **Church Of Sardis**

The Sardis Church of God exists mainly as a **social organization**, loving **the church** but doing very little service. They are satisfied as a group. They like gathering together as God's **church** but they lack **spiritual growth** and **service**. They are not a witness to the world. When Christ **returns**, they will be surprised, just like **the five unwise virgins** who have no oil (growth) in God's **Holy Spirit**. **A few** in this **church** will walk with Jesus and will wear a **white garment**. This is just like **The Bride** who becomes Christ's **Wife** (Revelation 19:7-8). They will receive forgiveness.



## The Philadelphia Church

Everyone wants to be The Philadelphian Church which is known as The Church of Brotherly Love. They exist when the hour of temptation comes upon the entire world. It will be a time of testing to determine who has The Mark of The Beast. They only have a little strength, without much power, but **they never deny Jesus**. When Christ comes, **this church** will be a **pillar** in New Jerusalem. She is part of Christ's **Wife**. This **church** has Christ's "**new name**" at His **return**.

## Church Of Laodicea

No one claims to be in this church. The people believe they are the only ones who have it all. They are **rich** and have need of nothing. They feel they have **the truth**. In reality, they are spiritually **naked** and unclothed for **The Wedding Feast**. These spirit beings are neither **The Wife of Christ** nor **The Guests** at The Wedding. They do not have a proper wedding garment and are **not invited**. Jesus, upon His **return**, advises this **church** to counsel of Him so they can buy fine gold, refined in **the fire**. Christ advises them to go through a **trial** and **testing**, **so they can** come to **the truth of God**. They may still have to endure The Lake of Fire to be made perfect.

## Prophecy Of The Seven Churches

Historically, all these churches have a variety of **doctrinal truth** but are still Christians (**God's Churches**) (Revelation 2 and 3). Jesus concludes His **warnings** to all these churches and reveals that He **loves them all**, but has to rebuke and chasten them, so they will **repent** of their **wrong doing** (Revelation 3:19). For any Christian to think they are **in the only true church** or even

worse, to give themselves a name of being **Philadelphians**, they are in deep **spiritual trouble**. Only Christ is **The Judge** and He will know who is **spiritual**. These **churches** will be present at Christ's **return** and all of them are Christians. He **loves** them **all**. But it's funny because most churches are in competition with each other. Everyone needs to step back and realize they are not going to be judged by **any church**. However, you will be judged individually. Paul warned, "**Work out your own salvation with fear and trembling**" (Philippians 2:12). It isn't a **church** community that matters, but a **judgment decision** by Christ to decide **your reward according to your individual works**. Jesus tells you, "**I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be**" (Revelation 22:12). The **purpose and history of the unveiling** of *The Book of Revelation* is to determine who will be a **proper witness of Christ** as **His servants**. *The Book of Revelation* is about **Christ's faithful Two Witnesses** (**The Churches of God** and **The 144,000 Israelites**). Where do you fit in this prophecy?

## CHAPTER 4

### CHRIST IS WORTHY

**The first three chapters in Revelation introduce the theme of the book, which is, “When will Christ return to take His Bride?” Christ warns His Seven Churches about what they lack and what they need to do for Him to return. Revelation expands its prophecy to explain what is to come and, more importantly, why it must happen.**

#### **Prophecy Is Conditional**

God, in heaven, is revealed in all His **glory**. In His **right hand** was **A Book of Prophecy** and **no man** was worthy to open this book. The Apostle John, while **in spirit**, observed this marvelous scene. He wept because no one was found **worthy**. John cried because he knew this prophecy contained the information about Christ’s **return**. This is an awesome and amazing scene (Revelation 4 and 5). Up to this point, **The Seven Churches** weren’t ready or worthy and, now it seemed to John, **no man** could be found worthy to open the contents of *The Book of Revelation*. Christ will not return until The Bride is worthy (Revelation 19:7-8). John looked back in history and wrote what Jesus went through. By the end of The First Century **the church** was still not ready for her Husband. Then, “**one of the [24] elders said unto me, Weep not behold, the Lion of the tribe of Juda** [The Tribe of Judah was an adoption from His adopted father Joseph. He came from The Land of Judah but genealogically or physically He was a Levite], **the Root of David** [Jesus, as The Christ, The Slain Lamb], **has prevailed**

[found worthy] **to open the book** [prophecy]” (Matthew 1 and Revelation 5:5). Jesus, The Christ, as The Slain Lamb has been found worthy to open the prophecy.

Jesus spent three and a half years of His **earthly ministry** in The Land of Israel and His **own people** rejected Him. He preached The Kingdom of God was at hand, but they didn't believe Him (Mark 1). Because Christ was rejected as The Bridegroom, God had Him turn to another nation, which was **more worthy** (Matthew 21:43). Then, in John's day, near the end of his life (66 A.D. to 95 A.D.) God's **church** was still not ready. Christ was **The Only Faithful Witness of God** (Revelation 1:5). Because Jesus was **worthy**, He was able to release **The Seven Seals** which kept **the prophecy secret**. Jesus was **spiritually mature** in His Father's **eyes** to not only open **The Seven Seals**, but was ready as **The Bridegroom** to come for **The Bride**. The announcement of **The Wedding to the world** could happen at anytime. The invitation was sent **to both the bad and the good**. This is **the purpose** of **The Millennium**. It is to announce The Wedding Feast in **The Kingdom of God** on The future New Earth in New Jerusalem (Revelation 21 and 22). The Heavenly Host sang, “... **You are worthy to take the book** [Revelation] **and to open the seals thereof: for you were slain and have redeemed us to God by your blood out of every kindred and tongue and people and nation; And has made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on earth**” (Revelation 5:9-10). Notice, everyone is finally blessed because of Christ. Then, The Heavenly Host declares Christ is **worthy** to receive power, riches, wisdom, strength, glory and blessings. Read on and see, **the entire world** acknowledges Christ is **worthy** (Revelation 5:11-14). Then, Jesus, as **The Lamb**, begins to open **the seals**.

The history of *The Book of Revelation* does not give specific dates,

but does give you the events, along with the **conditions which were met or are to be met**. These events are conditional – that is the reason **prophecy is conditional**. Paul said prophecies will **fail**. In Greek, the word “**fail**” means “**stop**” or “**pause**” (I Corinthians 13:8). God does not allow prophecy when the conditions are not right for **free choice**. Free choice is a priority for you to follow God’s **purpose and plan**. Jesus was ready to accept **Judah**, His **Bride**, but they rejected Him so God had to delay **The Engagement**. The Bride wasn’t **worthy**. Christ’s **Bride**, Israel, would have been His **Wife** if they had accepted Him at His **first coming** (Zechariah 9:9-10). Throughout *The Bible* God stopped prophecy because the conditions were not just right. Those not knowing **The Truth of God** have claimed **The Word of God** isn’t real or true. They have no understanding or wisdom to know God and His **plan**. Only Jesus is **worthy** to be engaged, but His **Bride** must still grow. Until The Bride is **worthy** to be Christ’s **Wife**, He will not or cannot **return** until “**all**” is fulfilled.

## **Groom’s Responsibility**

Jesus, as The Groom, does not sit on the sidelines until His **Bride** is **worthy**. **The Bride** wants to marry, but does not know what she must do. **The Bride** does know she has to **mature** to be like Jesus (Ephesians 4). The problem is how does she grow to maturity. Christ reveals what is lacking, but He does not sit on **the sidelines** and does not leave her to herself. As in any period of courting, He **gives her gifts** to show His **continual love and support** (Revelation 2 and 3). Every husband’s duty to his wife is revealed in Ephesians 5:29-32. Most grooms, before the marriage, bestow **gifts** upon the future bride. When Christ gives her **gifts** to show His love for her, she grows in her **love** for Him (church) (Ephesians 5). Then, Paul tells you this is **a great mystery** between Christ and **the church**. What is this **mystery**?

## Christ's Gifts

Jesus, as any Groom who is in **love** with His Bride, continually gives **gifts** to her, especially to reveal His **desire** to marry her. Read the **love** that grows, **in type**, in *The Book of The Song of Solomon*. It depicts all the **virgins**, young women, who want Jesus, as well. Christ, first and foremost, gives His **bride** an **engagement ring**. What is it? Christ said, "**Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send Him unto you**" (John 16:7). Then, He declares, "**Howbeit when He, the Spirit of truth, is come, He will guide you into all truth: for He shall not speak of Himself; but whatsoever He shall hear, that shall He speak: and He will show you things to come**" (John 16:13). Why was it needful for Christ to leave His future **bride**? Christ had to go and build a **home (man-sion)** for His **bride** (John 14:2). But, first, Jesus had to die for His **bride** as protector and pay for all her sins or **debts**.

This marriage was not going to start on a **shoestring**. This was a **royal marriage**. Christ, as The Husband-to-be, was going to protect and bless her with gifts to prove His **love** for her. The **engagement ring** was **beautiful**. The engagement ring was of **God's glory**, all His **riches** and revealed His **goodness** in The Son. The Holy Spirit is like a **beautiful diamond**, with glorious colors, manifesting all of God's **love** in His **Son**, Jesus. This truly was a **pearl of great price**. There are **pearly gates** leading into **The Kingdom of God** which Christ **inherited** from **His Father**. Christ and His **wife** are to live in **The Kingdom of God**. Jesus will inherit all of His **Father's riches**. Jesus, besides paying His **Bride's debts**, is, also, going to give her all He has. As a **Prince**, He will come to get her on His **white horse** (Revelation 19). He cannot come on any certain **date** until **the house** He is building

with His **Dad fits the need of God's family** and His **bride is worthy**.

Notice the **size of The Temple of God or House of God**. Everything is measured in **The Temple of God**, except for the size of **The Court of The Gentiles**. Why? The size of **The Gentile Court cannot be decided until The End of The Times of The Gentile Rule** (42 months or 3 ½ years). **The Temple of God** cannot be completed until **The Gentile Rule of The World** will have ended and **The Kingdom of God** will be established. God's **Two Witnesses – The Church of God (The Seven Churches)** and **The Remnant of Israel** (The 144,000) go through **The Tribulation**, as well as **The Church**, who waits in safety (**in the wilderness**) (Revelation 12:12-17). Jerusalem, on earth, depicted as Sodom and Gomorrah along with Egypt (as Babylon) will be destroyed (Zechariah 14 and Revelation 17 and 18). You have just read what concludes The Times of The Gentiles.

The Ten Tribes of Israel (about 700 B.C.) were taken into captivity and scattered among The Gentiles. Judah followed in 538 B.C. and ultimately, was scattered in all **nations** until Jesus returns. The second condition of prophecy is **The Bride** must be worthy before Christ can come. This does not occur until **The End of The Times of The Gentile Rule**. This Gentile's rule is from Nebuchadnezzar's day, the first Gentile **beast (a lion)** until **the fourth beast** or a composite (a **lion, bear** and a **leopard**, 666) manifesting itself as The Eighth Head (but **is of The Seventh**). **The Eighth Head of The Beast** is, only, **an image or likeness of The Seventh**, which is when **Rome fell**. The succeeding heads were **types** – Justinian or Charlemagne, Napoleon, Hitler as well as some popes. It is the assembly of **all nations** at Armageddon which will end **The World Gentile rule** with their attack upon Jerusalem (**The Great Whore**) (Zechariah 14). In prophecy, **Christ has to come to save**

**the world from self-suicide** (II Peter 3). It was just as God saved Noah and his family at the time of the flood. When these **events occur**, it completes the martyrdom of God's **Two Witnesses** in Jerusalem. They were, then, **resurrected** after three days, like Jesus. So, after their resurrection **The Bride** would be **worthy** to be **Christ's Wife**. (Read the book *Satan's Image*). Christ, **The Groom and Husband**, has already paid His dues and is **worthy**. He had to die, to pay for His **Bride's "debts,"** then, **bestows gifts** upon her until He **returns**. Every time she looks at her **engagement ring (God's Holy Spirit)** she falls deeper and deeper in **love** with her future Husband. The **Holy Spirit** reveals all the **heavenly gifts** given her by Jesus. She loves Him more and more and can't get over His **love** for her and she waits until she will be **ready to give her life** for Him (**God's Two Witnesses – The Seven Churches and the Remnant of Israel**). To realize life eternal is His **gift** to her, but to rule with Him is awesome to even think about.

Christ tells **the bride** what she needs to do to become **worthy** and, then, **Jesus reveals to her The Seven Gifts of The Spirit – fear, mercy, wisdom, understanding, faith, judgment and love** (Matthew 23:23). Where did Jesus get these **gifts**? Jesus inherited these gifts from God, The Father's **Holy Spirit**, which is full of **riches**. That is why the parents must leave **an inheritance to the children**, so they **can build** upon it, like Christ. Jesus has been found **truly worthy!** How worthy are you? If you have ever received an inheritance, how did you handle it?



## CHAPTER 5

# THE BOOK OF RUTH

**Who is The Bride who will become Christ's wife? In *The Book of Esther*, the king commands to have his virgins (in his harem) cleansed. And he didn't choose Esther until she gave her life for her people. In the last chapter of *The Book of Revelation*, you have read how Jesus doesn't come for His Wife until she is willing to give her life for Him. Now, you need to learn how Christ chooses His Bride.**

### Naomi And Ruth

Naomi, a Jewish woman, fled to Moab, a Gentile nation, with her husband and two sons. She became a widow in The Land of Moab. Then, her two sons died in Moab, leaving their two Gentile wives as widows. One wife decided to go back to her father's house, but Ruth (a Moabite, a Gentile) decided to stay with Naomi. Naomi owned some land in Judah and Ruth decided to go with her. When they were back in Judah and did not have anyone to work their land, Ruth went out into the fields of Jewish land-holders to glean their fields (according to The Law). The Law stated the land-owners are to leave some of the harvest for the poor. One day, she was gleaning in a field owned by Boaz, a Jew. They meet and Boaz realized he was a close relative of Naomi and gave Ruth **special privileges** to glean the best of his land.

When Naomi realized they were related she encouraged Ruth to become friendly with Boaz. Ultimately, they married and, then,

Ruth and Naomi, as mother-in-law, became the property of Boaz. Ruth, as a wife, also, received the blessing of Boaz which came from his inheritance. The significance of this story is **the union** of a Gentile and a Jew, which made Ruth and her children a part of The Inheritance of Israel, The Promised Land. They had Obed, who had Jesse, who had David, The King. David, now a mixture of Judah and a Gentile, Ruth, became a King with his seed, forever. From David's lineage by Mary, Jesus was born to be The King of Kings (over Israel and The Gentiles). King David under Christ is now over Israel and the Gentiles genealogically.

### **Peter's Declaration**

God, no longer, chooses His **people** through discrimination, "**But in every nation he that fears Him and works righteousness, is accepted with [of] him**" (Acts 10:34-35). Under *The Old Covenant*, administered by Levi, **The Letter of The Law** was **discriminatory**. For prophecy to continue, **The Law** had to be changed. Now, The Melchizedek Priesthood replaces The Administration of The Law and becomes **spiritual**, instead of "in" The Letter. Gentiles can become **spiritual** Israelites or true Israelites by Ruth, a Gentile, and therefore, inherit the promises made to Abraham, based upon worshipping God and striving to be **righteous**. Now, under Melchizedek, The Law is **magnified** by being given **more honor** or God's **very goodness and glory**. God's **Two Witnesses** are both Israel and The Gentiles by birth and numbers, but they must be **righteous** with the help of **God's Holy Spirit**. But, under Melchizedek, The Law is written into one's **nature** and no longer needs The Letter of The Law to define **sin**. They have God's **righteousness** within each of them (Romans 2:25-29). When you become like **Jesus**, then, God is **In You** and you are "**one**" of His **Sons**. Then, God can be **All in All** (I Corinthians 15:28-29). It is at this time you never "even think" of dishonoring your parents,

lying, stealing, lusting or committing adultery. God's **story** is to show you history that has a beginning and takes you to its miraculous end. The **history** of Christ's **bride** goes all the way back to *The Book of Ruth* which is the restoration of what was lost **in the days of Cain**.

## Figure Of Christ

Adam was a **figure of Jesus**, The Christ (Romans 5). If Adam and Eve hadn't sinned, their progeny could all have received God's **rest** and **kingdom**. When Cain killed Abel, the children of Adam and Eve were divided. Now, God discriminated between Cain's children and Abel's. Abel was replaced by Seth. Seth's lineage by their choice, became **The Sons of God**. This is the reason Cain is not mentioned as one of the sons of Adam (Genesis 5). Cain and his progeny were on their own. They lived in **the wilderness** and became **pagan country people**. Until Christ came, **The Sons of God** were chosen through genealogy. Christ removed **the curse** and, now, **The Bride** of Christ can be chosen from **the whole world**. Anyone who **fears God** and **strives** to be **righteous** can be "In Christ." You will see **the history** of **The Bride of Christ** started in The Garden of Eden with Adam and Eve, "**For the Son of man [Christ] is come to save that which was lost [in The Garden]**" (Matthew 18:11). Contrary to what some believe, the subject is not The Kingdom of God, but **how everyone is made alive** from the time of Adam and Eve (I Corinthians 15). Receiving **life eternal** and **The Kingdom of God** are two different subjects. Death ends for Adam and Eve's children. That is why The Tree of Life is found at the time of The New Heaven and The New Earth. Salvation will continue. (Read the book *God's Will*). **The "grafting in"** of **The Gentiles** symbolizes a **wild olive tree** entwining in **the natural olive tree**. Some of Israel is plucked out, until a later period, when they will be grafted back into the tree. Then, both

Israel and The Gentiles will be in **the natural olive tree** through **God's Holy Spirit**. *The Book of Revelation* is a prophecy which becomes **history** to tell you how **The Salvation of The World** takes place (The Alpha and Omega) – “**The Beginning and The Ending.**” Now, for The History of Revelation and how Christ's **Bride** becomes **worthy** to be His **Wife**. Hopefully, as a future wife, you, too, are set to climb **The Seven Spiritual Steps** to **The House of God**. How is this done?

## **Come Out Of Her**

Jesus describes **the lack of spiritual growth** in each of His **churches** (Revelation 2 and 3). But what must The Bride do to become His **Wife**? She must become **righteous** (Revelation 19:7-8) by climbing The Seven Spiritual Steps. But how does she do that? “**Come out of her, my people [bride], that you be not partakers of her sins and that you receive not of her plagues**” (Revelation 18:4). You must find out what **God's Two Witnesses** (**The Gentiles** and **The Remnants of Israel**) **must do** to avoid **God's wrath**. It is a **woman** who has caused **the kings** or all **the rulers of the earth** to **commit fornication** with her and become **drunk** from her **wine** (Revelation 17:1-5). She is defined as, “**MYSTERY BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH**” (Revelation 17:5). This **mystery woman** of Babylon **deceives the whole world** by making them **drunk** (they lose their minds). They cannot think **straight**. That includes the government, the educational system, businesses, commerce and religion. It seems everyone in the world is in **confusion** – all **drunk**. You need to find out who this **woman** is and just what has she done to cause such confusion. Over the centuries, many have defined this woman but always referring, only, to certain parts of the world. But, this woman affects **the entire world**. No one is excluded. If you believe in

God, you need to come **out of her** and her way of life. What has she done to cause such **trouble**? Rather than investigate pieces of the problem, you need to go back to the origin of Babylon and discover what was wrong with this **mystery woman**. You are about to discover the most **diabolical scheme only Satan could have devised**. Once again, Satan's deception is so **subtle** and **crafty**, it is beyond belief. It started in The Garden of Eden and Satan's devices have remained **the same throughout the ages in world history**.

When Eve was **deceived** by Satan, it was **the biggest "con"** ever pulled upon a **human**. He asked her if she could **eat of all the trees of the garden**. He did not ask her about **The Tree of Good and Evil**. She told him she would die if she ate of The Tree of Good and Evil. Satan did not discuss or comment about her question about **The Tree of Good and Evil**, but answered his own question about "**all**" the trees. He said, "**For God knows that in the day you eat thereof [of trees in The Garden], then your eyes shall be opened, and you shall be as gods, knowing good and evil [have spiritual maturity]**" (Genesis 3:5). He preached *The Gospel of God – His Plan of Salvation*. She fell for it. Satan **told her part of the truth** and by telling **the truth** (in part) **He deceived her** and Adam **followed her path** (although he knew better). Satan used **God's truth** against **humanity**. He deceives **the whole world** in this very way. You, now, must find out how Babylon started and how Satan **deceives** you along with **the whole world by spreading all this partial truth!**

## CHAPTER 6

### TOWER OF BABEL

**What is Mystery Babylon, The Great – The Mother of Harlots and Abominations of The Earth? “The woman which you saw is the great city which reigns over the kings of the earth” (Revelation 17:18). Which city is this? This woman, in symbol, is a city and sits on a beast with seven heads (Revelation 17:3). This beast with the seven heads is comprised of many nations and peoples (Revelation 17:15). This Babylon is the original City of Babylon where The Tower of Babel was located. The people built a tower in the center of this city.**

#### **What Is The Tower?**

**“The earth is The Lord’s and the fullness thereof” and all the nations in it (Psalm 24:1-5). God’s property is the entire earth and all the people are His property. But where does God live on this earth? Who shall ascend His Holy hill. God, when He completed the earth for mankind in 6 days, was also living in The Garden of Eden – His Kingdom. The kingdom is on the top of a hill, which you must climb. The Temple of God is also on a hill. Who can climb this hill to The Temple of God? The Psalmist asks who shall stand with God in His Holy area in the temple, “He that has clean [no sin] hands and a pure [honest] heart; who has not lifted up his soul [life] unto vanity [no purpose], nor sworn [lied] deceitfully. He shall receive the blessing from**

**the Lord and righteousness from The God of his salvation”** (Psalm 24:4-5). You have just read *The Gospel*. Can you explain how you receive **eternal life**?

To get to The House of God, in The Holy Place, you must be **perfect** or **completely righteous**, having God’s “**righteousness.**” How does God make you **righteous** so you can receive **Salvation**? What is the difference between **righteousness** and **unrighteousness**? The Apostle Paul gives you the answer, “**For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth [hold back] in unrighteousness**” (Romans 1:18).

The **seven last plagues** in Revelation 16 are poured out upon **the world** because of the beast. All those who have **The Mark of The Beast** will receive the seven last plagues. What is this **mark** which this **woman (Babylon)** has, which deceives the world? Mystery Babylon deceives the world by **holding back the truth** in **unrighteousness**. This **unrighteousness** makes everyone **sin**. How does this City of Babylon make everyone **unrighteous**? Again, Paul clearly reveals how The Mystery Woman makes everyone **drunk** (Romans 1:21-25). They become **drunk** by having **personal idols** which they **worship** instead of God.

When the future generations learned of God in The Garden of Eden from Adam and Eve, they didn’t **glorify Him as God**. Instead, they became **vain (useless)** in their **heart** and became **confused** or **drunk** (in a deep dark hole). They knew God lived in The Garden on the top of a hill, but could, only, ascend **the hill** if they were **righteous**. Adam and Eve warned their progeny (because they **sinned**) God banned everyone from His **house**. God had two angels guarding The Garden so Adam and Eve couldn’t get near **The Tree of Life**. That is why Cain, when he was removed from Eden,

said “**his punishment was greater than he could bear.**”

In The Epic of Gilgamesh (the story of Cain), he spent his entire life wandering in the wilderness. During that time, he was trying to find eternal life, but in the end was killed. Now, what did those in Babylon (The Great Whore) do by taking the truth and making it into **unrighteousness**? “**Who changed the truth of God into a lie and worshipped and served the creature [what God created] more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever, Amen**” (Romans 1:25). There it is – they looked upon everyone and everything in **Eden (on top of the hill)** as **little gods**. They began worshipping the mountains, the waters, the trees (nature in general) and the different animals (Romans 1:25). This is why most ancient nations worshipped **birds, insects and snakes**. The most ancient nation discovered by archeologists was **The Sumerians**, meaning “**the dark people.**” Biblically, this was **Nimrod**, the first world ruler (who was of **Cush**) with a **black father** and a **white mother**. Ancient Egypt, Assyria and Babylon all **regarded themselves** as **sacred nations** and they all **worshipped** the same **little gods** of Babel. They just had different names because each had different **languages**. Adam, Eve and Satan were **the first trinity**. In Egypt these three were called Osiris, Isis and Horus.

The Tower of Babel was nothing more than a **tower or hill** with a circular stairway around it to the top (towards heaven) where God’s **temple** was. These were called **Ziggurats**. Mount Olympus in Greece had **many gods** who fought each other just as when Cain killed Abel. They had to appease these **gods**. Rome worshipped Jupiter and the Greeks worshipped Zeus as their main **god**. Babel or Babylon and its tower was nothing more than a replica of steps to God’s **house or temple** on top of a **hill** in The Garden of Eden. Those in Babel worshipped everything in The Land of Eden, **as divine or gods**. That is exactly what Satan told Eve, who was **The**



**Mother of All Living – The Queen of Heaven.** Adam, Eve and Satan (as a snake), along with Cain and Abel, were all considered two-thirds divine and one-third human. Everyone from Eden was accepted as **a god**. **The truth** – “**God**, being The One God” was lost and **the truth** was turned into **unrighteousness**. Then, they only **worshipped whatever interested them** at any given time. That is how this **Mystery Babylon** started and made **the world drunk**. All history was to follow with one **harlot** born after another, which continues to **this present day**. That is why historians consider most of ancient history or paleontology as just a myth.

### **Satan’s Deception**

Read about God’s **righteousness** and His **wrath**, because of Satan’s deception (Romans 1:17-18). God’s **righteousness** is manifested by a Christian’s **spiritual growth** through **faith**. That is why Paul declares, “**For whatsoever is not of faith is sin**” (Romans 14:23). Whatever level of **faith** or **spiritual understanding** they had achieved, they **must abide by them** or they were considered a **sinner**. Christians are not to offend each other, because God **spiritually** helps you, by His **Holy Spirit**, to make **right choices**. God’s **Holy Spirit** gives you the “**power of love and of a sound mind**” (II Timothy 1:7). In Greek, it means “**a disciplined mind**” or “**one by love who has spiritual power.**” God’s **Holy Spirit** leads you to **spiritual truth** (John 14:26). The Holy Spirit leads you to **the reality of all things**. **The deception of Satan** is not some insidious system of attacking you, as an **enemy**, in **life’s circumstances**. Here is the biblical answer of how Satan **deceives you**, “**For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness** (Romans 1:18-19). Satan deceives you by whatever **truth you may have**. In this way, you misuse **the truth**. Satan has used this **system of deception** from the time

in **The Garden of Eden**. Satan asked Eve if she could **eat** of every tree of The Garden (Genesis 3:1). Eve replied she could not eat of The Tree of Good and Evil, because she would die (Genesis 3:3). Thinking Satan was answering her statement about The Tree of Good and Evil, Satan stated Eve **would not die**. Then, Satan preached *The Gospel* to her and told her what God was really telling her, rather than answering her question, “**For God does know that in the day you eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened and you shall be as gods, knowing good and evil**” (Genesis 3:5). Satan wasn’t answering **Eve’s question** but telling her what would happen if **she ate of The Tree of Life**. Satan **fooled her** and she ate **the wrong fruit, which was The Tree of Good and Evil**. Satan deceives Christians and Israel by using any of **the truth** they have against them. Satan doesn’t worry about **atheists** and **agnostics** because he has them in his pocket already. Satan concentrates on those who begin to understand **the truth** and, then, **deceives them**, steering them in another direction.

## God Of This World

Paul said Christians **are not to walk in craftiness nor deceitfully handle The Word of God** (II Corinthians 4:1-4). Only those who do not understand *The Gospel* are deceived by **the god of this world** (misusing **the truth**). Paul said Moses had to wear a **vail** because **Israel’s heart was wrong** when they read *The Old Covenant – The Letter of The Law* (II Corinthians 3:13-15). They thought **The Law** was to be their **righteousness** (Deuteronomy 6:25). They did **not know** The Law was meant to lead them to **Christ** (Galatians 3:24). Satan **blinded** Israel by God’s **Law**, which was **Holy, righteous** and **good**, but could **not make anyone perfect to achieve righteousness**. **The Law** only tells you what **sin** is (I John 3:4) but cannot make anyone **righteous**. God’s **house** is on **top of a hill** and you, as one of God’s **people**, have to

**ascend that hill** to reach **His House** (Psalm 24:1-5). Only those with **clean hands** (not being liars) growing **spiritually** can enter **The House of God**. The Tower of Babel was a **duplicate** of **the hill** with a false **stairway** to **The House of God**. They understood **the truth** and wanted to be in God's "rest" in **The Garden** with **The Tree of Life**. **The trouble** was they **worshipped the creation** (**The Tree of Life – represented by The Christmas Tree**) and not **The Creator** (Romans 1:25). They turned **the truth** into a **lie** and began worshipping Adam, Eve, Satan, Cain and Abel as **little gods**, along with The Tree of Life in **The Garden**. Since the 1,600's, the world began calling The Tree of Life – a Christmas Tree. They lit the tree with lights in their human attempt to duplicate The Tree of Life. Read the account in Jeremiah 10.

God, therefore, had to confuse their language and divided them into **nations** with their **own language**, thereby, confusing them when they attempted to worship **the creation** rather than worshipping **The Creator**. This was **the deadly wound** of **The Beast**, which was **healed** (Revelation 12:3). Who was this **beast**?

## CHAPTER 7

### THE BEAST WITH SEVEN HEADS

A beast rises out of The Mediterranean – “I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns and upon his horns ten crowns and upon his heads the name of blasphemy” (Revelation 13:1). “The dragon gave him [this beast] his power and his seat and great authority [to it].” This beast “was given [power] to him to make war with the saints and to overcome them; and power was given him over all kindreds and tongues and nations.” This beast runs the entire world and the world worships this beast (Revelation 13:2-10).

#### A Beast

Then, another **beast** came out of **the earth** who had **two horns** like a **lamb** but spoke as a **dragon**. These **two horns** caused the world to **worship The Beast with the seven heads**. **The Beast with the seven heads** had a number – **666**. This number “**is the number of a man**” (Revelation 13:13-18). Daniel 7 describes **four beasts** that will come out of the same sea as “**the beast with the seven heads**.” These “**four beasts**” were like “**the seven heads**” – a **lion, bear and leopard**. The seven-headed beast and the four beasts are all **vicious beasts (warlike)** and come out of the area of The Mediterranean Sea. Remember, these beasts carry the name of a man. These four beasts of Daniel 7:17, can be defined as **four kings** who arise out of the earth. They are humans

who are **great warriors** and very violent. The **fourth** of these four beasts devours the other three, being the most **violent of all**. Then, Christ comes and takes over their **kingdoms** and rules **the earth**. You are beginning to learn history from Daniel's day until The Time of Rome. From Rome till Jesus returns is all about **prophecy** (2,000 years). Then, Daniel 8 reveals these beasts are: Nebuchadnezzar, King of Babylon, Cyrus, King of Media-Persia and Alexander, King of The Greco-Macedonian Empire. Nebuchadnezzar, Cyrus and Alexander are **the three names** of a man (666) and are very **violent** – like beasts. Then, the fourth beast absorbs this kingdom, which is Rome. During The Roman Empire, John completed this *Book of Revelation*. It is during this time, **five of the seven heads** are fallen, **one is** and **the seventh** is to come, but only for a **short time** (Revelation 17:10). An **eighth** is to come who was (and **is not**) of **the seven** (Revelation 17:11). This **eighth** is not a continuation of **the seven**, but an **image** or combination of what **the seven** are – **great warriors** and **very violent**. This **eighth**, an **image of the seven**, are **ten kings**, who are in **the future** and **will rule** for a **short time**. These **ten kings** fight Christ but He defeats them and will be victorious as King of Kings (Revelation 17:11-14). Daniel 2 and 7 and Revelation 17 all speak of the **same events**. However, at the time, **five** world rulers will have already fallen since John wrote *The Book of Revelation*. The **sixth head** is **Rome**. The five heads were **not former Caesars**, because Rome continued from the time of Julius Caesar to this point. Some Caesars were **types of The Beast** but were **not** these **heads**. They were harlots. Who were these **five heads** who had already **fallen**? These must be **five governments** or **kingdoms** like **Rome**.

## **The Five Heads**

To ascertain who these five fallen governments were, you must go

back **further** in world history. World history describes a “**great whore who sat upon many waters** [the world]” (Revelation 17:1). This beast covers **the entire time of fulfilling God’s will** which is **all of world history** (Revelation 17:17). This **whore is a great city** from its beginning, which **reigns over the whole world**. This **original city is the genesis** at the beginning of all **world religions**, including Christianity. Something occurred in this city which has **prevailed as a religion or the truth from its inception**. You have read about this **city** in the chapter about **The Tower of Babel (Babylon)**. This city was started by **Nimrod**, who was a **mighty hunter of The Lord** (Genesis 10:8-10). Nimrod was, also, The First King of Egypt. The Tower of Babel was built as a duplicate of the ladder or steps to **God’s House on top of a mountain** with a circular pathway (Psalm 24). **Righteousness** dwelt there when God finished **The Garden of Eden**. Everything was **very good** (Genesis 1:31). This was **The Kingdom of God**. Jacob dreamed of this **House of God** which had a **ladder** going from **the earth to heaven**. Angels were **ascending and descending** this **ladder**. Jacob, when he arose from his **dream of the ladder**, said, “This is **God’s house**,” so he called the place “**Bethel or House of God**” (Genesis 28). After Jesus was **resurrected**, He replaced Jacob or **Israel as “the way” to The House of God** with angels helping. The angels will help all Christians as they ascend the ladder at the first step of “**fear**” to eventually reach the top step of “**love**” (John 1:51). This **woman (The Great City of Babylon)** **sits upon The Beast with the seven heads and ten horns** (Revelation 17:3). This **woman, Babylon, The Great Whore**, is **the original City of Babylon**, ruled by **Nimrod**, their first **king**. When God saw them building **The Tower of Babel**, He decided to change their **languages** into many different **tongues**. This Tower represented **The House of God** to the people. It was **the pathway to God’s House**, except it had **one major problem**. **They turned this truth of God’s House into unrighteousness**

(Romans 1:18). How? They began to **worship** what **God** created in **The Garden of Eden** and made them into **idols** and **bowed down and prayed to them**. They worshipped **the creation** instead of **The Creator**. That is why God hates **idolatry**. Idolatry perverts **The Truth of God** into **unrighteousness** (which is **sin**) (I John 5:17 and Romans 1:25). This **original Babylon** has been **duplicated** throughout **world history** and is **taught as the truth**. God warns everyone about **The Christmas Tree** in Jeremiah 10. God revealed people will cut down a tree, put **lights** upon it and **worship it** (pretending to duplicate The Tree of Life). The world calls this time "**Christmas**" which is derived from "**the mass**" of **Christ**. When Christ returns, He will **restore what was lost** – **The Tree of Life** (Matthew 18:11). Adam and Eve, with their **progeny**, were cut off from **The Tree of Life** until Christ came to die for the world. Jesus, when He came, restored **Jacob's ladder** to **God's House** so everyone will have **access to The Tree of Life**.

This **Babylon**, this **Great Whore**, has **fooled the world into committing idolatry**, following a **false god** and worshipping **the creation**. They replaced **The One True God** and **Creator of all things** from the beginning. Nimrod was killed by **Shem**, only to be resurrected in Egyptian history. This is **The Beast** who was **wounded but healed**. This is **The Great Whore, Babylon**, who was resurrected to **make harlots (in the world) drunk with her wine** (Revelation 17:4-6). This great City of Babylon had to be removed for *The True Gospel* to be preached – *The Gospel of Christ*, which restored The Tree of Life to Adam and Eve and their children through **The Promised Seed**. Jude 14 declares that Enoch, **The Seventh Prophet** from Adam, preached **The Return of The Messiah** to restore The Kingdom. Enoch preached The One True God, should be worshipped instead of **The Creation** with its many **false idols** or mini-gods. Now, **The Beast** of Baby-



lon with **seven heads** and **ten crowns** is to be **healed** by all the **harlots** it had produced. This head, which was wounded (**Babylon**), will one day be **restored again**.

Babylon, Egypt and Assyria were all considered to be **sacred nations** worshipping **the same religion** in ancient **Sumer**. They are considered to be the oldest people according to archeology. Egypt, with **the fall** or confusion of tongues, became the center of **sin** with its **false gods**. This wounded head was healed. All nations of the world were deceived by Satan to believe **the gods of Egypt** were of God but disguised in a **mystery**. They believed **The Great Babylon Mystery of the whore** who rides this beast with seven heads and ten crowns. She gets the world to worship **the image** of this beast – led by Satan. Satan's false **truth is, now, worldwide**, but is held in **unrighteousness** (Romans 1:18). Satan, from this point in history forward, infiltrates **The Truth of God**, each and every time, when *The True Gospel of God* is **preached**. Salvation is, **Christ In You** and not some system of human **works and deeds**. That is why Peter said, when Cornelius was converted, God will accept **everyone from every nation** when they **fear Him** and **work** to be **righteous**. **Christ In You** is for you to have **the same mind** as Christ had (Acts 10:35 and Philippians 2). Isaiah tells the wicked to forsake their **ways**. He tells **the unrighteous man** to forsake **his thoughts** and return to **The Lord**. Then, God will have mercy on him and will **abundantly pardon** his sins. How? God will forgive your sins when you begin to **think like Him** with **His thoughts** and with **His mind**. You will begin to look like **Jesus** (Hebrews 1:1-3 and Isaiah 55:6-11). This is **Christ In You**. Send for the book, *Christ In You*.

Paul declared if you are **In Christ**, you have no **condemnation** and you are **led by God's Holy Spirit**. You are not led by **the works of the flesh**, such as in **The Law of Moses**, which leads to **death**



(Romans 8:1-17). It isn't **The Law** that is done away with, but **the administration** of how that **Law** is to be **kept**. "In Christ," **The Law** is no longer administered by **works** of the human flesh under **Levi**. Under Christ, **The Law** is changed by **The Priesthood of Melchizedek** (Hebrews 7:12). Now, **The Law** is **magnified** and **made more honorable** than **The Letter of The Law**, which **kills** or puts you to death (by **the curse**) (Isaiah 42:21 and II Corinthians 3:1-6). Christ In You allows God's **Law** to be in your very **heart** and **mind**. Now, by **spiritual growth**, you begin to **think** like Christ and **God**. You are growing into **The Very Mind of God** and, therefore, keep God's **Law** and have a **change of mind** (to gain **perfection**) (Matthew 5:48). This **spiritual growth** by **The Spirit of God** leads you to **God's House**, where you can enter into **His gates** and, eventually, receive **Salvation** (Matthew 7:13-14). Satan replaced **The Mystery of God (Christ In You)** with **The Mystery of Babylon (The Great Whore)** (Colossians 1:27 and Revelation 17 and 18). He does this dastardly act by taking **the truth** of **The Tree of Life** and making the world "**worship the tree**" as a **symbolic god** and everything in **The Land of Eden** as **little gods**. Now, these **five heads** of the **beast**, worshipped by **The Whore of Babylon**, preach this **false mystery** as **the truth** by **the works** of human nature in **unrighteousness**. They made paradise an idol too. In history, **the five heads** comprises **the original Babylon and Egypt**, under Nimrod; **Assyria**, **Neo-Babylon**, **Media-Persia**, **Greco-Macedonia** and, then, **the sixth** is **Rome**. All are **harlots** of **The Tower of Babel**. World History, through Satan, keeps deceiving **the whole world**, including The Jews and Christians. The Jews and Judah, the 2 <sup>1/2</sup> tribes left after they separated from Israel (the 144,000) and The Christians mixed with The Ten Tribes and the Gentiles (The Church of God) were to be God's **Two Witnesses** to the world, but find themselves caught up in Babylon, as well. Both the original Babylon and Egypt were ruled by Nimrod's descendants of Cush (Genesis 10:8-10). This

is the head (Babel and Egypt) when the tongues were divided followed by Assyria, Neo-Babylon, Media-Persia, Greco-Macedonia and, then, **the sixth head** was **Rome**.

**The seventh beast** is followed by **the eighth head**, which is of **the seven**, but only as an **image** of **the former seven**. It is **the whore** who speaks **like a lamb**, who gets the world to worship **the image of the former seven heads of The Beast** (Revelation 13:11-15). This is the **eighth head**, which is only in **the likeness** or **image** of the previous **seven heads**. It continues until **The End Time**, when **the ten horns** or **ten kings** gather together to **fight Christ** when He becomes **King of Kings** and establishes God's **rule upon the earth**. When Jesus, The Messiah, returns to accept **His Bride**, she will be ready to be **His Wife** (Revelation 19:7). "**The Times of The Gentiles**" without God, **will have been fulfilled** at that time (Luke 21:24). Justinian, as **the eighth head**, The New Rome of The East and The West are **the two legs** of The Image of The Beast. When Justinian fell to The Franks in The West and then to the Sassanids in The East, it is **the eighth head of the seventh** continuing as an **image** till Christ's **return at The End of Days**.

These daughters of Babylon, who are **harlots** throughout history, prevail as Charlemagne, Napoleon and Hilter right to the final anti-Christ. Ultimately, Jerusalem, as Sodom and Gomorrha, is the last Babylonian city which is **worshipped** and destroyed (Zechariah 1-5).

## CHAPTER 8

### TIMES OF THE GENTILES

The prophecy concerning Christ's return, warns about the length of the world's curse. Here is what He said, "And they [Judah] shall fall by the edge of the sword and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down by The Gentiles, until The Times of The Gentiles are fulfilled" (Luke 21:24). When The Times of The Gentiles end; and they are a threat to Jerusalem, only, then, will Christ return. Ever since The Tribulation of Jerusalem in 70 A.D., The Jews were scattered into all nations (Luke 21:24). So, His return will not occur until The Gentiles cease troubling Jerusalem.

#### End Of Israel's Promised Land

When Israel entered The Promised Land with Joshua, they were to be God's **witnesses** to the world. First, Israel was dispersed (The Lost Ten Tribes) into the world, only to be followed by Judah (The Jews) in 70 A.D.

*The Old Covenant* given to Israel in Deuteronomy 5:3 truly **vanished** (Hebrews 8). Daniel, God's Prophet, declares when **The Times of The Gentiles are fulfilled – Christ will return**. Nebuchadnezzar, King of Babylon, took Judah into captivity which started **The Times of The Gentiles'** rule and caused **continual trouble** for Jerusalem. Judah controls The City of Jerusalem to-

day, but The Gentiles still claim a right to Jerusalem which causes the world a great deal of unrest. The **curse** continues. When does Daniel tell you The Messiah will return? Nebuchadnezzar has a troubling dream which only Daniel was able to interpret. Daniel 2 reveals this **great human image**. This human statue represents **The Times of The Gentiles**. **Nebuchadnezzar is the head; Cyrus is the arms and breast; Alexander, The Great is the belly and thighs; and Rome comprises the legs and feet**. When Jesus came as a human, He came for His **Bride, (Judah)** but Christ was rejected as **The Groom**. So Christ turned to another **nation**, which was more **worthy** (Matthew 21:43). This nation will be those who fear him and work righteousness in **many nations** (Acts 10:34-35).

### **A Gentle Mystery**

Theologians debate about The Times of The Gentiles, because Jesus did not take over The Kingdom when He first came. It is during The Rule of Rome's Image, The Fourth Beast, that The Messiah will come again but this time to establish **God's Kingdom Rule** (Daniel 2:43-44). What happened? It seems to be a **mystery**. Why didn't The Times of The Gentiles end? Read the book *God's Story*.

### **God's Witnesses**

The Apostle Paul describes a **natural olive tree**. This tree is **Holy and natural** (Romans 11). It is like **The Tree of Life**. This olive tree gives **Salvation**. It is a type of the **Holy Spirit**. **God will**, again, restore Israel and **dwelt in Jerusalem** (Zechariah 11:10-13). **The two olive branches** as God's **Two Anointed Ones** light The Menorah (Zechariah 4). Paul states that **the natural olive tree** consists of Judah and Israel (Romans 11). But, when they

lacked **faith in God**, they were rejected. Then, God chose The Gentiles as a wild olive branch. In this way, Judah and Israel (The Two Witnesses) are replaced by The Gentiles. Only a **remnant** of Israel remains as God's **witness**. Now, The Gentiles, those who choose to follow God and Christ, are from **all nations**.

“The Church of God” along with “The 144,000” (being a **remnant** of Israel) are God's **Two Witnesses**. **Righteousness** becomes the criteria for those who become God's **Two Witnesses** (Acts 10). In Christ, there is **no gender, nation or race – all are called** (Galatians 3:28). These **witnesses**, The Church of God and The 144,000 are in Babylon (Zechariah 2). That is why Jesus tells **His Churches** along with The 144,000 Israelites, “**to come out of Babylon**” (Revelation 2 and 3). **All nations**, the educational systems, commerce, businesses and religions are drunk with the wine of **her wrath and fornication** (Revelation 18:3). “**Come out of her, my people...that you receive not of her plagues**” (Revelation 18:4). Her wrath is **the violent human nature** without **The True God**.

**Gentiles** produced **war** because of **their desire to survive over others**. They are **beasts**, much like a **lion, bear and leopard** with the fourth beast, **Rome**, being a composition of all three (Revelation 13). “**Fornication**” is “**when the intercourse of all the nations form together**” to be **militarily strong** so as not to be **devoured** by the others. They never turn to God. As long as The Times of The Gentiles continue, Christ cannot return. Christ said, “**So the last shall be first, and the first last**” (Matthew 20:16). He, also, stated, “**For many are called, but few are chosen**” (Matthew 22:14). The Times of The Gentiles ties in with God's **Two Witnesses**. The Ten Lost Tribes and Judah (Israel) are both in captivity. Both have rejected their Husband and do not become **The Bride** (except a remnant). God turns to The Gentile Nations

to allow any of them who may want to become worthy or ready to be **Christ's Wife**. This includes The Jews and The Ten Lost Tribes of Israel in captivity with The Gentiles.

The criteria becomes a matter of “**righteousness**” and only those who strive, at great costs, achieve it. **The last** have become **the first** (The Gentiles). **The first** is now **last** (Judah). Of **the many** called to The Wedding Feast, only **few are chosen** to be **Christ's wife**. They are blessed to be in **The First Resurrection**. The Times of The Gentiles cannot be fulfilled until **The Bride is ready and clothed in righteousness** (Revelation 19:7-8). That is what the entire *Book of Revelation* is all about. Jesus is ready for The Wedding Feast to come at anytime. In fact, **The Groom** has been ready for almost 2,000 years (Revelation 5). His **love** for **The Bride** was proven when He **died for her** and, now, she must **prove her love** for Him by giving her life for Him. As The Gentiles become more violent and warlike, **The Saints of God, The Bride of Christ**, are warned by The Groom, “**Come out of her, my people**” (Revelation 18:4). Besides the indictment Jesus issues to **His Seven Churches** in Revelation 2 and 3, He asks **His Bride** to come out of Babylon, The Great Whore who has spawned many **harlots**. He warns **His Bride** if she doesn't heed, she will receive **The Seven Last Plagues** (those with **The Mark of The Beast**, 666). The Times of The Gentiles finds **Two Witnesses** of God in **the wilderness of this world**. There is **no rest** except, “**In Christ**” (Hebrews 4). Israel was tested in **the wilderness for forty years**. Now, The Churches of God are being tested **in the wilderness of this world** along with a remnant of Israel.

## **Tribulation**

The word “**tribulation**” is “**a time of trial and testing**” of God's **people**. God allows His **people** to be tested because they do not

have **faith** or **trust** Him, to become **totally dependant** upon Him. They rely too much on those **in the world**. That is what happened to Israel and Judah when they went after their **lovers**, their business partners, which ended with their **captivity**. Israel's and Judah's **captivity** is required for them to learn their lesson of faith.

Even Judah, today, has still not entered into God's **rest**. Judah continues to be part of this world and finds **no rest** or **peace**. Israel continues to try and make peace, making all sorts of agreements rather than having **faith in God**. A part of The Churches of God, who keep His *Commandments* but refuse to **grow spiritually**, will have to go into **the tribulation**. Just as Judah goes into **the great tribulation**, **The Remnant of Israel** and some in **The Churches of God** must also go into **the tribulation** (Revelation 12:17). "**Many shall be purified and made white and tried; but the wicked shall do wickedly: and none of the wicked shall understand; but the wise shall understand**" (Daniel 12:10).

The Times of The Gentiles is God's "**time of testing**" or "**trials**" for His **chosen people**. Never forget, The Churches of God and The Remnant of Israel are God's **Two Witnesses**. When **The Bride** makes herself **ready** by being **clothed in righteousness**, then, The Times of The Gentiles will be **fulfilled**. **The Time of The End** will arrive. **The Last Days**, which started at Christ's **human lifetime**, is at hand, to conclude with **The End of Days** (Hebrews 1:2). **The Last Days** begin with **The Roman Empire** and conclude with **The Image of The Beast (Rome)** at **The End of Days** (Revelation 13:14-15).

## **The Image**

Historically, many do not understand that **the physical Roman Empire** is not **The Beast** at **The End of Days**. Rome, as an em-

pire, ended between 400 to 500 A.D. with the attacks of The Vandals, Heruli and Ostrogoths. After that time, many attempts were made to **resurrect The Image of The Beast**. An image is in **the likeness of**, but not **the physical government**. Justinian becomes **the eighth head of the seventh**, only to end as an “**image**” for the rest of history.

That is why Revelation speaks of **an eighth head**, which is really **of the seven**. Rome concluded **the seventh head** with Constantine, who held **the two legs** together (Daniel 2). Rome was over The Western half and Constantinople over The Eastern half when The Roman Empire ended. Christianity, at that time, was also split between The Catholic and Orthodox Churches. Justinian restored The New Rome of Constantine as **the eighth head of the seven**. Only **the image of the eighth** survived.

There were many attempts to reestablish The Roman Empire, but they failed. They all go back to The Tower of Babel with Babylon and Egypt and The Babylonian Mystery System. Hitler, Charlemagne and Napoleon have all tried to restore the physical Roman Empire, but failed. The prophecy calls for **the eighth beast** to be **an Image of The Beast of the seven** (but is not another **beast**). **Religion** continues to copy **The Image of The Beast**. That is why religion has caused **more wars** than any other reason. It is The Christian Religion which is still in Babylon and Christ warns them to come out of her (Revelation 2 and 3). It is all the different forms of religion that have caused persecution and martyrdom to Christians. In early America (Salem) Christians were putting other Christians to death because there were those who didn't fit their **religious image**. When you think about all this, it makes **no sense at all**. There is never one example of a Christian putting someone to death in the entire *New Testament*. Christians, today, must come out of Babylon and grow in Christ's



**righteousness** and **die** for each other but never kill one another. Killing is the major **violent behavior** of **The Mark of The Beast**. Jesus prayed for **His Disciples** to be **in the world**, but **not of it**. Here is Christ's admonition to all Christians, "**I pray not that you should take them out of the world, but that you should keep them from the evil**" (John 17:15). The Times of The Gentiles will be fulfilled at The Time of Armageddon, because **The Bride** has made herself **ready to be The Wife**. This is what **the unvail-**  
**ing is all about** and the reason for *The Book of Revelation*.

## CHAPTER 9

# TRUMPETS AND WRATH

Christianity tends to view prophecy as a series of events which God carries out, one after the other. “Prophecy” such as “The Return of Christ” is a conditional matter depending upon human behavior. “Prophecy shall fail” as in Greek, the meaning is “to halt, pause or delay” (I Corinthians 13:8). God fulfills prophecy as the conditions unfold by human action. God’s “will” is to save the world (through Christ) and not destroy it (I John 4:14).

### Trumpets

Christ disclosed three sets of events which must occur before **His return**. These three events are: 1) **The seven seals** which lead to 2) **The seven trumpets** and 3) **The Seven Last Plagues** which is the start of God’s wrath. Jesus refers to them in Matthew 24, Mark 13 and Luke 21. (Read the book *Revelation Uncovered*). Jesus said, “**But of that day and hour knows no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but My Father only**” (Matthew 24:36). Why do Christians not believe Jesus? Humanity keeps trying to figure that date. Continually, man tries to do what **no one can do**. Christ answers the question of His **return** to His **Disciples** about **The Kingdom of God**. He told them, “**It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father has put in his own power**” (Acts 1:7). Only God has **the power or the authority** to know when His **kingdom** will come. You are about to find

out that Christ's **return** is **conditional**. The Kingdom of God is also conditional. **Five of the seals** have already occurred and **the sixth seal** ushers in a **worldwide event** where **the meteors** begin to fall and many **heavenly events** take place. Every **mountain** and **coastland** moves out of their original place. Humans will hide themselves in the dens, rocks and caves of the mountains. People scream that The Wrath of God has been unleashed. Who will be left alive? Christ will return when The Seventh Trumpet sounds and not before.

There will be a period of **silence** when God allots certain parts of the earth for The 144,000 of Israel to be **sealed** for their **protection** (Revelation 7). This includes the last 2,000 years. These Israelites are The 144,000 Israelites who go through **The Great Tribulation** (Revelation 7:14). Then, the account continues with **the seventh seal**, which ushers in **The Time of The Seven Trumpets**. Trumpets are **warnings** of **worldwide events**. The first four are natural disasters of The Seven Trumpets affecting certain parts of the earth. **The last three woes** are of human origin. It is **the seventh trumpet** which announces **Christ's return**. **The sixth trumpet** is a time of **world war**, involving two hundred million **militarily strong**. This war becomes a very significant sign for **Christ's return** and why God has **His Son return** when "**the seventh trumpet**" sounds. This is The End of The Time of The Gentiles which brings violence! It is at the end of the seven thunders (trumpets) John is permitted to open The 7<sup>th</sup> Seal (Revelation 13 to 22 and Revelation 10:4, 11).

As Jesus descends from heaven with His **angels** to meet His **saints** in the clouds, God unleashes **the seven last plagues** upon those who have **The Mark of The Beast**. This event, as well as **the sixth seal**, is of **great importance** for **The Messiah's return**. John is told not to continue writing his **vision** until he prophesies,

again, before the people, nations and kings (Revelation 10:11). *The Book of Revelation*, very likely, was to be completed at two different times. The first time was The Fall of The Temple of Jesus' **day** and, then, The Great Tribulation with **false prophets** penetrating God's **church** from 50 A.D. to this very day. Instead of continuing Revelation with **the seventh trumpet** and **The Return of Christ**, "**a ceasing of events**" must take place and it goes back in time to cover former events before **the seventh trumpet sounds**. The silence in Heaven covers the last two thousand years right to **The End of Days**. This great tribulation is the final sealing from God for those who do not have The Mark of The Beast (Revelation 7:3).

## Two Witnesses

**The Temple of God** is discussed in Revelation 11:1-2. Jesus, through an angel, has John **measure The Court of Israel**, but, amazingly, **The Court of The Gentiles is not measured**. **The Court of The Gentiles** has no measurement. Why? There are **scriptural clues** as to why God waits for **specific world conditions** to occur before it is measured.

The Father will not allow **His Son, Jesus**, to take a **Bride as His Wife** until she is **ready** (Revelation 19:7-8). **The Times of The Gentiles** are **significant** before Christ can return for His **Wife**. **The Millennial Engagement** cannot take place until His **Bride** proves her **love** for **The Groom**, as He **proved His love** for her (Revelation 5). The **world** cannot be **invited to The Wedding** until **The Groom** and **The Bride** are **worthy or ready** to get **married!** This is a **conditional prophecy** which God holds back until **The Groom** and **The Bride** are **worthy** for marriage. Who are these **Two Witnesses**? These **Two Witnesses** proclaim *The Gospel* for 3 ½ years – a **time of tribulation** and are killed but resur-

rected after three days, just like Jesus. Then, a great voice calls these Two Witnesses up in a cloud to meet Christ as their enemies watch in amazement (Revelation 11:12). When is this?

As The Two Witnesses ascend, in that **hour**, a great **earthquake** occurs which is during **the sixth seal** (Revelation 11:13). The **second woe** of Revelation 6:12 takes place. “**The second woe is past,**” which is followed by **the third woe** (Revelation 11:14). Then, the seventh trumpet (angel) sounds and great voices in heaven sound out, “**The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord and of his Christ; and He shall reign for ever and ever**” (Revelation 11:15). All conditions have transpired as prophesied and The Time of The Kingdom of God has come. Jesus is ready to take **His Bride** to be **His Wife**, because she is **ready**. **The Times of The Gentiles** have been **fulfilled**, completing all conditions for **The Return of Jesus**. The 144,000 are of The Twelve Tribes of Israel (minus Dan, Genesis 49:16) (Revelation 7:4, 9-10), “**After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude [which is yet unnumbered], which no man could number, of all nations and kindreds and people and tongues, stood before the throne and before The Lamb, clothed with white robes and palms in their hands; And cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which sits upon the throne and unto The Lamb**” (Revelation 7:9-10). These are your **Two Witnesses** who come out of **The Tribulation**.

The **first tribulation** (Judah) of Matthew 24 occurred in 70 A.D. Read what was told to them who fled Jerusalem when Judah fell under Titus, “**And they shall fall by the edge of the sword and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of The Gentiles, until The Times of The Gentiles be fulfilled**” (Luke 21:24). This **great tribulation** had already happened in 70 A.D. This next **tribulation** (time of

trouble) occurs after The Gentile Rule is completed. This first great tribulation made The Jews captive in **all nations**. This **second time of trouble** affects only The 144,000 of Israel and “**an unmeasurable number of Gentiles**.” These are **The Two Witnesses of God** during this **tribulation**. The Temple in Revelation 11 has **specific measurements in The Court of Israel** for The 144,000, but leaves **The Court of Gentiles – unmeasured**. That measurement must wait until “**the innumerable number from all nations**” which have yet to be included in the count. The Times of The Gentiles, in order to be fulfilled, are based on two prophetic events. One, “**an innumerable number**” must be totaled and, then they, too, must become worthy to be **The Bride of Christ**. Secondly, **The Gentiles** will develop **The Mark of The Beast** and, then, **The Wrath of God** will be **unleashed**. **The prophetic stage of *The Book of Revelation*** is ready to come together and for Christ to come for His **Wife** when **The Times of The Gentiles** will be **fulfilled**. When that occurs and not until then, can The Return of Jesus come. At that time He will establish **The Kingdom of God** (Revelation 11:15). The fulfillment of Gentile Rule will create world suicide and violence.

## CHAPTER 10

### HISTORY OF GOD'S WITNESSES

Christ was rejected by both Israel and Judah. That rejection required Him to come a second time. He has to wait until His Bride is ready or worthy. *The Book of Revelation* is given by Jesus to warn His future Bride that she needs to get ready for The Wedding. Queen Vashti in *The Book of Esther* refused to appear in King Ahasuerus' court. Because she refused, he divorced her and looked for another who was worthy to be queen. The first became last and the last became first. Esther took nearly two years to prepare herself to be queen and gave her life for her people, just as Jesus. Jesus, as The Groom, warns His Bride (The Seven Churches and The Remnant of Israel) He is ready to come at anytime and they should also be ready (Romans 11 and Revelation 22:7).

#### Revelation 12

John, then, unseals the **second half** of *The Book of Revelation*. He gives a **recapitulation** of the history of God's **Two Witnesses** (Revelation 12). He revealed Satan had attempted to kill Christ at His birth, through Herod, but God saved Him. Now, The Tribulation comes, first to Judah, and then to God's **church** (Luke 21). Satan and his angels fight God and His **angels**. Satan and his angels/devils (destroyers) are angry because they know they have a **short time** left to destroy God's **people**. Now, Satan is filled with

three evil spirits. **The Mark of The Beast** attacks The Church of God. Some go into **safety in the world (wilderness)** while others, although they keep God's *Commandments*, must go through a **tribulation**. In The Tribulation they will be purified to show their **love** for Christ. This is world history from **the first Babylon** (the five heads) which are passed to **the sixth head** (Rome) (Revelation 13 to 18). **The Image of The Beast** continues in world history by The Beast with **two horns** (representing The Western and The Eastern sections).

These beasts get the world, through religion, to **worship The Image of The Beast** with **the seven heads**. She is **the woman** acting like a **lamb**, like Christ (but has **blasphemed** God). She is **Babylon, The Great Whore**, who continues from The Tower of Babel, by worshipping **idols**. This **Worldwide Religious System** deceives the world into many **harlots** (a **mixture of good and evil**). This **Babylon, The Great** is worshipped as a **great and important city**. All major world religions claim this city as their **Holy City**. This city is where **The Prophets of God** and **The Saints** have been **slaughtered** (Revelation 18:24). This city includes **all who have been slain** on the earth. Which is this **great city**? A summary is made of God's **witnesses** who must go through this **tribulation**, "**Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus. And I heard a voice from heaven saying to me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth: Yea, said the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours; and their works do follow them**" (Revelation 14:12-13). This is the second tribulation. The martyrdom of God's **witnesses** "to come" will occur in Jerusalem (Revelation 11:7-8). God regards **The End Time Jerusalem** as **Sodom and Egypt**, the original **Great Whore**, who spawned all **the harlot daughters**. This **great city**, being the center of the world's great **religions** (**Mystery Baby-**



lon) is **The End Time Jerusalem**. Here is what happened to her, “**And the great city was divided into three parts and the cities of the nations fell [seven last plagues] and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of his wrath**” (Revelation 16:19).

Zechariah prophesies the fall of this great city. All **nations** of the earth will end up fighting in Jerusalem. **The Beast** and all nations of the world turn against **The Whore** and she will be **devoured**. “**Babylon The Great is fallen, is fallen**” (Revelation 18:1-4). God's **people** are warned to come out of her. The **bodies** of **The Two Witnesses**, comprised of the 144,000 Isarilites by birth scattered over the world and The Christians mixed with The Ten Tribes and The Gentiles (The Church of God), are called out of tribulation, **slain in Jerusalem**, are resurrected after three days and go to meet Christ on His **return** in the clouds (Revelation 11:6-11). **Jesus and The Saints** reign on **earth** for the **one-thousand-year engagement period** as Lord and King of the **earth** (Zechariah 14:9).

The entire **Satanic Image** of **The Beast** and The Great Whore comes to an end (Daniel 2). This consists of The Arabs – King of The South, King of The North and all the rest of the nations of the world. The Kings of all the other northern nations battle over Jerusalem at Armageddon (Psalm 83). Here is what The Arab Nations say, “**Come and let us cut them off from *being* a nation; that the name of Israel may be no more in remembrance**” (Psalm 83:4). The last seven plagues of **The Wrath of God** are released as Christ with His **angels** descend and He meets His **Wife-to-be** in the clouds. The Times of The Gentiles will be fulfilled and **The Bride**, now clothed in **righteousness** is ready to be **His Wife**. God intervenes to save the world from genocide which is **the end of rule by The Gentiles**.

## **Gentiles' Time Fulfilled**

The world rule by The Gentiles ends in their demise at The Battle of Jerusalem. Why does Christ come at that moment? Jesus said He would not return until “The Gentiles’ time has been completed,” and the event which sets the time of fulfillment is recorded, “**And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect’s sake those days shall be shortened**” (Matthew 24:22). Satan, **The Destroyer**, (through world wars) almost ends human existence at Jerusalem. God will have to intervene in human affairs in order to **preserve the lives** of His **people** and **witnesses**. As in The Days of Noah’s Flood, God said every thought of humans was evil. God had to intervene to save Noah and his family from world suicide (Genesis 6:5). The earth was totally corrupt in all their ways (Genesis 6:12). As was in Noah’s day, so shall it be before Christ returns. **The Fulfillment of The Gentiles** will end in **total human destruction**. Without God, humans with their human nature would end in genocide. Human nature depicts Babylon to a “T” (Genesis 11:6). Likewise, before Christ returns, once again the world and its effort for **peace**, will end in **suicide** or **self-annihilation**. This is exactly Satan’s purpose, first as **The Deceiver** in The Garden of Eden and, then, as **The Devil** and **The Destroyer** at **The End of Days**.

That is why from the very beginning, in The Garden of Eden, Satan, as a **snake** and a **deceiver**, is **The Dragon**. He **rules** The Beast with **the seven heads** and **ten horns**, joined by **the woman**, **The Great Whore** and **her harlots (image)** with **the two horns** through all of world history. Then, God must intervene out of His **great love** for **mankind to save them**. That is why Jesus concludes, “**But as the days of Noe [Noah] were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be**” (Matthew 24:37). Jesus warns

that His **coming** will not be hidden or in secret, but for all to observe “**for as the lightening comes out of the east and shines even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be**” (Matthew 24:27). All conditions for Christ's **coming** must be met before He comes. The **Bride** must be **worthy** to be His **Wife** by some of The Two Witnesses going through **The Great Second Tribulation** and **The Gentiles' end** their futile attempts of world peace, which terminates in genocide.

From the beginning of *The Book of Revelation*, Jesus announces He is ready to **return** (Revelation 1:7). Also, at the end, Christ warns His **Two Witnesses**, along with the world, He is **ready** to return. When Christ returns, He will give every man a reward according to the talents they accumulate in their lifetime (Revelation 22:12). Obviously, **The Messiah's return** isn't decreed by a **date**, but by the fulfillment of **two events**. First, His **Bride must be worthy** and The Rule of The Gentiles ceases by their **futile attempt at world peace which will end in self-suicide**. Christ comes with **His Wife-to-be** and announces **The Wedding Feast**. The **engagement period** will last about 1,000 years before **the whole world** is ready to hear or understand what **the invitation is all about**. The question becomes – will you be ready?

## CHAPTER 11

### THE GREAT WHITE THRONE

The world, after thousands of years, is finally ready to be invited to The Wedding Feast – The Sabbath Rest of God. Those who have The Mark of The Beast have been violent and do evil things upon the earth. They act like a lion, bear and leopard with Satan as their leader. They, with Satan, will suffer God’s wrath. The Dragon is destroyed at Christ’s return. Christ comes on His white horse with the angels and saints. Then, Satan and his demon/angels are thrown into a Lake of Fire. The Messiah takes the throne and The Kingdom of God reigns for the next thousand years (Revelation 19).

### The Millennium

In Noah’s time God gave mankind a thousand years to come to a **peaceful** agreement among themselves, but they never did. Then He flooded the world (Noah) and started over for about two thousand years to have a **chosen people**. They, too, **rejected** Him (Isaiah 65:2-10). God gave His **Son** as a sacrifice for His **people**, but they never accepted Him. Then, God turned to The Gentiles, “**I am sought of *them* that asked not *for me*; I am found of *them that* sought me not: I said, Behold me, behold me, unto a nation *that was not called by my name*” (Isaiah 65:1). Now, **all Israel** will return to **The Promised Land**. Even The Israelites of old will be resurrected (Ezekiel 37). The time has arrived for **all****

Israel to be **saved** (Romans 11:26). It is time for **the last** to be **first**. **The Law of Moses, The Old Covenant, with The Levitical Priesthood**, will be instituted with a **new temple** (Ezekiel 40-43). Christ's **reign** with **His Bride** commences with **God's glory** dwelling once again in **the temple**. At that time the world will be called to come to The Wedding Feast. All nations will, then, come to keep The Feast of Tabernacles. With Babylon destroyed, God restores **His city**, Jerusalem, as The City of World Peace, "**For thus says The Lord, Behold, I will extend peace to her like a river and the glory of the Gentiles like a flowing stream: then shall you suck [seek biblical nourishment], you shall be borne upon her sides, and be dangled upon her knees. As one whom his mother comforts, so will I comfort you; and you shall be comforted in Jerusalem**" (Isaiah 66:12).

People will live a full 100 years. This is The Wedding Announcement period where God **will be** building His **New Heaven** and **New Earth** (Isaiah 65:17). The Millennium is the period of time for the whole world to begin to prepare for **The Wedding**, "**For I know their works and their thoughts: it shall come, that I will gather all nations and tongues; and they shall come, and see my glory. And I will set a sign among them, and I will send those that escape of them unto the nations, to Tarshish, Pul, and Lud, that draw the bow, to Tubal, and Javan, to the isles afar off, that have not heard my fame, neither have seen my glory; and they shall declare my glory among the Gentiles**" (Isaiah 66:18-19). This is a time of **worldwide evangelism** proclaiming **The Gospel of The Glory of God**. It is a time when all Israelites will be brought to Israel – The Promised Land.

There is a worldwide invitation for everyone to come to Christ to prepare for The Wedding Feast of The Bride and Groom. The Time of The New Heaven and The New Earth draws near. This

is a time of a **Sabbath delight**, rejoicing over the real **Sabbath**, as it was in **The Garden of Eden**. The **Sabbath** is more than a **day**. It is **The Eternal Rest of God in The Kingdom of God**, as was intended from the beginning. It is God's "**alpha and omega**." Paul stated, "**There remains therefore a rest [Sabbatismos] to the people of God**" (Hebrews 4:9). This is God's **rest** just as He made **the earth habitable** for **man** in the beginning when He created the earth. Man will not do any **work of Salvation** (*Old Covenant*) in **The New Heaven** and **The New Earth**. God is **The Creator**, not man. Only God builds all things (Hebrews 3).

**The Times of The Gentiles**, where man does **the creative work** through their human nature of **good** and **evil**, is over. This is Babylon – man's human nature just cannot understand what is **good** and **evil**. Today, because **man** does the work, he needs to rest on The Sabbath from his **work**. The Time of The New Heaven and The New Earth, when God is **The Creator**, He will again **rest** and **bless mankind** so they also can be in His **rest**. Always remember, God, **not** man, does **the work**. All the world will be **resting** "**In Christ**" at The Time of The New Heaven and The New Earth, which is the work God and Christ are preparing for you.

Satan will be imprisoned for 1,000 years (Revelation 20:2). All the world will be called to The Wedding Feast and, therefore, **no blindness will hinder anyone**. This is God, through Christ and **His Bride**, with Israel as **witnesses**, preaching *The Gospel of Salvation* to the whole world. At its conclusion, Satan will be released and stir up Gog and Magog (the rebellious ones) who attack Jerusalem but are destroyed (Revelation 20). *The Gospel* has been **preached** and **witnessed** and The Time of The White Throne Judgement has come. The attack by Gog and Magog reveals those who have not agreed to *The Gospel*. It is mankind's final test of **faith!**

## The Judgment

God has given mankind thousands of years to learn how to live at **peace** with each other. Along **the path of life**, He offered to give them advice through The Prophets and through His **churches**. He even gave them special heavenly **gifts**, such as His **Holy Spirit**, which, if they had accepted, would have given them **the truth** – the reality of all things. All they had to do was **believe Him**, but they couldn't without **faith** (I John 1:17).

## Two Or Three Witnesses

Now, to cover what happens at the trial. All opportunity has been given to mankind to try to live in **Paradise** (heavenly bliss) when all their own efforts failed. To give mankind eternal life, God had to see they had **a sound mind**. It was time for God to use extreme measures to help them find **the only path** to live at **peace** and **joy**, forever. It was time for extreme punishment. Those who refused to face **the truth** and remained **unrepentant** will need to **bottom out**. Much like when a person on drugs or alcohol must come to realize they have had **enough pain, stress and torment**. Only when the realization comes to them that they, themselves, have caused their own misery will they finally cry for help. They began to understand **pain** and **suffering** is the result of **sin**, which is, literally, **self-inflicted**. **The missing ingredient in human nature** is the desire for **survival of the fittest** (the unwillingness to **give up your lives** like Christ did). Paul described **the greatest gift God can give you**, “**And now abides faith, hope, charity [love], these three; but the greatest of these is charity [love]**” (I Corinthians 13:13). Of course, this love is **agapé**, the love which allows you to be willing to die for others. The White Throne Judgment is to make you **white (clothed in righteousness)** (Revelation 19:7-8). Those coming to The Wedding Feast must be **clothed in**

**righteousness** or they don't get in. God's **judgment** in His **court** is all about becoming **worthy**. God only **punishes** for your **profit** (Hebrews 12:6-10). God's **wrath** and **vengeance** only punishes a person out of His **love** to bring them to **peace**. You must realize you need to come to the place of not holding onto **life**, realizing it isn't **worth it**. That is what **The Lake of Fire** is all about. Life can become so painful it is **no longer desirable** and, eventually, one is **willing to die!** All who are thrown into The Lake of Fire know they are guilty. That is why **everyone confesses Jesus is Lord** (Philippians 2 and Romans 10). Paul tells how **faith is the gift of love leading to eternal life**, "Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not charity, I am become *as* sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal. And though I have *the gift of* prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have not charity, I am nothing. And though I bestow all my goods to feed *the poor*, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity [love], it profits me **nothing**" (I Corinthians 13:1-3). Having God's **gifts** and obeying God's **commands** without **love** is **all for nothing**. "The love of God is shed abroad [spread] in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us" (Romans 5:5). This is what **the trial in God's court** is all about. The White Throne Judgment is to make everyone white (**righteous**). Now, to proceed with **the trial** and the need for **the three witnesses**.

## The Indictment

After the final rebellion by Gog and Magog, led by Satan, The Time of Judgment will have arrived when all prophetic conditions have been fulfilled. God is ready to resurrect everyone who is dead (in **the second resurrection**, which is the last resurrection). They will stand before Jesus and **confess** He is The Lord. There



is no need to prove *The Gospel* in court, because all humanity will be in **The Kingdom of God** with Jesus along with **the saints** in their **glorified form** (Matthew 8:11-12). The indictment or crime is announced against everyone who is guilty, which includes the angels. The crime is issued, “**Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin [miss the mark] and blasphemy [rejection of God] shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost [Spirit] shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaks a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaks against the Holy Ghost [Spirit], it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come**” (Matthew 12:31-32). Then, the definition of “**blasphemy**” is clarified by Christ, “**Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by his fruit**” (Matthew 12:33). Do you understand The Day of Judgment? All **sin** will be forgiven. Why? Because everyone has **confessed**. Sin is forgiven because of Christ’s **blood**. “**For with the heart man believes unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation**” (Romans 10:10). As everyone stands before Christ with all **His glory** they finally **believe** in their **hearts** and **confess** so they can be **saved**. They throw themselves upon **the mercy of the court**. Then, Jesus declares, “**For by your words you shall be justified, and by your words you shall be condemned**” (Matthew 12:37).

You are, actually, reading **the court procedures**. As everyone speaks before Christ, the men of Nineveh shall rise in **the judgment** and **claim** they repented after Jonah preached. The Queen of The South shall rise in **the judgment** and **shall condemn them** because, she, a Gentile sought **the wisdom of Solomon**. And, Christ is **greater** than Solomon (Matthew 12:41-42). These **all** witness at the trial. Then, The Saints from The First Resurrec-

tion, who comprise The Bride of Christ (**Israel and The Church of God**) give their **witness and judgment**. They will, also, judge the angels (I Corinthians 6:1-3). When the trial **concludes**, then, **the sheep** can enter **The Kingdom of God (New Jerusalem)** for **The Wedding Feast**. **The sheep** have been separated from **the goats**. **The goats**, although **still bucking and kicking**, are considered **clean animals** since they have **confessed**. They want so badly to be **invited** to The Wedding Feast, they even try to force themselves in to attend The Wedding Feast (Matthew 8). In reality, they know they are **guilty** and God is all set for The Wedding Feast in **The New Heaven on The New Earth** (Psalm 24). God **condemns** this **earth** and **heaven** by **burning all the goats**. God is ready to **reveal His New House with man** and **makes all things new or superior** (Revelation 20 and Revelation 21-1).

## CHAPTER 12

### THE BRIDE UNVAILED

God's story of Revelation is almost complete. To fill in all the loose ends, you are ready to be told when God has to restore what was lost. He tells you how He intends to renew the first beginning (the alpha) which ends (the omega) in a New Beginning and where you, yourself fit into the plan. What was started in the beginning with The Tree of Life continues at the end in The New Heaven (Jerusalem).

#### God's House

God's purpose reveals, "Declaring the end from the beginning and from ancient times *the things* that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand and I will do all my pleasure" (Isaiah 46:10). God declares what started in the beginning is prophetic. At that time, the beginning is the end, which in reality is a new beginning. What God started in the beginning is what God ends in *The Book of Revelation*.

God built His house, a place of peace and rest for Him and His Family – "The Garden of Eden." God did the work and He rested upon His completion and everything was very good (Genesis 1:31). He gave life to Adam and Eve, his wife. All that needed to happen was for Adam and Eve to mature spiritually to have a family. God had to give Adam and Eve an allotted time to mature spiritually, so they and their progeny could one day

live with God in His house, forever. They had a **choice** to be like their **Father, to live in liberty** without **bondage or slavery**. They were to be in “**God’s image**.” That is why there were **two trees** and only one tree could nourish and have led them to **life eternal**. When they ate the other **fruit** (leading to **death**) they made **the wrong choice** and had to **mature** through their **own effort** to **learn to follow The True God**. They, of themselves, were a mixture of both **good** and **evil** and, therefore, **subject to death**. From the beginning, they **sinned** and the entire **Story of Man** is now **history** (as **The New Beginning will begin to take place**) . “**Behold, I [God] make all things new**” (Revelation 21:5). **The House of God** is ready to be completed for **The Family of God** to reside in.

## **The Unveiling**

“**And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men and he will dwell with them and they shall be his people and God himself shall be with them and be their God**” (Revelation 21:3). When does this occur? “**And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband**” (Revelation 21:2). New Jerusalem will be the place where Christ and **His Bride** (who is now ready and can be unveiled) will have The Wedding Feast. She is now **worthy** to be His **Wife, clothed in God’s righteousness** as brilliantly shining **diamonds with the sparkle of many colors**. The Bride is seen because she is **The Wall of The City**, and includes **the foundation**, which will be comprised of **The Apostles**. To enter the city, **the gates** are **The Twelve Tribes of Israel**. It is a **glorious unveiling** and **The Wedding Feast** is ready to begin. The Times of The Gentiles has passed and **The Bride** is now **The Wife** and The Rest of God’s **Sabbath** commences. **This Sabbath Rest is for-**

**ever, for everyone with no death, no pain, no sorrow or crying** for those who have a right to **enter the city**. Those **without (left out)** are in **outer darkness** (wailing and weeping) needing to be **restored** (Revelation 22:14-15). And the process to restore those who are in outer darkness continues since **The Marriage Feast will last forever in The Kingdom of God**.

## **The Wife And The Spirit**

**Isaiah** writes his prophecy concerning the future of Israel (God's witness), who had forsaken their God, "**Sing, O barren, you that did not bear; break forth into singing and cry aloud, you that did not travail with child: for more are the children of the desolate than the children of the married wife, says The Lord. Enlarge the place of your tent and let them stretch forth the curtains of your habitations: spare not, lengthen your cords and strengthen your stakes; For you shall break forth on the right hand and on the left; and your seed shall inherit the Gentiles [nations], and make the desolate cities to be inhabited**" (Isaiah 54:1-3). This Court of The Gentiles will be able to be enlarged because God previously had the layout delayed (Revelation 11:2).

Now, for a prophecy about **the future of Israel**. They will be expanding so rapidly, it will be **necessary to enlarge their tent or house**. They are to **enlarge their family**. Up to this point, **the desolate** (without any **House of Peace**) are **wandering in the wilderness** and are having **many more children**. This is a time, because Israel sinned, she is in **widowhood** – she has no **husband**. Suddenly in prophecy, she is **married** and, now, ready to have many children like **never before**. When will this come to pass? It does not come to pass till Christ returns. When Christ, The Bridegroom died, Israel, The Bride of Christ, became a **widow**.

During The Millennium, the announcement for The Wedding is sent to all the world, which are **The Gentiles**, just as the prophecy **foretold**. **The Bride** will be ready to be married and become The Wife of Christ. The two witnesses are: 1) The Gentiles mixed with The Ten Tribes, known as The Church of God and 2) Israel and the Jews known as the 144,000. Both The Christians and Messianic Jews are **The Wife**. This includes everyone – both The Israelites and The Gentiles. Where and when does this **Wedding Feast** take place? The Apostle Paul reveals the place of The Wedding and its outcome, “**But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is The Mother of Us All**” (Galatians 4:26). This is **universal**, which includes **everyone, all nations**. God married **Jerusalem** from the beginning. God espoused Himself to **The City of Jerusalem** (Ezekiel 16). However, that city became **Babylon** and God destroys her at **The Time of The Fulfillment of The Gentiles**. But when Jesus went to heaven, He, with His Father, began planning and building a **New Jerusalem** (John 14:1-2). God and Christ are **presently** building **New Jerusalem – The House of The Great God** for you (II Timothy 2:20-21).

As Christians, you are to be **purged or purging yourself** with **The Holy Spirit** which you have been given so you can **dwel** in **The House of God – New Jerusalem** (Revelation 21:3). In New Jerusalem, men will dwell in **The House of God**. Notice Paul’s words regarding this time, “**Rejoice you barren that bears not; break forth and cry, you that travails not: for the desolate has many more children than she which has a husband**” (Galatians 4:27). This is right out of Isaiah. When is this **time period**? “**For we know that the whole creation [universe] groans [time of birth] and travails in pain together [with Christians] until now**” (Romans 8:22 and Isaiah 25).

Paul tells you not only is Christianity in **pain** on this earth, but the

whole **creation itself** is in **pain**. What is everyone waiting for? **“For the earnest expectation of the creature [creation] waits for the manifestation of The Sons of God** (Romans 8:19). This is **the time of The Wedding Feast** when **The Bride** has made herself **ready** to be **The Wife of Christ** (Revelation 19:7-9). Everyone wants to come to The Wedding Feast, but not everyone is properly dressed in **righteousness**. **The Bride** is ready and will descend in **The Glory of God**. The **guests** are those nations who are **saved** (Revelation 21:24). Those not allowed into The Wedding Feast are cast into **outer darkness** and cannot enter New Jerusalem (Revelation 22:14-15). They do not have access to **The Tree of Life**, but only **have the healing leaves** to begin to restore themselves outside of the city (Revelation 22:2). This is **the start of The New Beginning** when God makes **everything new** (Revelation 21:5). Read the books *The Wedding Feast* and *God’s Will*. New Jerusalem, with **The Marriage of Christ with His Wife**, now **bears many children**. This is the time when mankind (**the firstfruits**) manifest themselves as **Sons of God**, like Christ. This is when **the world**, knowing **the truth**, has **no blindness** and there is **no Tree of Good and Evil** to tempt them. They will have **The Truth of God** (God’s Word) which will be **available** for the healing of all **the nations**. Here is what God announces, **“He that overcomes shall inherit all things; and I will be his God and he shall be my son”** (Revelation 21:7).

God is The Alpha and The Omega. So is Christ. This is when God makes **everything qualitatively new**. No more is **the universe tenuous** or **temporary**. No more **black holes** devouring the gymnastics of **the universe**. **All things** will become **“spirit”** in **The Kingdom of God**. There will only be a **white hole**, constant **light** and **eternity**. It is the great time of **childbirth** for **the universe**. The process of **spiritual growth will continue**. Constantly **new Sons of God** will **spiritually mature** and **all will**

have **A New Beginning**. **Christ will be creating through The Glory of God forever and ever without end**. God will finally be **“All In All”** (I Corinthians 15:28). We will all be like God, Our Father. You will **potentially** be **spiritually growing** forever in **The Great Glory of God** or **The Shekinah**. History concludes with, **“And the Spirit [God’s] and the bride say, Come. And let him that hears say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely”** (Revelation 22:17). **The “potential” for Salvation continues forever in The Kingdom of God**. But, you, who are growing, adding to your talents, are blessed to know these precious pearls which God is giving you at this present time. You have been blessed to have your reserved ticket for **The First Resurrection**. Are you planning on being there? One guarantee to show yourself approved is to pray and study. Your trip of a lifetime is reserved for you. All aboard!